This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

ESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 07609366 9

GANSEVOORT-LANSING
COLLECTION

given to the New York Public Library
Astor Lenox and Tilden Foundations
BY VICTOR HUGO PALTSITS
under the terms of the last will and testament of
CATHERINE GANSEVOORT LANSING
granddaughter of
General Peter Gansevoort, junior
and widow of the
Honorable Abraham Lansing
of Albany, New York

Smollett
NCF

GANSEVOORT - LANSING
COLLECTION

THE

MISCELLANEOUS WORKS

OF

TOBIAS SMOLLETT, M. D.

WITH

MEMOIRS

OF

HIS LIFE AND WRITINGS.

BY

ROBERT ANDERSON, M. D.

IN SIX VOLUMES.

VOL. III.

Containing

THE ADVENTURES OF PEREGRINE PICKLE, PART II.

AND PLAYS AND POEMS.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR J. MUNDELL & CO. EDINBURGH;

AND FOR

J. MUNDELL, COLLEGE, GLASGOW.

1796.

1987

CONTENTS.

Page.

LETTER to Lord ———, - - iii
The Anſwer, - - - - iv

CHAP. LXXXI. The Memoirs of a Lady of Quality, - 1
CHAP. LXXXII. He perſuades Cadwallader to aſſume the character of a magician, in which he acquires a great ſhare of reputation, by his reſponſes to three females of diſtinction, who ſeverally conſult the reſearches of his art, - - 127
CHAP. LXXXIII. Peregrine and his friend Cadwallader proceed in the exerciſe of the myſtery of fortune-telling, in the courſe of which they achieve various adventures, - - 134
CHAP. LXXXIV. The conjuror and his aſſociate execute a plan of vengeance againſt certain infidels who pretend to deſpiſe their art; and Peregrine has an adventure with a young nobleman, - 147
CHAP. LXXXV. Peregrine is celebrated as a wit and patron, and proceeds to entertain himſelf at the expence of whom it did concern, - - - - 154
CHAP. LXXXVI. Peregrine receives a letter from Hatchway, in conſequence of which he repairs to the garriſon, and performs the laſt offices to his aunt. He is viſited by Mr. Gauntlet, who invites him to his marriage, - - 160
CHAP. LXXXVII. Peregrine ſets out for the garriſon, and meets with a nymph on the road, whom he takes into keeping, and metamorphoſes into a fine lady, - - - 176
CHAP. LXXXVIII. He is viſited by Pallet; contracts an intimacy with a Newmarket nobleman; and is by the knowing ones taken in, - - - - - 184
CHAP. LXXXIX. He is taken into the protection of a great man; ſets up for member of Parliament; is diſappointed in his expectations, and finds himſelf egregiouſly outwitted, - 189
CHAP. XC. Peregrine commences miniſter's dependent; meets by accident with Mrs. Gauntlet, and deſcends gradually, in the condition of life, - - - 201
CHAP. XCI. Cadwallader acts the part of a comforter to his friend; and in his turn is conſoled by Peregrine, who begins to find himſelf a moſt egregious dupe, - - - 210
CHAP. XCII. He is indulged with a ſecond audience by the miniſter, of whoſe ſincerity he is convinced. His pride and ambition revive, and again are mortified, - - 217
CHAP. XCIII. Peregrine commits himſelf to the public, and is admitted member of a college of authors, - - 223
CHAP. XCIV. Further proceedings of the college, - 231
CHAP. XCV. The young gentleman is introduced to a virtuoſo of the firſt order, and commences yelper, - - 241
CHAP. XCVI. Peregrine finding himſelf neglected by Sir Steady Steerwell, expoſtulates with him in a letter; in conſequence of which, he is forbid his houſe, loſes his penſion, and incurs the charge of lunacy, - - - 248

Page.

CHAP. XCVII. He writes againſt the miniſter, by whoſe inſtigation he is arreſted, and moves himſelf by Habeas Corpus into the Fleet, - - - - - 260

CHAP. XCVIII. Pickle ſeems tolerably well reconciled to his cage; and is by the clergyman entertained with the memoirs of a noted perſonage, whom he ſees by accident in the Fleet, - 277

CHAP. XCIX. He is ſurpriſed with the appearance of Hatchway and Pipes, who take up their habitation in his neighbourhood, contrary to his inclination and expreſs deſire, - 329

CHAP. C. Theſe aſſociates commit an aſſault upon Crabtree, for which they are baniſhed from the Fleet. Peregrine begins to feel the effects of confinement, - - - 337

CHAP. CI. He receives an unexpected viſit; and the clouds of miſfortune begin to ſeparate, - - - 343

CHAP. CII. Peregrine reconciles himſelf to the lieutenant; and renews his connection with ſociety. Divers plans are projected in his behalf; and he has occaſion to exhibit a remarkable proof of ſelf-denial, - - - - 350

CHAP. CIII. He is engaged in a very extraordinary correſpondence, which is interrupted by a very unexpected event, - 354

CHAP. CIV. Peregrine holds a conſultation with his friends, in conſequence of which he bids adieu to the Fleet. He arrives at his father's houſe, and aſſerts his right of inheritance, - 362

CHAP. CV. He performs the laſt offices to his father, and returns to London, upon a very intereſting deſign - 368

CHAP. the Laſt. He enjoys an interview with Emilia, and makes himſelf ample amends for all the mortifications of his life, 372

PLAYS AND POEMS.

The Regicide, a Tragedy, - - - - - 383
The Repriſal, a Comedy, - - - - - 443
Advice, a Satire, - - - - - - 477
Reproof, a Satire, - - - - - - 485
The Tears of Scotland, - - - - - 492
Song, - - - - - - - 493
Burleſque Ode, - - - - - - 494
Ode to Mirth, - - - - - - 495
Ode to Sleep, - - - - - - 495
Ode to Blue-Ey'd Ann, - - - - - 497
Ode to Independence, - - - - - ibid.

To Lord ————

My Lord,

The turn which your lordſhip gave to the converſation of laſt night, having laid me under the neceſſity of vindicating the ſtep I have lately taken in publiſhing Memoirs of my Life, I think I have a right to demand your opinion of the motives which I then explained; and this I aſk by way of appeal to your judgment, from the ſentiments of thoſe who might perhaps think my inducements were weak or frivolous. For though no perſon in the company attempted to invalidate the arguments I advanced, I could perceive that one gentleman was not altogether convinced of the rectitude of that meaſure: You may remember, he dropped ſeveral diſſenting hints, couched in the modeſt expreſſions of, *with ſubmiſſion to you ladyſhip's better judgment—But, to be ſure, you would not have taken ſuch a ſtep without firſt weighing the conſequences—Your provocations were certainly very great, although the world is apt to put the worſt conſtructions upon every thing.*—And other ſuch prudential inſinuations that are often more diſconcerting than the diſplayed objections of a declared antagoniſt; becauſe they ſeem to import ſomething of great weight, which perſonal reſpect endeavours to ſuppreſs. Theſe ſententious fragments made ſuch impreſſion upon my mind, that I have been all night long taſking my recollection, in order to diſcover the weak ſide of my defence; but, as one always ſees through the miſt of partiality in one's own concerns, I muſt have recourſe to your diſcernment, and ſeriouſly inſiſt upon knowing how far you approve the juſtification of,

My Lord,
Your Lordſhip's
moſt obedient ſervant.

ANSWER.

MADAM,

I CANNOT help obſerving, that the ſerious manner in which you aſk my opinion of the motives, which induced you to publiſh your Memoirs, is exactly of a piece with the conduct of thoſe who conſult their friends, for approbation rather than advice, and, by a diſappointment in their expectations of applauſe, are more than ever wedded to their own inventions. How would your ladyſhip look, ſhould I now, in conſequence of your demand, aſſume the air of a ſevere moraliſer, and tell you, that the ſtep you have taken was altogether precipitate and inexcuſable; that you have unneceſſarily avowed your own indiſcretion, incurred the reſentment of individuals, and attracted the reproaches of a cenſorious world; and that, over and above theſe diſadvantages, you have ſubjected yourſelf for ever to a life of domeſtic diſquiet, by incenſing the tyrant of whom you complain, beyond a poſſibility of forgiveneſs or reconciliation? Would not all the reſentment of a diſappointed author take poſſeſſion of your ladyſhip; overcaſt that cheerfulneſs of countenance with a ſullen frown, and lighten from theſe fair eyes in gleams of diſpleaſure! No, you would be more ſurpriſed than offended at my obſervations. You would believe you had been all along deceived in your opinion of my delicacy and underſtanding: You would be mortified at the diſcovery of your own miſtake, and look upon me with compaſſion, as one of thoſe tame, timid rationaliſts, who, being naturally phlegmatic and fearful, are utter ſtrangers to the refined ſenſations of the human heart, incapable of doing juſtice to thoſe melting tenderneſſes which they never felt, and too irreſolute to withſtand the torrent of ignorant, malicious, or wrong-headed clamour, when it affects a character in which their friendſhip ought to be

intereſted. Your ſentiments, I own, would in that caſe be juſt, excepting that I ſhould engage your ladyſhip's pity, in deſerving your contempt, and, inſtead of being deſpiſed as a cold friend, be ſtill regarded by you as a weak and timerous well-wiſher. If your character ſuffered cruelly from miſrepreſentations; if your foibles were magnified and multiplied with all the aggravations of envy and fiction; if the qualities of your heart were decried or traduced, and even your underſtanding called in queſtion; I agree with your ladyſhip, that it was not only excuſable, but highly neceſſary, to publiſh a detail of your conduct, which would acquit you of all or moſt of thoſe ſcandalous imputations. This taſk you have (in my opinion) performed to the ſatisfaction of all the intelligent and unprejudiced part of mankind. He muſt be very deficient in candour and feeling, who, in reading your Memoirs, is not intereſted in your favour; who does not eſpouſe the cauſe of beauty, innocence, and love; who does not ſee that, as you once were, you would ſtill have continued to be the pattern of conjugal faith and felicity, had not the croſs accidents of fortune forced you from the natural bias of your diſpoſition; who does not excuſe the tenderneſs which youth and ſenſibility, ſo circumſtanced, could not poſſibly reſiſt; and who does not freely forgive the fault, when he conſiders the particulars of the temptation. He muſt be void of all taſte and reflection, who does not admire your ſpirit, elegance, and ſenſe; and dead to all the finer movements of the ſoul, if he is not agitated, thrilled, and tranſported with the pathetic circumſtances of your ſtory. Some people who are your ladyſhip's friends, and highly entertained with the performance, have wiſhed you had ſpared yourſelf ſome unneceſſary confeſſions, which they thought could ſerve no end, but that of affording a handle to your enemies for cenſure and defamation: I myſelf, I own, was of the ſame opinion, until you convinced me, that, in ſuppreſſing one circumſtance which might be afterwards diſcovered, your ſincerity through the whole piece would have been called in queſtion. And what have you avowed, that your moſt malicious foes dare blame, except your diſregard of an un-

natural contract, which (though authoriſed by the laws of your country) was impoſed upon your neceſſity, youth, and inexperience? Nor was this conduct the reſult of vicious levity and intemperance: You had already given undeniable proofs of your conſtancy and conjugal virtue to the firſt lord of your affections, who was the choice of your love, and to whom your heart was unalterably wedded. Your natural ſenſibility had been, by this extraordinary care, tenderneſs, and attention, cheriſhed and improved to ſuch a degree of delicacy, as could not poſſibly reliſh the attachment of the common run of huſbands. No wonder, then, that you was uneaſy under a ſecond engagement ſo much unlike the firſt; that every circumſtance of the contract appeared to you in the moſt aggravating light, and made a ſuitable impreſſion upon your imagination; and that you was not inſenſible to thoſe attractions which had formerly captivated your heart, nor able to reſiſt the flattering inſinuations, incredible aſſiduity, and ſurpriſing perſeverance of an artful lover. And ſure he could not have choſen a more favourable opportunity to prefer his addreſſes: Your paſſions were unuſually intendered by grief; you was diſſatisfied with your domeſtic ſituation; you was ſolitary for want of that intimate connection in which you had been ſo happy before; and your breaſt glowed with the moſt pathetic ſuſceptibility, while you was yet a ſtranger to the inſidious wiles of man. In ſuch diſtreſs the mind longs for ſympathy and conſolation; it ſeeks to repoſe itſelf upon the tender friendſhip of ſome kind partner, that will ſhare and alleviate its ſorrows: Such a comforter appeared in the accompliſhed youth; your judgment was pleaſed with his qualifications; his demeanour acquired your eſteem; your friendſhip was engaged by his ſincerity; and your affection was inſenſibly ſubdued. In ſhort, every thing conſpired to promote his ſuit, and my wonder is not that he ſucceeded, but that you held out ſo long. Your ſentiments with regard to thoſe who have inveighed againſt your performance, are altogether conformable to that good ſenſe and benevolent diſpoſition which I have always admired and eſteemed. As for writers who have exer-

ciſed their pens in abuſing your ladyſhip, they are either objects of mirth or compaſſion. They, poor harmleſs creatures, in their hearts, wiſh you no evil. Their buſineſs is to eat honeſtly, if they can,——but at any rate to eat. I am fully perſuaded, that, for a very ſmall ſum, you might engage the whole tribe to refute their own revilings, and bellow with all their might in your praiſe. It would really be uncharitable, as well as abſurd, to expreſs the leaſt reſentment againſt ſuch feeble antagoniſts, who are literally the beings of a ſummer day: They are the noiſy inſects, which the ſun of merit never fails to produce; the ſhadows that continually accompany ſucceſs; and indeed a man might as well fight with his own ſhadow, as attempt to chaſtiſe ſuch unſubſtantial phantoms. But of all the emotions of your heart, that which I am at preſent tempted chiefly to applaud, is the ſorrow you expreſs for having been obliged, in your own juſtification, to vilify and expoſe the man to whom your fate is inſeparably connected; and the laudable reſolution you have taken to live amicably with him for the future, provided he ſhall perſiſt in that conduct which he hath of late choſen to maintain. On the whole, though you may have inflamed the virulence of envy and malice, rouſed the reſentment of ſome whoſe folly and ingratitude you had occaſion to diſplay, and incurred the cenſure of thoſe who think it their duty to exclaim againſt the leaſt infringement of the nuptial tie, howſoever unequally impoſed; your Memoirs will always be peruſed with pleaſure by all readers of taſte and diſcernment, and your fame, as a beauty and author, long ſurvive the ill offices of prejudice and perſonal animoſity. And now that I have performed the taſk enjoined, give me leave to add, that I have the honour to be,

Madam,

Your moſt devoted

humble ſervant.

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

PEREGRINE PICKLE.

CHAPTER LXXXI.

The memoirs of a lady of quality.

By the circumſtances of the ſtory which I am going to relate, you will be convinced of my candour, while you are informed of my indiſcretion: You will be enabled, I hope, to perceive, that, howſoever my head may have erred, my heart hath always been uncorrupted, and that I have been unhappy, *becauſe I loved, and was a woman.*

I believe I need not obſerve, that I was the only child of a man of good fortune, who indulged me, in my infancy, with all the tenderneſs of paternal affection; and, when I was ſix years old, ſent me to a private ſchool, where I ſtaid till my age was doubled, and became ſuch a favourite, that I was (even in thoſe early days) carried to all the places of public diverſion, the court itſelf not excepted, an indulgence that flattered my love of pleaſure, to which I was naturally addicted, and encouraged thoſe ideas of vanity and ambition, which ſpring up ſo early in the human mind.

I was lively and good natured, my imagination apt to run riot, my heart liberal and diſintereſted, though I was ſo obſtinately attached to my own opinions, that I could not well brook contradiction; and, in the whole of my

diſpoſition, reſembled that of Henry the Fifth, as deſcribed by Shakſpeare.

In my thirteenth year I went to Bath, where I was firſt introduced into the world as a woman, having been entitled to that privilege by my perſon, which was remarkably tall for my years; and there my fancy was quite captivated by the variety of diverſions in which I was continually engaged: Not that the parties were altogether new to me, but becauſe I now found myſelf conſidered as a perſon of conſequence, and ſurrounded by a crowd of admirers, who courted my acquaintance, and fed my vanity with praiſe and adulation. In ſhort, whether or not I deſerved their encomiums, I leave the world to judge; but my perſon was commended, and my talent in dancing met with univerſal applauſe. No wonder then that every thing appeared joyous to a young creature, who was ſo void of experience and diſſimulation, that ſhe believed every body's heart as ſincere as her own, and every object ſuch as it appeared to be.

Among the ſwains who ſighed, or pretended to ſigh for me, were two that bore a pretty equal ſhare of my favour (it was too ſuperficial to deſerve the name of love). One of theſe was a forward youth of ſixteen, extremely handſome, lively, and impudent: He attended in quality of a page upon the Princeſs Amelia, who ſpent that ſeaſon at Bath. The other was a Scotch nobleman turned of thirty, who was graced with a red ribbon, and danced particularly well, two qualifications of great weight with a girl of my age, whoſe heart was not deeply intereſted in the cauſe. Nevertheleſs, the page prevailed over this formidable rival; though our amour went no farther than a little flirting, and ceaſed entirely when I left the place.

Next year, however, I reviſited this agreeable ſcene, and paſſed my time in the ſame circle of amuſements; in which, indeed, each ſeaſon at Bath is exactly reſembled by that which ſucceeds, allowing for the difference of company, which is continually varying. There I met with the ſame incenſe, and again had my favourite, who was a North Briton, and captain of foot, near forty years of age, and a little lame, an impediment which I did not diſcover, until it was pointed out by ſome of my compa-

nions, who rallied me upon my choice. He was always cheerful, and very amorous, had a good countenance, and an excellent underſtanding, poſſeſſed a great deal of art, and would have perſuaded me to marry him, had I not been reſtrained by the authority of my father, whoſe conſent was not to be obtained in favour of a man of his fortune.

At the ſame time, many propoſals of marriage were made to my parents; but as they came from people whom I did not like, I rejected them all, being determined to refuſe every man who did not make his addreſſes to myſelf in perſon, becauſe I had no notion of marrying for any thing but love.

Among theſe formal propoſers was a Scottiſh Earl, whoſe pretenſions were broke off by ſome difference about ſettlements; and the ſon of an Engliſh baron, with whom my father was in treaty, when he carried me to town, on a viſit to a young lady, with whom I had been intimate from my infancy. She was juſt delivered of her firſt ſon, for whom we ſtood ſponſors: So that this occaſion detained us a whole month, during which I went to a ball at court, on the Queen's birth-day, and there, for the firſt time, felt what love and beauty were.

The ſecond ſon of Duke H——, who had juſt returned from his travels, was dancing with the princeſs royal, when a young lady came and deſired me to go and ſee a ſtranger, whom all the world admired: Upon which I followed her into the circle, and obſerved this object of admiration. He was dreſſed in a coat of white cloth, faced with blue ſattin, embroidered with ſilver, of the ſame piece with his waiſtcoat; his fine hair hung down his back in ringlets below his waiſt; his hat was laced with ſilver, and garniſhed with a white feather; but his perſon beggared all deſcription. He was tall and graceful, neither corpulent nor meagre, his limbs finely proportioned, his countenance open and majeſtic, his eyes full of ſweetneſs and vivacity, his teeth regular, and his pouting lips of the complexion of the damaſk roſe. In ſhort, he was formed for love, and inſpired it wherever he appeared; nor was he a niggard of his talents, but liberally returned it; at leaſt what paſſed for ſuch: For he had a flow of gallantry, for which many ladies of this land can

vouch from their own experience: But he exclaimed againſt marriage, becauſe he had, as yet, met with no woman to whoſe charms he would ſurrender his liberty, though a princeſs of France, and lady of the ſame rank in ———, were ſaid to be, at that time, enamoured of his perſon.

I went home, totally engroſſed by his idea, flattering myſelf, that he had obſerved me with ſome attention; for I was young and new, and had the good fortune to attract the notice and approbation of the queen herſelf.

Next day, being at the opera, I was agreeably ſurpriſed with the appearance of this amiable ſtranger, who no ſooner ſaw me enter, than he approached ſo near to the place where I ſat, that I overheard what he ſaid to his companions; and was ſo happy as to find myſelf the object of his diſcourſe, which abounded with rapturous expreſſions of love and admiration.

I could not liſten to theſe tranſports without emotion; my colour changed, my heart throbbed with unuſual violence, and my eyes betrayed my inclination in ſundry favourable glances, which he ſeemed to interpret aright, though he could not then avail himſelf of his ſucceſs, ſo far as to communicate his ſentiments by ſpeech, becauſe we were ſtrangers to each other.

I paſſed that night in the moſt anxious ſuſpenſe, and ſeveral days elapſed before I ſaw him again. At length, however, being at court on a ball-night, and determined againſt dancing, I perceived him among the crowd, and, to my unſpeakable joy, ſaw him advance with my Lord P——, who introduced him to my acquaintance. He ſoon found means to alter my reſolution, and I condeſcended to be his partner all the evening; during which he declared his paſſion in the moſt tender and perſuaſive terms that real love could dictate, or fruitful imagination invent.

I believed his proteſtations, becauſe I wiſhed them true, and was an unexperienced girl of fifteen. I complied with his earneſt requeſt of being permitted to viſit me, and even invited him to breakfaſt next morning; ſo that you may imagine (I ſpeak to thoſe that feel) I did not, that night, enjoy much repoſe. Such was the hurry and flutter of my ſpirits, that I roſe at ſix to receive

him at ten. I dreſſed myſelf in a new pink ſattin gown and my beſt laced night-clothes, and was ſo animated by the occaſion, that if ever I deſerved a compliment upon my looks, it was my due at this meeting.

The wiſhed-for moment came that brought my lover to my view: I was overwhelmed with joy, modeſty, and fear of I knew not what. We ſat down to breakfaſt, but did not eat. He renewed his addreſſes with irreſiſtible eloquence, and preſſed me to accept of his hand without farther heſitation: But, to ſuch a precipitate ſtep I objected, as a meaſure repugnant to decency, as well as to that duty which I owed to my father, whom I tenderly loved.

Though I withſtood this premature propoſal, I did not attempt to diſguiſe the ſituation of my thoughts; and thus commenced a tender correſpondence, which was maintained by letters while I remained in the country, and carried on (when I was in town) by private interviews, twice or thrice a-week, at the houſe of my milliner, where ſuch endearments paſſed as refined and happy lovers know, and others can only gueſs. Truth and innocence prevailed on my ſide, while his heart was fraught with ſincerity and love. Such frequent intercourſe created an intimacy which I began to think dangerous, and therefore yielded to his repeated deſire that we might be united for ever: Nay, I reſolved to avoid him, until the day ſhould be fixed, and very innocently (though not very wiſely) told him my reaſon for this determination, which was no other than a conſciouſneſs of my incapacity to refuſe him any thing he ſhould demand as a teſtimony of my love.

The time was accordingly appointed, at the diſtance of a few days, during which I intended to have implored my father's conſent, though I had but faint hopes of obtaining it: But he was by ſome means or other appriſed of our deſign, before I could prevail upon myſelf to make him acquainted with our purpoſe. I had danced with my lover at the ridotto on the preceding evening, and there perhaps our eyes betrayed us. Certain it is, ſeveral of Lord W—m's relations, who diſapproved of the match, came up and rallied him on his paſſion; Lord S——k, in particular, uſed this remarkable expreſſion,

"Nephew, as much love as you pleaſe, but no matrimony."

Next day, the prieſt being prepared, and the bridegroom waiting for me at the appointed place, in all the tranſports of impatient expectation, I was, without any previous warning, carried into the country by my father, who took no notice of the intelligence he had received, but decoyed me into the coach on pretence of taking the air; and when we had proceeded as far as Turnham-green, gave me to underſtand, that he would dine in that place.

There was no remedy: I was obliged to bear my diſappointment, though with an aching heart, and followed him up ſtairs into an apartment, where he told me he was minutely informed of my matrimonial ſcheme. I did not attempt to diſguiſe the truth, but aſſured him, while the tears guſhed from my eyes, that my want of courage alone had hindered me from making him privy to my paſſion; though I owned, I ſhould have married Lord W—m, even though he had diſapproved of my choice. I reminded him of the uneaſy life I led at home, and frankly acknowledged, that I loved my admirer too well to live without him; though, if he would favour me with his conſent, I would defer my intention, and punctually obſerve any day he would fix for our nuptials. Meanwhile I begged he would permit me to ſend a meſſage to Lord W—m, who was waiting in expectation of my coming, and might (without ſuch notice) imagine I was playing the jilt. He granted this laſt requeſt; in conſequence of which, I ſent a letter to my lover, who, when he received it, had almoſt fainted away, believing I ſhould be locked up in the country, and ſnatched for ever from his arms. Tortured with theſe apprehenſions, he changed clothes immediately, and, taking horſe, reſolved to follow me whitherſoever we ſhould go.

After dinner, we proceeded as far as Brentford, where we lay, intending to be at my father's country-houſe next night; and my admirer putting up at the ſame inn, practiſed every expedient his invention could ſuggeſt to procure an interview; but all his endeavours were unſucceſsful, becauſe I, who little dreamed of his being ſo near, had gone to bed upon our firſt arrival, overwhelmed with affliction and tears.

In the morning I threw myſelf at my father's feet, and conjured him, by all the ties of paternal affection, to indulge me with an opportunity of ſeeing my admirer once more, before I ſhould be conveyed from his wiſhes. The melancholy condition in which I preferred this ſupplication, melted the tender heart of my parent, who yielded to my ſupplications, and carried me back to town for that purpoſe.

Lord W—m, who had watched our motions, and arrived at his own lodgings before we arrived at my father's houſe, obeyed my ſummons on the inſtant, and appeared before me like an angel. Our faculties were for ſome minutes ſuſpended by a conflict of grief and joy. At length I recovered the uſe of ſpeech, and gave him to underſtand, that I was come to town in order to take my leave of him, by the permiſſion of my father, whom I had promiſed to attend into the country next day, before he would conſent to my return; the chief cauſe and pretence of which was my earneſt deſire to convince him, that I was not to blame for the diſappointment he had ſuffered, and that I ſhould ſee him again in a month, when the nuptial knot ſhould be tied in ſpite of all oppoſition.

My lover, who was better acquainted with the world, had well nigh run diſtracted with this information. He ſwore he would not leave me, until I ſhould promiſe to meet and marry him next day; or, if I refuſed to grant that requeſt, he would immediately leave the kingdom, to which he would never more return; and, before his departure, ſacrifice Lord H— B—, ſon to the Duke of S. A—, who was the only perſon upon earth who could have betrayed us to my father, becauſe he alone was truſted with the ſecret of our intended marriage, and had actually undertaken to give me away; an office which he afterwards declined. Lord W—m alſo affirmed, that my father decoyed me into the country, with a view of cooping me up, and ſequeſtering me entirely from his view and correſpondence.

In vain I pleaded my father's well known tenderneſs, and uſed all the arguments I could recollect to divert him from his revenge upon Lord H—. He was deaf to all my repreſentations, and nothing, I found, would prevail

upon him to ſuppreſs his reſentment, but a poſitive promiſe to comply with his former deſire. I told him, I would hazard every thing to make him happy; but could not, with any regard to my duty, take ſuch a ſtep without the knowledge of my parent; or, if I were ſo inclined, it would be impracticable to elude his vigilance and ſuſpicion. However, he employed ſuch pathetic remonſtrances, and retained ſuch a powerful advocate within my own breaſt, that, before we parted, I aſſured him, my whole power ſhould be exerted for his ſatisfaction; and he ſignified his reſolution of ſitting up all night, in expectation of ſeeing me at his lodgings.

He had no ſooner retired, than I went into the next room, and deſired my father to fix a day for the marriage; in which caſe, I would cheerfully wait upon him into the country; whereas, ſhould he deny my requeſt, on pretence of ſtaying for the conſent of my mother's relations, which was very uncertain, I would ſeize the firſt opportunity of marrying Lord W—m, coſt what it would. He conſented to the match, but would not appoint a day for the ceremony, which he propoſed to defer until all parties ſhould be agreed; and ſuch a favourable criſis, I feared, would never happen.

I therefore reſolved within myſelf to gratify my lover's expectation, by eloping, if poſſible, that very night; though the execution of this plan was extremely difficult, becauſe my father was upon the alarm, and my own maid, who was my bedfellow, altogether in his intereſt. Notwithſtanding theſe conſiderations, I found means to engage one of the houſe-maids in my behalf, who beſpoke an hackney-coach, to be kept in waiting all night; and to bed I went with my Abigail, whom (as I had not cloſed an eye) I waked about five in the morning, and ſent to pack up ſome things for our intended journey.

While ſhe was thus employed, I got up, and huddled on my clothes, ſtanding upon my pillow, leſt my father, who lay in the chamber below, ſhould hear me afoot, and ſuſpect my deſign.

Having dreſſed myſelf with great diſpatch and diſorder, I flounced down ſtairs, ſtalking as heavily as I could tread, that he might miſtake me for one of the ſervants; and my confederate opening the door, I ſallied out into

the ſtreet, though I knew not which way to turn; and, to my unſpeakable mortification, neither coach nor chair appeared.

Having travelled on foot a good way, in hope of finding a convenience; and being not only diſappointed in that particular, but alſo bewildered in my peregrination, I began to be exceedingly alarmed with the apprehenſion of being met by ſome perſon who might know me; becauſe, in that caſe, my deſign would undoubtedly have been diſcovered, from every circumſtance of my appearance at that time of day; for I had put on the very clothes which I had pulled off over night, ſo that my dreſs was altogether odd and peculiar: My ſhoes were very fine, and over a large hoop I wore a pink ſatin quilted petticoat trimmed with ſilver, which was partly covered by a white dimitty night-gown, a full quarter of a yard too ſhort; my handkerchief and apron were hurried on without pinning; my night-cap could not contain my hair, which hung about my ears in great diſorder, and my countenance denoted a mixture of hope and fear, joy and ſhame.

In this dilemma, I made my addreſſes to that honourable member of ſociety, a ſhoe-black, whom I earneſtly entreated to provide me with a coach or chair, promiſing to reward him liberally for his trouble: But he, having the misfortune to be lame, was unable to keep up with my pace; ſo that, by his advice and direction, I went into the firſt public houſe I found open, where I ſtaid ſome time, in the utmoſt conſternation, among a crew of wretches whom I thought proper to bribe for their civility, not without the terror of being ſtripped. At length, however, my meſſenger returned with a chair, of which I took immediate poſſeſſion; and fearing that, by this time, my family would be alarmed, and ſend directly to Lord W—m's lodgings, I ordered myſelf to be carried thither backwards, that ſo I might paſs undiſcovered.

This ſtratagem ſucceeded according to my wiſh; I ran up ſtairs, in a ſtate of trepidation, to my faithful lover, who waited for me with the moſt impatient and fearful ſuſpence. At ſight of me his eyes lightened with tranſport; he caught me in his arms, as the richeſt preſent heaven could beſtow; gave me to underſtand that my fa-

ther had already ſent to his lodgings in queſt of me; then applauding my love and reſolution in the moſt rapturous terms, he ordered a hackney-coach to be called, and, that we might run no riſk of ſeparation, attended me to church, where we were lawfully joined in the ſight of heaven.

His fears were then all over, but mine recurred with double aggravation; I dreaded the ſight of my father, and ſhared all the ſorrow he ſuffered on account of my undutiful behaviour; for I loved him with ſuch piety of affection, that I would have endured every other ſpecies of diſtreſs, rather than have given him the leaſt uneaſineſs; but love (where he reigns in full empire) is altogether irreſiſtible, ſurmounts every difficulty, and ſwallows up all other conſiderations. This was the caſe with me; and now the irrevocable ſtep was taken, my firſt care was to avoid his ſight. With this view, I begged that Lord W—m would think of ſome remote place in the country, to which we might retire for the preſent; and he forthwith conducted me to a houſe on Blackheath, where we were very civilly received by a laughter-loving dame, who ſeemed to miſtake me for one of her own ſiſterhood.

I no ſooner perceived her opiniion, than I deſired Lord W—m to undeceive her; upon which ſhe was made acquainted with the nature of my ſituation, and ſhowed us into a private room, where I called for pen and paper, and wrote an apology to my father, for having acted contrary to his will in ſo important a concern.

This taſk being performed, the bridegroom gave me to underſtand, that there was a neceſſity for our being bedded immediately, in order to render the marriage binding, leaſt my father ſhould diſcover and part us before conſummation. I pleaded hard for a reſpite till the evening, objecting to the indecency of going to bed before noon; but he found means to invalidate all my arguments, and to convince me that it was now my duty to obey. Rather than hazard the imputation of being obſtinate and refractory on the firſt day of my probation, I ſuffered myſelf to be led into a chamber, which was darkened by my expreſs ſtipulation, that my ſhame and con-

fuſion might be the better concealed, and yielded to the privilege of a dear huſband, who loved me to adoration.

About five o'clock in the afternoon, we were called to dinner, which we had ordered to be ready at four; but ſuch a paltry care had been forgot, amidſt the tranſports of our mutual bliſs. We got up, however, and when we came down ſtairs, I was aſhamed to ſee the light of day, or meet the eyes of my beloved lord. I ate little, ſaid leſs, was happy, though overwhelmed with confuſion, underwent a thouſand agitations, ſome of which were painful, but by far the greater part belonged to rapture and delight; we were imparadiſed in the gratification of our mutual wiſhes, and felt all that love can beſtow, and ſenſibility enjoy.

In the twilight we returned to Lord W—m's lodgings in town, where I received a letter from my father, importing, that he would never ſee me again. But there was one circumſtance in his manner of writing, from which I conceived a happy preſage of his future indulgence. He had begun with his uſual appellation of *Dear Fanny*, which, though it was expunged to make way for the word *Madam*, encouraged me to hope that his paternal fondneſs was not yet extinguiſhed.

At ſupper we were viſited by Lord W—m's younger ſiſter, who laughed at us for our inconſiderate match, though ſhe owned ſhe envied our happineſs, and offered me the uſe of her clothes, until I could retrieve my own. She was a woman of a great deal of humour, plain but genteel, civil, friendly, and perfectly well bred. She favoured us with her company till the night was pretty far advanced, and did not take her leave till we retired to our apartment.

As our lodgings were not ſpacious or magnificent, we reſolved to ſee little company; but this reſolution was fruſtrated by the numerous acquaintance of Lord W—m, who let in half the town; ſo that I ran the gauntlet for a whole week among a ſet of wits, who always delight in teazing a young creature of any note, when ſhe happens to make ſuch a ſtolen match. Among thoſe that viſited us upon this occaſion was my lord's younger brother, who was at that time in keeping with a rich heireſs of maſculine memory, and took that opportunity of making a parade

with his equipage, which was indeed very magnificent, but altogether diſregarded by us, whoſe happineſs conſiſted in the opulence of mutual love.

This ceremony of receiving viſits being performed, we went to wait on his mother, the Ducheſs of H—, who, hearing I was an heireſs, readily forgave her ſon for marrying without her knowledge and conſent, and favoured us with a very cordial reception; inſomuch, that for ſeveral months, we dined almoſt conſtantly at her table; and I muſt own, I always found her unaltered in her civility and affection, contrary to her general character, which was haughty and capricious. She was undoubtedly a woman of great ſpirit and underſtanding, but ſubject to an infirmity which very much impairs and diſguiſes every other qualification.

In about three weeks after our marriage, I was ſo happy as to obtain the forgiveneſs of my father, to whoſe houſe we repaired, in order to pay our reſpects and ſubmiſſion. At ſight of me he wept; nor did I behold his tears unmoved: My heart was overcharged with tenderneſs and ſorrow, for having offended ſuch an indulgent parent; ſo that I mingled my tears with his, while my dear huſband, whoſe ſoul was of the ſofteſt and gentleſt mould, melted with ſympathy at the affecting ſcene.

Being thus reconciled to my father, we attended him into the country, where we were received by my mother, who was a ſenſible good woman, though not ſuſceptible to love, and therefore leſs apt to excuſe a weakneſs to which ſhe was an utter ſtranger. This was likewiſe the caſe with an uncle, from whom I had great expectations. He was a plain good-natured man, and treated us with great courteſy, though his notions, in point of love, were not exactly conformable to ours. Nevertheleſs, I was, and ſeemed to be ſo happy in my choice, that my family not only became ſatisfied with the match, but exceedingly fond of Lord W—m.

After a ſhort ſtay with them in the country, we returned to London, in order to be introduced at court, and then ſet out for the north, on a viſit to my brother-in-law the Duke of H—, who had, by a letter to Lord W—m, invited us to his habitation. My father accordingly equipped us with horſes and money; for our own finan-

ces were extremely ſlender, conſiſting only of a ſmall penſion allowed by his grace, upon whom the brothers were entirely dependent, the father having died ſuddenly, before ſuitable proviſion could be made for his younger children.

When I took my leave of my relations, bidding adieu to my paternal home, and found myſelf launching into a world of care and trouble, though the voyage on which I had embarked was altogether voluntary, and my companion, the perſon on whom I doated to diſtraction, I could not help feeling ſome melancholy ſenſations, which, however, in a little time, gave way to a train of more agreeable ideas. I was viſited in town by almoſt all the women of faſhion, many of whom, I perceived, envied me the poſſeſſion of a man who had made ſtrange havock among their hearts, and ſome of them knew the value of his favour. One in particular endeavoured to cultivate my friendſhip with ſingular marks of regard; but I thought proper to diſcourage her advances, by keeping within the bounds of bare civility; and, indeed, to none of them was I laviſh of my complaiſance; for I dedicated my whole time to the object of my affection, who engroſſed my wiſhes to ſuch a degree, that although I was never jealous (becauſe I had no reaſon to be ſo), I envied the happineſs of every woman whom he chanced at any time to hand into a coach.

The Ducheſs of ——, who was newly married to the Earl of P—, a particular friend of Lord W—'s carried me to court, and preſented me to the queen, who expreſſed her approbation of my perſon in very particular terms, and obſerved the ſatisfaction that appeared in my countenance, with marks of admiration; deſired her ladies to take notice, how little happineſs depended upon wealth, ſince there was more joy in my face than in all her court beſides.

Such a declaration could not fail to overwhelm me with bluſhes, which her majeſty ſeemed to behold with pleaſure; for ſhe frequently repeated the remark, and ſhowed me to all the foreigners of diſtinction, with many gracious expreſſions of favour. She wiſhed Lord W—m happineſs inſtead of joy, and was pleaſed to promiſe, that ſhe would provide for her pretty beggars: And poor

enough we certainly were in every article but love. Nevertheleſs, we felt no neceſſities, but paſſed the ſummer in a variety of pleaſures and parties; the greateſt part of which were planned by Lord W—m's ſiſter and another lady, who was at that time miſtreſs to the prime miniſter. The firſt was a wit, but homely in her perſon; the other a woman of great beauty and maſculine underſtanding; and a particular friendſhip ſubſiſted between them, though they were both lovers of power and admiration.

This lady, who ſat at the helm, was extremely elegant, as well as expenſive in her diverſions, in many of which we bore a ſhare, particularly in her parties upon the water, which were contrived in all the magnificence of taſte. In the courſe of theſe amuſements, a trifling circumſtance occurred, which I ſhall relate as an inſtance of that jealous ſenſibility which characteriſed Lord W—m's diſpoſition. A large company of ladies and gentlemen having agreed to dine at Vauxhall, and ſup at Marblehall, where we propoſed to conclude the evening with a dance, one barge being inſufficient to contain the whole company, we were divided by lots; in conſequence of which, my huſband and I were parted. This ſeparation was equally mortifying to us both, who, though married, were ſtill lovers; and my chagrin increaſed when I perceived that I was doomed to ſit by Sir W— Y—, a man of profeſſed gallantry; for, although Lord W—m had, before his marriage, made his addreſſes to every woman he ſaw, I knew very well he did not deſire that any perſon ſhould make love to his wife.

That I might not, therefore, give umbrage, by talking to this gallant, I converſed with a Scotch nobleman, who, according to common report, had formerly ſighed among my admirers: By theſe means, in ſeeking to avoid one error, I unwittingly plunged myſelf into a greater, and diſobliged Lord W—m ſo much, that he could not conceal his diſpleaſure; nay, ſo deeply was he offended at my conduct, that, in the evening, when the ball began, he would ſcarce deign to take me by the hand in the courſe of dancing, and darted ſuch unkind looks, as pierced me to the very ſoul. What augmented my concern, was my ignorance of the treſpaſs I had committed.

I was tortured with a thouſand uneaſy reflections; I began to fear that I had miſtaken his temper, and given my heart to a man who was tired of poſſeſſion; though I reſolved to bear without complaining the misfortune I had entailed upon myſelf.

I ſeized the firſt opportunity of ſpeaking to him, and thereby diſcovered the cauſe of his chagrin; but, as there was no time for expoſtulation, the miſunderſtanding continued on his ſide, with ſuch evident marks of uneaſineſs, that every individual of the company made up to me, and inquired about the cauſe of his diſorder; ſo that I was fain to amuſe their concern, by ſaying, that he had been ill the day before, and dancing did not agree with his conſtitution. So much was he incenſed by this unhappy circumſtance of my conduct, which was void of all intention to offend him, that he determined to be revenged of me for my indiſcretion, and at ſupper, chancing to ſit between two very handſome ladies (one of whom is lately dead, and the other, at preſent, my neighbour in the country), he affected an air of gaiety, and openly coquetted with them both.

This was not the only puniſhment he inflicted on his innocent wife. In the courſe of our entertainment, we engaged in ſome ſimple diverſion, in conſequence of which the gentlemen were ordered to ſalute the ladies; when Lord W—, in performing this command, unkindly neglected me in my turn; and I had occaſion for all my diſcretion and pride, to conceal from the company the agonies I felt at this mark of indifference and diſreſpect. However, I obtained the victory over myſelf, and pretended to laugh at his huſband-like behaviour, while the tears ſtood in my eyes, and my heart ſwelled even to burſting.

We broke up about five, after having ſpent the moſt tedious evening I had ever known; and this offended lover went to bed in a ſtate of ſullen ſilence and diſguſt. Whatever deſire I had to come to an explanation, I thought myſelf ſo much aggrieved by his unreaſonable prejudice, that I could not prevail upon myſelf to demand a conference, till after his firſt nap, when my pride giving way to my tenderneſs, I claſped him in my arms, though he pretended to diſcourage theſe advances of my love: I

aſked how he could be ſo unjuſt as to take umbrage at my civility to a man whom he knew I had refuſed for his ſake. I chid him for his barbarous endeavours to awake my jealouſy, and uſed ſuch irreſiſtible arguments in my own vindication, that he was convinced of my innocence, ſealed my acquittal with a kind embrace, and we mutually enjoyed the ſoft tranſports of a fond reconciliation.

Never was paſſion more eager, delicate, or unreſerved, than that which glowed within our breaſts. Far from being cloyed with the poſſeſſion of each other, our raptures ſeemed to increaſe with the term of our union. When we were parted, though but for a few hours, by the neceſſary avocations of life, we were unhappy during that brief ſeparation, and met again, like lovers who knew no joy but in one another's preſence. How many delicious evenings did we ſpend together, in our little apartment, after we had ordered the candles to be taken away, that we might enjoy the agreeable reflection of the moon in a fine ſummer's evening. Such a mild and ſolemn ſcene naturally diſpoſes the mind to peace and benevolence; but when improved with the converſation of the man one loves, it fills the imagination with ideas of ineffable delight! For my own part, I can ſafely ſay, my heart was ſo wholly engroſſed by my huſband, that I never took pleaſure in any diverſion where he was not perſonally concerned; nor was I ever guilty of one thought repugnant to my duty and my love.

In the autumn we ſet out for the north, and were met on the road by the duke and twenty gentlemen, who conducted us to H—n, where we lived in all imaginable ſplendor. His grace, at that time, maintained above an hundred ſervants, with a band of muſic, which always performed at dinner, kept open table, and was viſited by a great deal of company. The economy of his houſe was ſuperintended by his eldeſt ſiſter, a beautiful young lady of an amiable temper, with whom I ſoon contracted an intimate friendſhip. She and the duke uſed to rally me upon my fondneſs for Lord W—m, who was a ſort of an humouriſt, and apt to be in a pet, in which caſe he would leave the company and go to bed by ſeven o'clock in the evening. On theſe occaſions, I always diſappeared, giving up every conſideration to that of

pleaſing my huſband, notwithſtanding the ridicule of his relations, who taxed me with having ſpoiled him with too much indulgence. But how could I expreſs too much tenderneſs and condeſcenſion for a man, who doated upon me to ſuch exceſs, that, when buſineſs obliged him to leave me, he always ſnatched the firſt opportunity to return, and often rode through darkneſs, ſtorms, and tempeſts to my arms?

Having ſtaid about ſeven months in this place, I found myſelf in a fair way of being a mother; and that I might be near my own relations, in ſuch an intereſting ſituation, I and my dear companion departed from H—n, not without great reluctance; for I was fond of the Scots in general, who treated me with great hoſpitality and reſpect; and to this day, they pay me the compliment of ſaying, I was one of the beſt wives in that country; which is ſo juſtly celebrated for good women.

Lord W——m having attended me to my father's houſe, was obliged to return to Scotland, to ſupport his intereſt in being elected member of parliament; ſo that he took his leave of me, with a full reſolution of ſeeing me again before the time of my lying-in; and all the comfort I enjoyed in his abſence, was the peruſal of his letters, which I punctually received, together with thoſe of his ſiſter, who, from time to time, favoured me with aſſurances of his conſtancy and devotion. Indeed, theſe teſtimonials were neceſſary to one of my diſpoſition; for I was none of thoſe who could be contented with half an heart. I could not even ſpare one complacent look to any other woman, but expected the undivided homage of his love. Had I been diſappointed in this expectation, I ſhould (though a wife) have rebelled or died.

Meanwhile my parents treated me with great tenderneſs, intending that Lord W—m ſhould be ſettled in a houſe of his own, and accommodated with my fortune, and his expectations from the queen were very ſanguine, when I was taken ill, and delivered of a dead child—an event which affected me extremely. When I underſtood the extent of my misfortune, my heart throbbed with ſuch violence, that my breaſt could ſcarce contain it; and my anxiety, being aggravated by the abſence of my lord, produced a dangerous fever, of which he was no

ſhone with the moſt diſmal aſpect; every thing was ſolitary, cheerleſs, and replete with horror.

In this condition I was, by the direction of my friend, conveyed to her houſe, where my faculties were ſo overpowered by the load of anguiſh which oppreſſed me, that I know not what paſſed during the firſt days of my unhappy widowhood; this only I know, the kind ducheſs treated me with all imaginable care and compaſſion, and carried me to her country-houſe, where I ſtaid ſome months; during which, ſhe endeavoured to comfort me with all the amuſements ſhe could invent, and laid me under ſuch obligations as ſhall never be eraſed from my remembrance: Yet, notwithſtanding all her care and concern, I was, by my exceſs of grief, plunged into a languiſhing diſtemper, for which my phyſicians adviſed me to drink the Bath waters.

In compliance with this preſcription, I went thither towards the end of ſummer, and found ſome benefit by adhering to their directions. Though I ſeldom went abroad, except when I viſited my ſiſter-in-law, who was there with the princeſs; and, upon theſe occaſions, I never failed to attract the notice of the company, who were ſtruck with the appearance of ſuch a young creature in weeds: Nor was I free from the perſecution of profeſſed admirers; but, being dead to all joy, I was deaf to the voice of adulation.

About Chriſtmas I repaired to my father's houſe, where my ſorrows were revived by every object that recalled the idea of my dear lamented lord. But theſe melancholy reflections I was obliged to bear, becauſe I had no other home or habitation, being left an unprovided widow, altogether dependent on the affection of my own family.

During this winter, divers overtures were made to my father, by people who demanded me in marriage; but my heart was not yet ſufficiently weaned from my former paſſion to admit the thoughts of another maſter. Among thoſe that preſented their propoſals was a certain young nobleman, who, upon the firſt news of Lord W——m's death, came poſt from Paris, in order to declare his paſſion. He made his firſt appearance in a hired chariot and ſix, accompanied by a big fat fellow, whom (as I afterwards learned) he had engaged to ſound his praiſes, with

a promiſe of a thouſand pounds, in lieu of which he paid him with forty. Whether it was with a view of ſcreening himſelf from the cold, or of making a comfortable medium in caſe of being overturned, and falling under his weighty companion, I know not; but, certain it is, the carriage was ſtuffed with hay, in ſuch a manner, that, when he arrived, the ſervants were at ſome pains in rummaging and removing it, before they could come at their maſter, or help him to alight. When he was lifted out of the chariot, he exhibited a very ludicrous figure to the view: He was a thin, meagre, ſhivering creature, of a low ſtature, with little black eyes, a long noſe, ſallow complexion, and pitted with the ſmall pox; dreſſed in a coat of light brown frieze, lined with pink-coloured ſhag, a monſtrous ſolitaire and bag, and (if I remember right) a pair of huge jack-boots. In a word, his whole appearance was ſo little calculated for inſpiring love, that I had (on the ſtrength of ſeeing him once before at Oxford) ſet him down as the laſt man on earth whom I would chooſe to wed; and I will venture to affirm, that he was in every particular the reverſe of my late huſband.

As my father was not at home, he ſtaid but one evening, and left his errand with my mother, to whom he was as diſagreeable as to myſelf; ſo that his propoſal was abſolutely rejected, and I heard no more of him during the ſpace of three whole months, at the expiration of which I went to town, where this mortifying figure preſented itſelf again, and renewed his ſuit, offering ſuch advantageous terms of ſettlement, that my father began to reliſh the match, and warmly recommended it to my conſideration.

Lord W—— m's relations adviſed me to embrace the opportunity of making myſelf independent: All my acquaintance plied me with arguments to the ſame purpoſe: I was uneaſy at home, and indifferent to all mankind.—I weighed the motives with the objections, and with reluctance yielded to the importunity of my friends.

In conſequence of this determination, the little gentleman was permitted to viſit me; and the manner of his addreſs did not at all alter the opinion I had conceived of his character and underſtanding. I was even ſhocked at the proſpect of marrying a man whom I could not love; and,

in order to diſburden my own conſcience, took an opportunity of telling him, one evening, as we ſat oppoſite to each other, that it was not in my power to command my affection, and therefore he could not expect the poſſeſſion of my heart, Lord W——m's indulgence having ſpoiled me for a wife; nevertheleſs, I would endeavour to contract a friendſhip for him, which would entirely depend upon his own behaviour.

To this declaration he replied (to my great ſurpriſe), that he did not deſire me to love him—my friendſhip was ſufficient; and next day repeated this ſtrange inſtance of moderation in a letter, which I communicated to my ſiſter, who laughed heartily at the contents, and perſuaded me, that ſince I could love no man, he was the propereſt perſon to be my huſband.

Accordingly, the wedding clothes and equipage being prepared, the day—the fatal day— was fixed!—on the morning of which I went to the houſe of my brother-in-law, Duke H——, who loved me tenderly, and took my leave of the family, a family which I ſhall always remember with love, honour, and eſteem. His grace received me in the moſt affectionate manner, ſaying at parting, "Lady W——, if he does not uſe you well, I will take you back again."

The bridegroom and I met at Ox—d Chapel, where the ceremony was performed by the Biſhop of W——, in preſence of his lordſhip's mother, my father, and another lady. The nuptial knot being tied, we ſet out for my father's houſe in the country, and proceeded full twenty miles on our journey before my lord opened his mouth, my thoughts having been all that time employed on ſomething quite foreign to my preſent ſituation; for I was then but a giddy girl of eighteen. At length my father broke ſilence, and, clapping his lordſhip on the ſhoulder, told him he was but a dull bridegroom; upon which my lord gave him to underſtand that he was out of ſpirits. This dejection continued all the day, notwithſtanding the refreſhment of a plentiful dinner, which he ate upon the road; and in the evening we arrived at the place of our deſtination, where we were kindly received by my mother, though ſhe had no liking to the match; and, after ſupper, we retired to our apartment.

It was here that I had occaſion to perceive the moſt diſagreeable contraſt between my preſent help-mate and my former lord. Inſtead of flying to my arms with all the eagerneſs of love and rapture, this manly repreſentative ſat moping in a corner, like a criminal on execution day, and owned he was aſhamed to bed with a woman whoſe hand he had ſcarce ever touched.

I could not help being affected with this puſillanimous behaviour: I remembered Lord W——m, while I ſurveyed the object before me, and made ſuch a compariſon as filled me with horror and diſguſt; nay, to ſuch a degree did my averſion to this phantom prevail, that I began to ſweat with anguiſh at the thought of being ſubjected to his pleaſure; and when, after a long heſitation, he ventured to approach me, I trembled as if I had been expoſed to the embraces of a rattleſnake. Nor did the efforts of his love diminiſh this antipathy. His attempts were like the pawings of an imp, ſent from hell to ſeize and torment ſome guilty wretch, ſuch as are exhibited in ſome dramatic performance, which I never ſee acted without remembering my wedding-night. By ſuch ſhadowy, unſubſtantial, vexatious behaviour was I tantalized, and robbed of my repoſe; and early next morning I got up, with a moſt ſovereign contempt for my bedfellow, who indulged himſelf in bed till eleven.

Having paſſed a few days in this place, I went home with him to his houſe at Twickenham, and ſoon after we were preſented at court, when the queen was pleaſed to ſay to my lord's mother, ſhe did not doubt that we ſhould be an happy couple, for I had been a good wife to my former huſband.

Whatever deficiencies I had to complain of in my new ſpouſe, he was not wanting in point of liberality. I was preſented with a very fine chariot, ſtudded with ſilver nails, and ſuch a profuſion of jewels as furniſhed a joke to ſome of my acquaintance, who obſerved, that I was formerly queen of hearts, but now metamorphoſed into the queen of diamonds. I now alſo had an opportunity (which I did not let ſlip) of paying Lord W——m's debts from my privy purſe; and on that ſcore received the thanks of his elder brother, who (though he had undertaken to diſcharge them) delayed the execution of his

purpoſe longer than I thought they ſhould remain unpaid. This uncommon ſplendor attracted the eyes and envy of my competitors, who were the more implacable in their reſentments, becauſe, notwithſtanding my marriage, I was as much as ever followed by the men of gallantry and pleaſure, among whom it is a conſtant maxim, that a woman never withholds her affections from her huſband without an intention to beſtow them ſomewhere elſe. I never appeared without a train of admirers, and my houſe in the country was always crowded with gay young men of quality.

Among thoſe who cultivated my good graces with the greateſt ſkill and aſſiduity, were the Earl C—— and Mr. S——, brother to Lord F——. The former of whom, in the courſe of his addreſſes, treated me with an entertainment of ſurpriſing magnificence, diſpoſed into a dinner, ſupper, and ball, to which I, at his deſire, invited eleven ladies, whom he paired with the like number of his own ſex; ſo that the whole company amounted to twenty-four. We were regaled with a moſt elegant dinner, in an apartment which was altogether ſuperb, and ſerved by gentlemen only, no livery ſervant being permitted to come within the door. In the afternoon we embarked in two ſplendid barges, being attended by a band of muſic in a third; and enjoyed a delightful evening upon the river till the twilight, when we returned and began the ball, which was conducted with ſuch order and taſte, that mirth and good humour prevailed. No diſſatisfaction appeared, except in the countenance of one old maid, ſince married to a ſon of the Duke of ———, who, though ſhe would not refuſe to partake of ſuch an agreeable entertainment, was diſpleaſed that I ſhould have the honour of inviting her. O baleful Envy, thou ſelf-tormenting fiend! how doſt thou predominate in all aſſemblies, from the grand gala of a court, to the meeting of ſimple peaſants at their harveſt-home!—Nor is the prevalence of this ſordid paſſion to be wondered at, if we conſider the weakneſs, pride, and vanity of our ſex. The preſence of one favourite man ſhall poiſon the enjoyment of a whole company, and produce the moſt rancorous enmity betwixt the cloſeſt friends.

I danced with the maſter of the ball, who employed

all the artillery of his eloquence in making love; yet I did not liſten to his addreſſes, for he was not to my taſte, though he poſſeſſed an agreeable perſon, and a good acquired underſtanding; but he was utterly ignorant of that gentle prevailing art which I afterwards experienced in Mr. S——, and which was the only method he could have ſucceſsfully practiſed, in ſeducing a young woman like me, born with ſentiments of honour, and trained up in the paths of religion and virtue. This young gentleman was indeed abſolutely maſter of thoſe inſinuating qualifications which few women of paſſion and ſenſibility can reſiſt; and had a perſon every way adapted for profiting by theſe inſidious talents. He was well acquainted with the human heart, conſcious of his own power and capacity, and exerciſed theſe endowments with unwearied perſeverance. He was tall and thin, of a ſhape and ſize perfectly agreeable to my taſte, with large blue eloquent eyes, good teeth, and a long head turned to gallantry. His behaviour was the ſtandard of politeneſs, and all his advances were conducted with the moſt profound reſpect; which is the moſt effectual expedient a man can uſe againſt us, if he can find means to perſuade us that it proceeds from the exceſs and delicacy of his paſſion. It is no other than a ſilent compliment, by which our accompliſhments are continually flattered, and pleaſes in proportion to the ſuppoſed underſtanding of him who pays it.

By theſe arts and advantages this conſummate politician in love began by degrees to ſap the foundations of my conjugal faith; he ſtole imperceptibly into my affection, and by dint of opportunity, which he well knew how to improve, triumphed at laſt over all his rivals.

Nor was he the only perſon that diſputed my heart with Earl C—. That nobleman was alſo rivalled by Lord C— H—, a Scotchman, who had been an intimate and relation of my former huſband. Him I would have preferred to moſt of his competitors, and actually coquetted with him for ſome time: But the amour was interrupted by his going to Ireland; upon which occaſion, underſtanding that he was but indifferently provided with money, I made him a preſent of a gold ſnuff-box, in which was encloſed a bank-note; a trifling mark of my eſteem,

which he afterwards juſtified by the moſt grateful, friendly, and genteel behaviour; and as we correſponded by letters, I frankly told him, that Mr. S—— had ſtepped in, and won the palm from all the reſt of my admirers.

This new favourite's mother and ſiſters, who lived in the neighbourhood, were my conſtant companions; and, in conſequence of this intimacy, he never let a day paſs without paying his reſpects to me in perſon; nay, ſo ingenious was he in contriving the means of promoting his ſuit, that whether I rode or walked, went abroad or ſtaid at home, he was always of courſe one of the party; ſo that his deſign ſeemed to engroſs his whole vigilance and attention. Thus he ſtudied my diſpoſition, and eſtabliſhed himſelf in my good opinion at the ſame time. He found my heart was ſuſceptible of every tender impreſſion, and ſaw that I was not free from the vanity of youth; he had already acquired my friendſhip and eſteem, from which he knew there was a ſhort and eaſy tranſition to love. By his penetration chooſing proper ſeaſons for the theme, he urged it with ſuch pathetic vows and artful adulation, as well might captivate a young woman of my complexion and inexperience, and circumſtanced as I was, with a huſband whom I had ſuch reaſon to deſpiſe.

Though he thus made an inſenſible progreſs in my heart, he did not find my virtue an eaſy conqueſt; and I myſelf was ignorant of the advantage he had gained with regard to my inclinations, until I was convinced of his ſucceſs by an alarm of jealouſy which I one day felt, at ſeeing him engaged in converſation with another lady. I forthwith recognized this ſymptom of love, with which I had been formerly acquainted, and trembled at the diſcovery of my own weakneſs. I underwent a ſtrange agitation and mixture of contrary ſenſations: I was pleaſed with the paſſion, yet aſhamed of avowing it even to my own mind. The rights of a huſband (though mine was but a nominal one) occurred to my reflection, and virtue, modeſty, and honour, forbade me to cheriſh the guilty flame.

When I encouraged theſe laudable ſcruples, and reſolved to ſacrifice my love to duty and reputation, my lord was almoſt every day employed in riding poſt to my father, with complaints of my conduct, which was hitherto irreproachable; though the greateſt grievance which

he pretended to have ſuffered was my refuſing to comply with his deſire, when he entreated me to lie a whole hour every morning, with my neck uncovered, that, by gazing, he might quiet the perturbation of his ſpirits. From this requeſt you may judge of the man, as well as of the regard I muſt entertain for his character and diſpoſition.

During the whole ſummer I was beſieged by my artful undoer, and in the autumn ſet out with my lord for Bath, where, by reaſon of the intimacy that ſubſiſted between our families, we lived in the ſame houſe with my lover and his ſiſter, who, with another agreeable young lady, accompanied us in this expedition. By this time Mr. S—— had extorted from me a confeſſion of a mutual flame, though I aſſured him that it ſhould never induce me to give up the valuable poſſeſſion of an unſpotted character, and a conſcience void of offence. I offered him all the enjoyment he could reap from an unreſerved intercourſe of ſouls, abſtracted from any ſenſual conſideration. He eagerly embraced the Platonic propoſal, becauſe he had ſagacity enough to foreſee the iſſue of ſuch chimerical contracts, and knew me too well to think he could accompliſh his purpoſe without ſeeming to acquieſce in my own terms, and cultivating my tenderneſs under the ſpecious pretext.

In conſequence of this agreement, we took all opportunities of ſeeing each other in private; and theſe interviews were ſpent in mutual proteſtations of diſintereſted love. This correſpondence, though dangerous, was (on my ſide) equally innocent and endearing; and many happy hours we paſſed, before my ſentiments were diſcovered. At length my lover was taken ill, and then my paſſion burſt out beyond the power of concealment; my grief and anxiety became ſo conſpicuous in my countenance, and my behaviour was ſo indiſcreet, that every body in the houſe perceived the ſituation of my thoughts, and blamed my conduct accordingly.

Certain it is, I was extremely imprudent, though intentionally innocent. I have lain whole nights by my lord, who teized and tormented me for that which neither I could give nor he could take, and ruminated on the fatal conſequence of this unhappy flame, until I was worked into a fever of diſquiet. I ſaw there was no

ſafety but in flight, and often determined to baniſh myſelf for ever from the ſight of this dangerous intruder. But my reſolution always failed at the approach of day, and my deſire of ſeeing him as conſtantly recurred. So far was I from perſiſting in ſuch commendable determinations, that, on the eve of our departure from Bath, I felt the keeneſt pangs of ſorrow at our approaching ſeparation; and as we could not enjoy our private interviews at my houſe in town, I promiſed to viſit him at his own apartments, after he had ſworn by all that's ſacred, that he would take no ſiniſter advantage of my condeſcenſion, by preſuming upon the opportunities I ſhould give.

He kept his word; for he ſaw I truſted to it with fear and trembling, and perceived that my apprehenſion was not affected, but the natural concern of a young creature, diſtracted between love and duty, whom, had he alarmed, he never would have ſeen within his doors again. Inſtead of preſſing me with ſolicitations in favour of his paſſion, he was more than ever reſpectful and complaiſant; ſo that I found myſelf diſengaged of all reſtraint, conducted the converſation, ſhortened and repeated my viſits, at my own pleaſure, till at laſt I became ſo accuſtomed to this communication, that his houſe was as familiar to me as my own.

Having in this manner ſecured himſelf in my confidence, he reſumed the favourite topic of love, and, warming my imagination by gradual advances on the ſubject, my heart began to pant; when he ſaw me thus moved, he ſnatched the favourable occaſion to practiſe all his eloquence and art. I could not reſiſt his energy, nor even fly from the temptation that aſſailed me, until he had obtained a promiſe that he ſhould, at our next meeting, reap the fruits of his tedious expectation. Upon this condition I was permitted to retire, and bleſſed heaven for my eſcape, fully determined to continue in the path of virtue I had hitherto trod, and ſtifle the criminal flame by which my peace and reputation were endangered. But his idea, which reigned in my heart without controul, ſoon baffled all theſe prudent ſuggeſtions.

I ſaw him again; and he reminded me of my promiſe, which I endeavoured to evade with affected pleaſantry; upon which he manifeſted the utmoſt diſpleaſure and

chagrin, ſhedding ſome crocodile tears, and upbraiding me with levity and indifference. He obſerved, that he had ſolicited my favour for ten long months without intermiſſion, and imagined I had held out ſo long on virtuous motives only; but now he could plainly perceive that his want of ſucceſs had been owing to my want of affection, and that all my profeſſions were inſincere: In a word, he perſuaded me, that his remonſtrances were juſt and reaſonable. I could not ſee the affliction of a man I loved, when I knew it was in my power to remove it; and, rather than forfeit his opinion of my ſincerity and love, I conſented to his wiſh. My heart now flutters at the remembrance of the dear though fatal indiſcretion; yet I reflect without remorſe, and even remember it with pleaſure.

If I could not avoid the cenſure of the world, I was reſolved to bear it without repining; and ſure the guilt (if there was any in my conduct) was but venial; for I conſidered myſelf as a perſon abſolved of all matrimonial ties, by the inſignificance of Lord ——, who, though a nominal huſband, was in fact a mere non-entity. I therefore contracted a new engagement with my lover, to which I reſolved to adhere with the moſt ſcrupulous fidelity, without the leaſt intention of injuring my lord or his relations; for, had our mutual paſſion produced any viſible effects, I would immediately have renounced and abandoned my huſband for ever, that the fruit of my love for Mr. S—— might not have inherited, to the detriment of the right heir. This was my determination, which I thought juſt, if not prudent; and for which I have incurred the imputation of folly, in the opinion of this wiſe and honeſt generation, by whoſe example and advice I have, ſince that time, been a little reformed in point of prudentials, though I ſtill retain a ſtrong tendency to return to my primitive way of thinking.

When I quitted Mr. S——, after the ſacrifice I had made, and returned to my own bed, it may perhaps be ſuppoſed that I ſlept but little. True: I was kept awake by the joyful impatience of reviſiting my lover. Indeed I neglected no opportunity of flying to his arms: When Lord —— was in the country, we enjoyed each other's company without interruption; but when he reſided in

town, our correſpondence was limited to ſtolen interviews, which were unſpeakably delicious, as genuine love preſided at the entertainment.

Such was my happineſs in the courſe of this tender communication, that to this day I remember it with pleaſure, though it has coſt me dear in the ſequel, and was at that time enjoyed at a conſiderable expence; for I devoted myſelf ſo entirely to my lover, who was deſirous of engroſſing my time and thoughts, that my acquaintance, which was very numerous, juſtly accuſed me of neglect, and of conſequence cooled in their friendſhips: But I was *All for love, or the world well loſt*: And were the ſame opportunity to offer, I would act the ſame conduct over again.

Some there are who poſſibly may wonder how I could love twice with ſuch violence of affection: But all ſuch obſervers muſt be unacquainted with the human heart. Mine was naturally adapted for the tender paſſions, and had been ſo fortunate, ſo cheriſhed in its firſt impreſſions, that it felt with joy the ſame ſenſations revive, when influenced by the ſame engaging qualifications. Certain it is, I loved the ſecond time as well as the firſt, and better was impoſſible. I gave up my all for both: Fortune and my father's favour for the one; reputation, friends, and fortune for the other. Yet, notwithſtanding this intimate connection, I did not relinquiſh the world all at once; on the contrary, I ſtill appeared at court, and attracted the notice and approbation of my royal patroneſs; I danced with the P—— of W——; a circumſtance which ſo nearly affected Mr. S——, who was preſent, that, in order to manifeſt his reſentment, he choſe the ugliеſt woman in the ball for his partner: and I no ſooner perceived his uneaſineſs, than I gave over, with a view of appeaſing his diſpleaſure.

Without repeating particular circumſtances, let it ſuffice to ſay, our mutual paſſion was a perfect copy of that which had ſubſiſted between me and my dear Lord W—m. It was jealous, melting, and delicate, and chequered with little accidents, which ſerve to animate and maintain the flame, in its firſt ardency of rapture. When my lover was ſick, I attended and nurſed him with indefatigable tenderneſs and care; and during an indiſpoſition, which

I caught in the performance of this agreeable office, he diſcharged the obligation with all the warmth of ſympathy and love.

It was, however, judged neceſſary by the phyſicians, that I ſhould uſe the Bath waters for the recovery of my health; and I ſet out for that place, glad of a pretence to be abſent from Lord ——, with whom I lived on very unhappy terms. He had, about nine months after our marriage, deſired that we might ſleep in ſeparate beds, and gave a very whimſical reaſon for this propoſal. He ſaid, the immenſity of his love deprived him of the power of gratification, and that ſome commerce with an object, to which his heart was not attached, might, by diminiſhing the tranſports of his ſpirits, recompoſe his nerves, and enable him to enjoy the fruits of his good fortune.

You may be ſure I made no objections to this plan, which was immediately put in execution. He made his addreſſes to a nymph of Drury-lane, whoſe name (as he told me) was Mrs. Rock. She made ſhift to extract ſome money from her patient; but his infirmity was beyond the power of her art, though ſhe made ſome miſchief between us; and I communicated my ſuſpicion to the Duke of H——, who intended to have expoſtulated with her upon the ſubject; but ſhe got intimation of his deſign, and ſaved him the trouble by a precipitate retreat.

After my return from Bath, where Mr. S—— and I had lived happily, until we were interrupted by the arrival of my huſband, his lordſhip expreſſed an inclination to be my bedfellow again. In this particular I deſired to be excuſed. I would not be the firſt to propoſe the ſeparation, which, though uſual in other countries, is contrary to the cuſtom of England, being unwilling to furniſh the leaſt handle for cenſure, as my character was ſtill unblemiſhed; yet, when the propoſal came from him, I thought myſelf entitled to refuſe a re-union; to which I accordingly objected.

This oppoſition produced a quarrel, which roſe to a ſtate of perpetual animoſity; ſo that we began to talk of parting. My lord reliſhed the expedient, agreeing to add three hundred pounds a-year to my pin-money, which (by the bye) was never paid; and I renounced all ſtate

and grandeur, to live in a ſmall houſe that I hired at Caſehorton, where I paſſed my time for two months, in the moſt agreeable retirement, with my dear lover. At length I was diſturbed by the intruſion of my lord, who moleſted me with viſits and ſolicitations to return, pretending that he had changed his mind, and inſiſting upon my compliance with his deſire.

I exhauſted my invention in endeavours to evade his requeſt; but he perſecuted me without ceaſing: So that I was fain to capitulate, on condition that he ſhould immediately ſet out for France; and that he ſhould not preſume to approach my bed till our arrival at Calais. We accordingly departed for that kingdom; and, far from infringing the leaſt article of our treaty, his lordſhip did not inſiſt upon his privilege before we reached the capital of France.

Meanwhile, I began to feel the effect of my paſſion in a very intereſting manner, and communicated my diſcovery to the dear author of it, who would not leave me in ſuch an affecting ſituation, but took the firſt opportunity of following us to France.

In our road to Paris, we ſtopped to viſit Chantilly, a magnificent chateau belonging to the Prince of Conde, and there met by accident with ſome Engliſh noblemen, to whom I was known. The Prince and his ſiſters invited me very politely into the gallery, where they ſat. They complimented me on my perſon, and ſeemed to admire my dreſs, which was altogether new to them, being a blue Engliſh riding-habit, trimmed with gold, and an hat with a feather. They were particularly well pleaſed with my hair, which hung down to my waiſt, and preſſed me to ſtay a fortnight at their houſe; an invitation which I was very much mortified at being obliged to refuſe, becauſe my lord did not underſtand the French language. I was enchanted with the place and the company, the women being amiable, and the men polite; nor were they ſtrangers to my name and ſtory; for Mr. S—— calling at the ſame place a few days after, they rallied him on my account.

When we arrived at Paris, the firſt thing I did was to metamorphoſe myſelf into a French woman. I cut off my hair, hid a very good complexion of my own with

rouge, reconciled myſelf to powder, which I had never uſed before, put on a robe with a large hoop, and went to the *Thuilleries*, full of ſpirits and joy; for, at that time, every thing conſpired to make me happy: I had health, youth, and beauty, love, vanity, and affluence, and found myſelf ſurrounded with diverſions, which were gay, new, and agreeable. My appearance drew upon me the eyes of the whole company, who conſidered me as a ſtranger, but not a foreigner, ſo completely was I equipped in the faſhion of the French; and when they underſtood who I was, they applauded my perſon with the moſt ſwiſh encomiums, according to their known politeneſs.

After having made a circuit round all the public places of entertainment in Paris, I was introduced into company by an Engliſh family reſiding in that city; and, among others, became acquainted with a French lady, whoſe charms were remarkably attractive. The Duke of K—— was her admirer; but ſhe lived in reputation with her mother and an agreeable ſiſter, whoſe lover was the Prince of C—— (for almoſt every lady in France has her *amant*).

With this charming woman, whoſe name was Madam de la T——, I often made parties of pleaſure. The Duke, Mr. S——, ſhe, and I, uſed to meet in the Bois de Boulogne, which is a pleaſant wood at a ſmall diſtance from Paris, whither the company repairs in the ſummer-ſeaſon for the benefit of the air; and, after having amuſed ourſelves among the groves, embarked in his grace's equipage, which was extremely elegant, being a calaſh drawn by ſix fine long-tailed grays, adorned with ribbons in the French taſte; and thus we were conducted to a little enchanted, or at leaſt enchanting palace, poſſeſſed by the Duke, at one end of the town. The lower apartment, appropriated to me, was furniſhed with yellow and ſilver, the bed ſurrounded with looking-glaſſes, and the door opened into the garden, laid out in a cradle walk, and intervening parterres of roſes and other flowers. Above ſtairs my female companion lodged in a chamber furniſhed with chintz. We ſupped all together in the ſaloon, which though ſmall, was perfectly elegant. The company was always good-humoured, the converſation ſprightly and

joyous, and the ſcene, though often repeated, ſtill delightful and entertaining.

At other times Mr. S—— and I uſed to paſs our evenings at the palace of the Prince of C—, which his highneſs lent us for our accommodation. The apartments opened into the gardens of the Luxembourg, and were in point of magnificence, ſuitable to the owner. Thither I uſed to repair in a flaming equipage, on pretence of viſiting, and ſpent the beſt part of the night with him who was dearer to me than all the princes in the world.

While I was happily engaged in theſe raviſhing parties, my little lord was employed in efforts to recover his health by reſtoratives, and I know not what; for he ſtill lamented the enfeebling effects of his paſſion, and complained that he loved me more like an angel than a woman, though he ſtrove to govern his affections according to the doctrines of the Chriſtian religion, as he regulated his life by the maxims of Charles the Twelfth of Sweden. The meaning of this declaration I could never learn; and indead, I have been often tempted to believe he had no meaning at all.

Be that as it will, I found my ſize viſibly increaſing, and my ſituation extremely uneaſy, on account of the perpetual wrangling which prevailed betwixt us, in conſequence of his deſiring to ſleep with me again, after we had parted beds for the ſecond time: And, that I might be no longer expoſed to ſuch diſagreeable perſecution, I reſolved to leave him, though at the hazard of my life.

Thus determined, I went to the Britiſh ambaſſador in a hackney-coach; and, in order to diſguiſe my youth, which might have prepoſſeſſed him againſt my judgment, muffled myſelf up in a black hood, which (as he ſaid) inſtead of lending an air of gravity to my countenance, added a wildneſs to my looks, which was far from being diſagreeable. He had been a gallant man in his youth, and even then, though well ſtricken in years, was not inſenſible to the power of beauty. This diſpoſition, perhaps, rendered him more favourable to my cauſe, though he at firſt adviſed me to return to my huſband; but finding me obſtinate, he undertook to ſerve me in my own way, and procure a protection from the French king, by virtue of which I could live at Paris unmoleſted by my lord. Ne-

vertheleſs, he adviſed me (if I was determined to leave him) to make the beſt of my way to England, and ſue for a divorce.

I reliſhed his opinion, and concealed myſelf about three days in Paris, during which I borrowed ſome linen; for, as it was impoſſible to convey any thing out of my own houſe without ſuſpicion, I had neither clothes for my accommodation, nor a ſervant to wait on me.

In this ſolitary condition I took the road to Flanders, after I had put my lord upon a wrong ſcent, by writing a letter to him, dated at Calais, and travelled through an unknown country, without any other attendant than the poſtillion, being ſubjected to this inconvenience by the laws of France, which are ſo ſevere in ſome particulars, that, if any perſon had been apprehended with me, he he would have ſuffered death, for going off with a man's wife; though any man might go to bed with the ſame woman, without fear of incurring any legal puniſhment.

I proceeded night and day without intermiſſion, that I might the ſooner reach Flanders, where I knew I ſhould be ſafe; and as the nights were exceſſively cold, I was fain to wrap myſelf up in flannel, which I bought for the purpoſe, as I had no clothes to keep me warm, and travelled in an open chaiſe. While we paſſed through dreary woods, quite remote from the habitations of men, I was not without apprehenſions of being ſtripped and murdered by the poſtilion; and, in all probability, owed my ſafety to the indigence of my appearance, which might alſo protect me in two miſerable places, where I was obliged to lie, before I got out of the territories of France; for, as I could not reach the great towns where I intended to lodge, I was under the neceſſity of putting up at little wretched hovels, where no proviſion was to be had, but ſour brown bread, and ſourer cheeſe; and every thing ſeemed to denote the dens of deſpair and aſſaſſination.

I made ſhift, however, to ſubſiſt on this fare, uncomfortable as it was, confiding in the meanneſs of my equipage for the ſecurity of my perſon; and at length arriving at Bruſſels, fixed my quarters in the Hotel de Flandre (ſo well known to the Engliſh ſince), where I thought myſelf extremely happy in the accompliſhment of my flight.

I had not been two full days in this place, when I was

bleſſed with the ſight of my lover, who followed me on the wings of love, in purſuance of the plan we had projected before my departure from Paris. Here we concerted meaſures for proceeding to England. I hired a tall fine Liegeoiſe for my maid; and ſetting out for Oſtend, we embarked in a veſſel, in which Mr. S—— had beſpoke our paſſage. Our voyage was ſhort and proſperous, and our time moſt agreeably ſpent in the company of my dear partner, who was a moſt engaging man in all reſpects, as I dare ſay my Lady O—— has ſince found him.

I aſſumed a fictitious name, took private lodgings in Poland-ſtreet, retained lawyers, and commenced a ſuit for ſeparation againſt my lord. I communicated the reaſons of my elopement to my father, who was ſhocked and ſurpriſed at my conduct, which he condemned with expreſſions of ſorrow and reſentment. But the ſtep was taken; nor did I repent of what I had done, except on his account.

In the morning after my arrival at London, I waited upon the Lord Chief Juſtice, to whom I complained of the uſage I had received from my lord, whoſe temper was teazing, tireſone, and intolerably capricious. Indeed, his behaviour was a ſtrange compound of madneſs and folly, ſeaſoned with a ſmall proportion of ſenſe: No wonder then that I, who am hot and haſty, ſhould be wretched, under the perſecution of ſuch a perverſe humoriſt, who uſed to terrify me, and ſcold at me the whole night without intermiſſion, and ſhake my pillow from time to time, that I might not ſleep, while he tormented me with his diſagreeable expoſtulations. I have been often frightened almoſt out of my ſenſes, at ſeeing him convulſed with the moſt unreaſonable paſſion; and chagrined to the higheſt degree of diſguſt, to find (by repeated obſervation) his diſpoſition ſo prepoſterous, that his ſatisfaction and diſpleaſure never depended upon the cauſe he had to be ſatisfied or diſobliged; but, on the contrary, when he had moſt reaſon to be pleaſed, he was always moſt diſcontented, and very often in good humour, when he had reaſon enough for vexation.

While I lived in Poland-ſtreet, I was engaged with lawyers, and ſo often viſited by my father, that I could not dedicate my whole time as uſual to my lover; nor

was it convenient that he ſhould be ſeen in my company; he therefore took a ſmall houſe at Camberwell, whither I went as often as I had an opportunity; and maintained the correſpondence with ſuch eagerneſs and induſtry, that, although I was ſix months gone with child, I have often, by myſelf, ſet out for his habitation, in a hackney-coach, at eleven o'clock at night, and returned by ſix in the morning, that I might be in my own bed when my father came to ſee me; for I concealed my amour, as well as the effects of it, from his knowledge, and frequently took water from the Bridge, that my motions might not be diſcovered. Nothing but the moſt paſſionate love could have ſupported my ſpirits under ſuch viciſſitudes of fatigue, or enabled my admirer to ſpend whole days by himſelf in ſuch a ſolitary retirement.

By this time, my lord was arrived in England, and employed in diſcovering the place of my retreat; ſo that I lived in continual alarm, and provided myſelf with a ſpeaking trumpet, which ſtood by my bed-ſide, to be uſed in calling for aſſiſtance, in caſe my purſuer ſhould make an attack upon my lodgings.

This ſituation being extremely uncomfortable, I had no ſooner began my proceſs againſt him, than I put myſelf entirely under the protection of Mr. S—, who conducted me to the houſe of a friend of his who lived in the country, where I was ſecure from the attempts of my huſband.

The world had now given me up, and I had renounced the world with the moſt perfect reſignation. I weighed in my breaſt what I ſhould loſe in point of character, with what I ſuffered in my peace at home, and found, that my reputation was not to be preſerved, except at the expence of my quiet (for his lordſhip was not diſpoſed to make me eaſy, had I been ever ſo diſcreet). I therefore determined to give up a few ceremonial viſits, and empty profeſſions, for the more ſubſtantial enjoyments of life.

We paſſed our time very agreeably in various amuſements with this friend of Mr. S——, until the term of my reckoning was almoſt expired, then returned to London, and took lodgings in Southampton-ſtreet, where I began to make the preparations for the approaching occaſion. Here I propoſed to live with the utmoſt circum-

ſpection. I diſguiſed my name, ſaw nobody but my lawyer and lover, and never approached the window, leſt I ſhould be diſcovered by accident.

Notwithſtanding theſe precautions, my French maid, whom I had ſent for ſome of my clothes, was dogged in her return, and next morning my lord took my lodgings by ſtorm. Had he given the aſſault in his own perſon only, I make no doubt but he would have ſuffered a repulſe from the oppoſition of the Liegeoiſe, who made all the reſiſtance in her power; but was obliged to give way to ſuperior numbers.

I was at that time a-bed, and hearing an unuſual noiſe below, rung my bell, in order to know the cauſe of ſuch diſturbance. I drew my curtain at the ſame time, and who ſhould I ſee entering my chamber but his lordſhip, attended by a conſtable, and the footman who had diſcoed my retreat!

Such an unexpected viſit could not fail to affect me with ſurpriſe and conſternation: However, I ſummoned all my fortitude to my aid, and perceiving the fellows were about to open my window-ſhutters, deſired their principal to order them down ſtairs. He readily complied with my requeſt, and ſitting down by my bed-ſide, told me with an air of triumph, that he had found me at laſt; and I frankly owned, that I was heartily ſorry for his ſucceſs. Inſtead of upbraiding me with my eſcape, he proceeded to entertain me with all the news in town, and gave me a minute detail of every thing that happened to him ſince our parting; among other articles of intelligence, giving me to underſtand, that he had challenged Mr. S——, who refuſed to fight him, and was in diſgrace with the prince of W—— on that account.

But here his lordſhip did not ſtrictly adhere to the naked truth: He had indeed, before our departure from the country, gone to my lover, and inſiſted upon having ſatisfaction in Hyde-park, two days from the date of his demand, and at three o'clock in the afternoon; S——, believing him in earneſt, accepted the invitation; though he obſerved, that theſe affairs could not be diſcuſſed too ſoon, and wiſhed the time of meeting might be at an earlier hour. But his lordſhip did not chooſe to alter the circumſtances of his firſt propoſal; and, when

he went away, ſaid he ſhould expect him at the appointed time and place, if it did not rain.

His antagoniſt gave me an account of the converſation, when I aſſured him the whole buſineſs would end in ſmoke. Accordingly, my lord ſent him a letter on Monday, deſiring that the aſſignation might be deferred till Thurſday, that he might have time to ſettle his affairs, and pay S——, an hundred pounds, which he had formerly borrowed of him. When Thurſday came, he was favoured with another epiſtle, importing, that the challenger had changed his mind, and would ſeek ſatisfaction at law. Thus ended that heroic exploit, which his lordſhip now boaſted of with ſuch arrogant miſrepreſentation.

Whilſt he regaled me with theſe intereſting particulars, I was contriving a ſcheme to fruſtrate the diſcovery he had made: So that I did not contradict his aſſertions, but told him, that, if he would go down ſtairs, I would riſe and come to breakfaſt. He conſented to this propoſal with great cheerfulneſs; and I own, I was not a little ſurpriſed to find him, at this firſt interview, in as good a humour as if nothing had happened to interrupt the felicity of our matrimonal union.

It coſt me ſome invention to conceal my condition from his notice, being now within a week of the expected criſis: But I knew I had to do with a man of no great penetration, and ſucceeded in my attempt accordingly. We breakfaſted with great harmony, and I invited him to dinner, after having prevailed upon him to ſend away his myrmidons, whom, nevertheleſs, he ordered to return at eleven o'clock at night. We converſed together with great gaiety and mirth. When I rallied him for viſiting me in ſuch a diſhabile, he ſtood a tiptoe to view himſelf in the glaſs; and, owning I was in the right, ſaid he would go and dreſs himſelf before-dinner.

He accordingly went away, charging my maid to give him entrance at his return; and he was no ſooner gone than I wrote to Mr. S——, giving him an account of what had happened. Then, without having determined upon any certain plan, I huddled on my clothes, muffled myſelf up, and calling a chair, went to the next tavern, where I ſtaid no longer than was ſufficient to change my vehicle; and, to the aſtoniſhment of the drawers, who

could not conceive the meaning of my perturbation, proceeded to a ſhop in the neighbourhood, where I diſmiſſed my ſecond chair, and procured an hackney coach, in which I repaired to the lodgings of my lawyer, whom I could truſt. Having made him acquainted with the circumſtances of my diſtreſs, and conſulted him about a proper place of retreat, after ſome recollection, he directed me to a little houſe in a court, to which, by the aſſiſtance of my lover, my woman and clothes were ſafely conveyed that ſame evening.

My lord, however, came to dinner, according to invitation, and did not ſeem at all alarmed when my maid told him I was gone, but ſtepped to my lawyer, to know if he thought I ſhould return. Upon his anſwering in the affirmative, and adviſing his lordſhip to go back in the mean time, and eat the dinner I had provided, he very deliberately took his advice, made a very hearty meal, drank his bottle of wine, and, as I did not return according to his expectation, withdrew, in order to conſult his aſſociates.

This motion of his furniſhed my woman with an opportunity of making her retreat; and, when he returned at night, the coaſt was clear, and he found nobody in the houſe but a porter, who had been left to take care of the furniture. He was ſo enraged at this diſappointment, that he made a furious noiſe, which raiſed the whole neighbourhood, reinforced his crew with the authority of a juſtice of the peace, tarried in the ſtreet till three o'clock in the morning, diſcharged a lodging he had hired at a barber's ſhop oppoſite to the houſe from which I had eſcaped, and retired with the comfortable reflection of having done every thing which man could do to retrieve me.

The hurry of ſpirits and ſurpriſe I had undergone in effecting this retreat, produced ſuch a diſorder in my conſtitution, that I began to fear I ſhould be delivered before I could be provided with neceſſaries for the occaſion. I ſignified my apprehenſion to Mr. S——, who, with infinite care and concern, endeavoured to find a more convenient place; and, after all his inquiries, was obliged to fix upon a paltry apartment in the city, though his tenderneſs was extremely ſhocked at the neceſſity of

chooſing it. However, there was no remedy, nor time to be loſt: To this miſerable habitation I was carried in a hackney-coach; and, though extremely ill, bore my fate with ſpirit and reſignation, in teſtimony of my ſincere and indelible attachment to my lover, for whoſe eaſe and pleaſure I could have ſuffered every inconvenience, and even sacrificed my life.

Immediately after I had taken poſſeſſion of my wretched apartment, I was conſtrained by my indiſpoſition to go to bed, and ſend for neceſſary help; and in a few hours a living pledge of my love and indiſcretion ſaw the light, though the terrors and fatigue I had undergone had affected this little innocent ſo ſeverely, that it ſcarce diſcovered any viſible ſigns of life.

My grief at this misfortune was inexpreſſible: I forthwith diſpatched a meſſage to the dear the anxious father, who flew to my arms, and ſhared my ſorrow, with all the gentleneſs of love and parental fondneſs; yet our fears were (for that time) happily diſappointed by the recovery of our infant daughter, who was committed to the charge of a nurſe in the neighbourhood; ſo that I could every day be ſatisfied in my inquiries about her health. Thus I continued a whole fortnight in a ſtate of happineſs and tranquillity, being bleſſed with the converſation and tender offices of my admirer, whoſe love and attention I wholly engroſſed. In a word, he gave up all buſineſs and amuſement, and concentered all his care and aſſiduity in miniſtering to my eaſe and ſatisfaction. And ſure I had no cauſe to regret what I had ſuffered on his account.

But this my agreeable ſituation was one day diſturbed by a moſt alarming accident, by which my life was drawn into imminent danger. The room under my bed-chamber took fire; I immediately ſmelled it, and ſaw the people about me in the utmoſt perplexity and conſternation, though they would not own the true cauſe of their confuſion, leſt my health ſhould ſuffer in the fright. Nevertheleſs, I was ſo calm in my inquiries, that they ventured to tell me my ſuſpicion was but too juſt: Upon which I gave ſuch directions as I thought would ſecure me from catching cold, in caſe there ſhould be a neceſſity for removing me; but the fire being happily extinguiſhed, I eſcaped that ceremony, which might have coſt me my

life. Indeed it was ſurpriſing that the agitation of my ſpirits did not produce ſome fatal effect upon my conſtitution; and I looked upon my deliverance as the protection of a particular providence.

Though I eſcaped the hazard of a ſudden removal, I found it was high time to change my lodgings, becauſe the neighbours ruſhing into the houſe, upon the alarm of fire, had diſcovered my ſituation, though they were ignorant of my name; and I did not think myſelf ſafe in being the ſubject of their conjectures. Mr. S——, therefore, procured another apartment, with better accommodation, to which I was carried, as ſoon as my health would admit of my removal; and ſoon after my lord wrote to me by the hands of my lawyer, earneſtly entreating me to drop my proſecution, and come home. But I would not comply with his requeſt; and nothing was farther from my intention than the deſire of receiving any favours at his hands.

Thus repulſed, he ſet on foot a moſt accurate ſearch for my perſon; in the courſe of which he is ſaid to have detected ſeveral ladies and young girls, who had reaſons for keeping themſelves concealed; and had like to have been very ſeverely handled for his impertinent curioſity. Being unſucceſsful in all his attempts, he entered into a treaty with one Sir R— H—, a perſon of a very indifferent character, who undertook to furniſh him with an infallible expedient to diſcover the place of my abode, if he would gratify him with a bond for a thouſand pounds; which being executed accordingly, this worthy knight advertiſed me and my maid in the public papers, offering one hundred pounds as a reward to any perſon who ſhould diſcloſe the place of our retirement.

As ſoon as the paper fell into my hands, I was again involved in perplexity; and, being afraid of ſtaying in town, reſolved, with the concurrence of my lover, to accept of an invitation I had received from the Duke of K—, who had by this time arrived in England, with that lady whom I have already mentioned as one of our parties at Paris. Having viſited my little infant, I next day ſet out for the duke's country ſeat, which is a moſt elegant *chateau*, and ſtands in a charming ſituation: Mr. S— followed in a few days. We met with a very cor-

dial reception; his grace was civil and good-natured, lived nobly, and loved pleaſure; Madam la T— was formed to pleaſe; there was always a great deal of good company in the houſe; ſo that we paſſed our time agreeably in playing at billiards and cards, hunting, walking, reading, and converſation.

But my terms of happineſs were generally of ſhort duration. In the midſt of this felicity I was overtaken by a moſt ſevere affliction, in the death of my dear hapleſs infant, who had engroſſed a greater ſhare of my tenderneſs than perhaps I even ſhould have paid to the offspring of a legitimate contract; becauſe the circumſtance of her birth would have been an unſurmountable misfortune to her through the whole courſe of her life, and rendered her abſolutely dependent on my love and protection.

While I ſtill lamented the untimely fate of this fair bloſſom, Lord —— came down, and demanded me as his wife; but the ſuit which I then maintained againſt him deprived him, for the preſent, of an huſband's right; and therefore the duke would not deliver me into his hands.

In ſix months he repeated his viſit and demand; and an agreement was patched up, in conſequence of which I conſented to live in the ſame houſe with him, on condition that he ſhould never deſire to ſleep with me, or take any other meaſure to diſturb my peace; otherwiſe I ſhould be at liberty to leave him again, and entitled to the proviſion of a ſeparate maintenance. To theſe articles I aſſented, by the advice of my lawyers, with a view of obtaining the payment of my pin-money, which I had never received ſince our parting, but ſubſiſted on the ſale of my jewels, which were very conſiderable, and had been preſented to me with full power of alienation. As to my lover, he had no fortune to ſupport me; and for that reaſon I was ſcrupulouſly cautious of augmenting his expence.

We had now enjoyed each others company for three years, during which our mutual paſſion had ſuffered no abatement, nor had my happineſs been mixed with any conſiderable allay, except that late ſtroke of providence which I have already mentioned, and the reflection of the ſorrow that my conduct had entailed upon my dear father, whom I loved beyond expreſſion, and whom nothing could have compelled me to diſoblige but a more

powerful flame, that prevailed over every other conſideration. As I was now forced to break off this enchanting correſpondence, it is not to be doubted that our parting coſt us the moſt acute ſenſations of grief and diſappointment. However, there was no remedy: I tore myſelf from his arms, took my leave of the family, after having acknowledged my obligations to the duke, and ſet out for the place of rendezvous, where I was met by my lord, attended by a ſteward whom he had lately engaged, and who was one chief cauſe of our future ſeparations. My lord, having quitted his houſe in town, conducted me to his lodgings in Pall-Mall, and inſiſted upon ſleeping with me the firſt night; but I refuſed to gratify his deſire, on the authority of our agreement.

This diſpute produced a quarrel, in conſequence of which I attempted to leave the houſe. He endeavouring to prevent my retreat, I fairly locked him in, ran down ſtairs, and, calling a hackney-coach, made the beſt of my way into the city, to my father's lodgings, where I lay, the family being in town, though he himſelf was in the country. I wrote to him immediately; and, when he came to London, declared my intention of ſeparating from my lord; in which, ſeeing me obſtinate and determined, he at length acquieſced, and a formal ſeparation accordingly enſued, which at that time I thought binding and immutable.

I was now ſheltered under the wings of an indulgent father, who had taken me into favour again, on the ſuppoſition that my commerce with Mr. S— was abſolutely at an end. Nevertheleſs, though we had ſeparated, in all appearance, for ever, we had previouſly agreed to maintain our correſpondence in private interviews, which ſhould eſcape the notice of the world, with which I was again obliged to keep ſome meaſures.

Our parting at the Duke of K—'s houſe in the country was attended with all the genuine marks of ſincere and reciprocal affection, and I lived in the ſweet hope of ſeeing him again, in all the tranſport of his former paſſion, when my lawyer, who received my letters, brought me a billet one night, juſt as I had gone to bed. Seeing the ſuperſcription of S—'s hand-writing, I opened it with all the impatience of an abſent lover; but how ſhall I deſcribe

the aſtoniſhment and conſternation with which I was ſeized, when I peruſed the contents! Inſtead of the moſt tender vows and proteſtations, this fatal epiſtle began with, *Madam, the beſt thing you can do is to return to your father*, or ſome cold and killing expreſſion to that effect.

Heaven and earth! what did I feel at this dire conjuncture! the light forſook my eyes, a cold ſweat bedewed my limbs, and I was overwhelmed with ſuch a torrent of ſorrow and ſurpriſe, that every body preſent believed I would have died under the violent agitation. They endeavoured to ſupport my ſpirits with repeated draughts of ſtrong liquor, which had no ſenſible effect upon my conſtitution, though for eight whole years I had drank nothing ſtronger than water; and I muſt have infallibly periſhed in the firſt ecſtaſy of my grief, had it not made its way in a fit of tears and exclamation, in which I continued all night, to the amazement of the family, whom my condition had alarmed, and raiſed from their repoſe. My father was the only perſon who gueſſed the cauſe of my affliction; he ſaid he was ſure I had received ſome ill uſage in a letter or meſſage from that raſcal S— (ſo he termed him in the bitterneſs of paſſion).

At mention of that name, my agony redoubled to ſuch a degree, that all who were preſent wept at ſight of my deplorable condition. My poor father ſhed a flood of tears, and conjured me to tell him the cauſe of my diſquiet; upon which, rather than confeſs the truth, I amuſed his concern, by pretending that my lover was ill. The whole family having ſtaid by me till I was a little more compoſed, left me to the care of my maid, who put me into bed about ſix in the morning; but I enjoyed no reſt: I revolved every circumſtance of my conduct, endeavouring to find out the cauſe of this fatal change in S——'s diſpoſition; and as I could recollect nothing which could juſtly give offence, concluded that ſome malicious perſons had abuſed his ears with ſtories to my prejudice.

With this conjecture I got up, and ſent my lawyer to him with a letter, wherein I inſiſted upon ſeeing him, that I might have an opportunity of juſtifying myſelf in perſon; a taſk which would be eaſily performed, as I had never offended, but in loving too well. I waited with

the moſt anxious impatience for the return of my meſſenger, who brought me an anſwer couched in the coldeſt terms of civility which indifference could dictate; acknowledging, however, that he had nothing to lay to my charge, but that it was for the good of us both we ſhould part.—He ought to have reflected on that before, not after I had ſacrificed my all for his love! I was well nigh diſtracted by this confirmation of his inconſtancy; and I wonder to this day how I retained the uſe of my reaſon under ſuch circumſtances of horror and deſpair! My grief laid aſide all decorem and reſtraint; I told my father, that S—— was dying, and that I would viſit him with all expedition.

Startled at the propoſal, this careful parent demonſtrated the fatal conſequence of ſuch an unguarded ſtep, reminded me of the difficulty with which he had prevailed upon my mother and uncle to forgive my former imprudence, obſerved that his intention was to carry me into the country next day, in order to effect a perfect reconciliation; but now I was on the brink of forfeiting all pretenſions to their regard, by committing another fatal error, which could not poſſibly be retrieved; and that, for his part, whatever pangs it might coſt him, he was reſolved to baniſh me from his ſight for ever.

While he uttered this declaration, the tears trickled down his cheeks, and he ſeemed overwhelmed with the keeneſt ſorrow and mortification; ſo it may be eaſily conceived what were the impreſſions of my grief, reinforced with the affliction of a father whom I dearly loved, and the conſciouſneſs of being the cauſe of all his diſquiet! I was ſtruck dumb with remorſe and woe; and, when I recovered the uſe of ſpeech, I told him how ſenſible I was of his great goodneſs and humanity, and owned how little I deſerved his favour and affection; that the ſenſe of my own unworthineſs was one cauſe of my preſent diſtraction; for ſuch was the condition of my fate, that I muſt either ſee S— or die. I ſaid, though I could not expect his forgiveneſs, I was ſurely worthy of his compaſſion; that nothing but the moſt irreſiſtible paſſion could have miſled me at firſt from my duty, or tempted me to incur the leaſt degree of his diſpleaſure; that the ſame fatal influence ſtill prevailed, and would,

in all probability, continue to the grave, which was the only abode in which I hoped for peace.

While I expreſſed myſelf in this manner, my dear good father wept with the moſt tender ſympathy, and, ſaying I might do as I pleaſed, for he had done with me, quitted the room, leaving me to the cruel ſenſations of my own heart, which almoſt burſted with anguiſh, upbraiding me with a fault which I could not help committing.

I immediately hired a chariot and ſix, and would have ſet out by myſelf, had not my father's affection, which all my errors could not efface, provided an attendant. He ſaw me quite delirious and deſperate; and therefore engaged a relation of my own to accompany and take care of me in this raſh expedition.

During this journey, which laſted too days, I felt no remiſſion of grief and anxiety, but underwent the moſt intolerable ſorrow and ſuſpence: At laſt we arrived at a little houſe called the Hut, on Saliſbury-plain, where, in the moſt frantic agitation, I wrote a letter to S——, deſcribing the miſerable condition to which I was reduced by his unkindneſs, and deſiring to ſee him, with the moſt earneſt ſolicitations.

This billet I committed to the care of my attendant, and laid ſtrong injunctions upon him to tell Mr. S——, my injuries were ſo great, and my deſpair ſo violent, that, if he did not favour me with a viſit, I would go to him, though at his ſiſter's houſe where he then was.

He received my meſſage with great coldneſs, and told my friend, that, if I would return to London without inſiſting upon the interview I demanded, he would, in a little time, follow me to town, and every thing ſhould be amicably adjuſted; but when the meſſenger aſſured him, that I was too much tranſported with grief to hear of ſuch a propoſal, he conſented to meet me in the middle of Saliſbury-plain, that we might avoid all obſervation: And though I was little able to walk, I ſet out on foot for the place of aſſignation, my companion following at a ſmall diſtance.

When I ſaw him leading his horſe down the hill, I collected all my fortitude, and advanced to him with all the ſpeed I could exert; but when I made an effort to ſpeak,

my tongue denied its office; and ſo lively was the expreſſion of unutterable ſorrow in my countenance, that his heart (hard as it was) melted at ſight of my ſufferings, which he well knew proceeded from the ſincerity of my love. At length I recovered the uſe of ſpeech enough to tell him, that I was come to take my leave; and, when I would have proceeded, my voice failed me again: But, after a conſiderable pauſe, I found means, with great difficulty, to let him know how ſenſible I was of my own incapacity to retrieve his loſt affections; but that I was willing (if poſſible) to retain his eſteem, of which could I be aſſured, I would endeavour to compoſe myſelf; that I was determined to leave the kingdom, becauſe I could not bear the ſight of thoſe places where we had been ſo happy in our mutual love; and that, till my departure, I hoped he would viſit me ſometimes, that I might, by degrees, wean myſelf from his company; for I ſhould not be able to ſurvive the ſhock of being deprived of him all at once.

This addreſs may ſeem very humble to an unconcerned obſerver; but love will tame the proudeſt diſpoſition, as plainly appeared in my caſe; for I had naturally as much ſpirit or more, than the generality of people have. Mr. S—— was ſo much confounded at the manner of my behaviour, that he ſcarce knew what anſwer to make; for (as he afterwards owned) he expected to hear himſelf upbraided; but he was not proof againſt my tenderneſs. After ſome heſitation, he ſaid, he never meant to forſake me entirely, that his affection was ſtill unimpaired, and that he would follow me directly to London. I impoſed upon myſelf, and believed what he ſaid, becauſe I could not bear to think of parting with him for ever, and returned to town in a more tranquil ſtate of mind than that in which I had left my father, though my heart was far from being at eaſe; my fears being ingenious enough to foreſee, that I ſhould never be able to overcome his indifference.

I took lodgings in Mount-ſtreet, and my maid having diſpoſed of herſelf in marriage, hired another, who ſupplied her place very much to my ſatisfaction: She was a good girl, had a particular attachment to me, and for many years, during which ſhe lived in my ſervice, was

indefatigably aſſiduous in contributing to my eaſe, or rather in alleviating my affliction: For, though S— came up to town according to promiſe, and renewed a ſort of correſpondence with me for the ſpace of five months, his complaiſance would extend no farther; and he gave me to underſtand, that he had determined to go abroad with Mr. V—; whom he accordingly accompanied in his embaſſy to D——n.

I underſtood the real cauſe of this expedition, which, notwithſtanding his oaths and proteſtations of unabated love and regard, I conſtrued into a palpable mark of diſlike and diſrepect; nor could the repeated aſſurances I received from him in letters mitigate the anguiſh and mortification that preyed upon my heart. I therefore gave up all hopes of recovering the happineſs I had loſt: I told him on the eve of his departure, that he might exerciſe his gallantry a great while, before he would meet with my fellow, in point of ſincerity and love; for I would rather have been a ſervant in his houſe, with the privilege of ſeeing him, than the queen of England debarred of that pleaſure.

When he took his leave, and went down ſtairs, I ſhrunk at every ſtep he made, as if a new wound had been inflicted upon me; and when I heard the door ſhut behind him, my heart died within me. (I had the ſatisfaction to hear afterwards, he lamented the loſs of me prodigiouſly, and that he had never been ſo happy ſince.) I ſat down to write a letter, in which I forgave his indifference, becauſe I knew the affections are altogether involuntary, and wiſhed him all the happineſs he deſerved. I then walked up and down the room in the moſt reſtleſs anxiety, was put to bed by my maid, roſe at ſix, mounted my horſe, and rode forty miles, in order to fatigue myſelf, that I might next night enjoy ſome repoſe. This exerciſe I daily underwent for months together; and, when it did not anſwer my purpoſe, I uſed to walk round Hyde-park in the evening, when the place was quite ſolitary and unviſited by any other human creature.

In the courſe of this melancholy perambulation, I was one day accoſted by a very great man, who, after the firſt ſalutation, aſked whether or not my intercourſe with

S— was at an end? and if I had any allowance from my huſband? To the firſt of theſe queſtions I replied in the affirmative; and to the laſt anſwered, that my lord did not allow me a great deal—indeed I might have truly ſaid nothing at all; but I was too proud to own my indigence. He then expreſſed his wonder, how one like me, who had been uſed to ſplendour and affluence from my cradle, could make ſhift to live in my preſent narrow circumſtances; and, when I told him that I could make a very good ſhift, ſo I had peace, he ſeemed to lament my ſituation, and very kindly invited me to ſup with his wife at his houſe. I accepted the invitation, without any apprehenſion of the conſequence; and, when I went to the place, was introduced into an apartment magnificently lighted up (I ſuppoſe) for my reception.

After I had ſtaid alone for ſome time in this myſterious ſituation, without ſeeing a living ſoul, my inviter appeared, and ſaid, he hoped I would not take it amiſs that he and I were to ſup by ourſelves, as he had ſomething to ſay, which could not be ſo properly communicated before company or ſervants. I then, for the firſt time, perceived his drift, to my no ſmall ſurpriſe and indignation; and, with evident marks of diſpleaſure, told him, I was ſure he had nothing to propoſe that would be agreeable to my inclination, and that I would immediately leave the houſe: Upon which he gave me to underſtand, that I could not poſſibly retire, becauſe he had ſent away my chair, and all his ſervants were diſpoſed to obey his orders.

Incenſed at this declaration, which I conſidered as an inſult, I anſwered with an air of reſolution—it was very well; I depiſed his contrivance, and was afraid of no body. Seeing me thus alarmed, he aſſured me I had no reaſon to be afraid; that he had loved me long, and could find no other opportunity of declaring his paſſion. He ſaid, the q—— had told him that Lord —— had renewed his addreſſes to me; and as he underſtood, from my own mouth, my correſpondence with S—— was abſolutely broke off, he thought himſelf as well entitled as another to my regard. In concluſion, he told me, that I might command his purſe, and that he had power enough

to bring me into the world again with *eclat*. To theſe advances I replied, that he was very much miſtaken in his opinion of my character, if he imagined I was to be won by any temptations of fortune—and very frankly declared, that I would rather give myſelf to a footman, than ſell myſelf to a prince.

Supper being ſerved, we ſat down together; but I would neither eat nor drink any thing, except a little bread and water; for I was an odd whimſical girl, and it came into my head, that he might perhaps have mixed ſomething in the victuals or wine, which would alter my way of thinking. In ſhort, finding himſelf baffled in all his endeavours, he permitted me about twelve o'clock to depart in peace, and gave up his ſuit as a deſperate cauſe.

This uncomfortable life did I lead for a whole twelvemonth, without feeling the leaſt abatement of my melancholy. Finding myſelf worn to a ſkeleton, I reſumed my former reſolution of trying to profit by change of place, and actually went abroad, with no other attendant than my woman, and the utmoſt indifference for life. My intention was to have gone to the ſouth of France, where, I thought I could have ſubſiſted on the little I had left, which amounted to five hundred pounds, until the iſſue of my law-ſuit, by which I hoped to obtain ſome proviſion from my lord; and, without all doubt, my expectation would have been anſwered, had I put this my plan in execution: But, being at Paris, from whence I purpoſed to ſet forward in a few days, I ſent to M. K—, who had been formerly intimate with my father, and ſhown me many civilities during my firſt reſidence in France.

This gentleman favoured me with a viſit, and, when I made him acquainted with my ſcheme, diſſuaded me from it, as an uncomfortable determination. He adviſed me to ſtay at Paris, where, with good economy, I could live as cheap as in any other place, and enjoy the converſation and countenance of my friends, among which number he declared himſelf one of the moſt faithful. He aſſured me, that I ſhould be always welcome to his table, and want for nothing. He promiſed to recommend me as a lodger to a friend of his, with whom I would live in a frugal and decent manner; and obſerved, that, as the

woman was well known and eſteemed by all the Engliſh company in Paris, it would be the moſt reputable ſtep I could take (conſidering my youth and ſituation), to lodge with a creditable perſon, who could anſwer for my conduct. Thus perſuaded, I very ſimply followed his advice—I ſay ſimply, becauſe, notwithſtanding his repreſentations, I ſoon found my money melt away, without any proſpect of a freſh ſupply. In lieu of this, however, I paſſed my time very agreeably in ſeveral Engliſh and ſome French families, where, in a little time, I became quite intimate, ſaw a great deal of company, and was treated with the utmoſt politeneſs and regard; yet, in the midſt of theſe pleaſures, many a melancholy ſigh would riſe at the remembrance of my beloved S—, whom, for ſeveral years, I could not recollect without emotion; but time, company, amuſements, and change of place, in a great meaſure diſſipated theſe ideas, and enabled me to bear my fate with patience and reſignation.

On my laſt arrival at Paris, I was ſurrounded by a crowd of profeſſed admirers, who ſighed and flattered in the uſual forms; but, beſides that my heart was not in a condition to contract new engagements, I was prepoſſeſſed againſt them all, by ſuppoſing that they preſumed upon the knowledge of my indiſcretion with S—; and therefore rejected their addreſſes with deteſtation and diſdain;—for, as I have already obſerved, I was not to be won but by the appearance of eſteem, and the moſt reſpectful carriage; and though, by a falſe ſtep, I had, in my own opinion, forfeited my title to the one, I was reſolved to diſcourage the advances of any man who ſeemed deficient in the other.

In this manner my lovers were one by one repulſed, almoſt as ſoon as they preſented themſelves, and I preſerved the independence of my heart, until I became aquainted with a certain peer, whom I often ſaw at the houſe of Mrs. P—, an Engliſh lady then reſident at Paris. This young nobleman profeſſed himſelf deeply enamoured of me, in a ſtyle ſo different from that of my other admirers, that I heard his proteſtations without diſguſt; and, though my inclinations were ſtill free, could not find in my heart to diſcountenance his addreſſes, which were preferred

with the moſt engaging modeſty, diſintereſtedneſs, and reſpect.

By theſe never-failing arts, he gradually conquered my indifference, and gained the preference in my eſteem from Lord C—y and the Prince of C—, who were at that time his rivals. But what contributed more than any conſideration to his ſucceſs was, his declaring openly, that he would marry me without heſitation, as ſoon I could obtain a divorce from my preſent huſband, which, in all probability, might have been eaſily procured; for, before I left England, Lord —— had offered me five thouſand pounds, if I would conſent to ſuch a mutual releaſe, that he might be at liberty to eſpouſe one Miſs W— of Kent, to whom he then made love upon honourable terms; but I was fool enough to refuſe his propoſal, by the advice of S—: And whether or not his lordſhip, finding it impracticable to wed his new miſtreſs, began to make love upon another footing, I know not; but, certain it is, the mother forbade him the houſe, a circumſtance which he took ſo heinouſly ill, that he appealed to the world in a public advertiſement, beginning with, "Whereas, for ſome time, I have paſſionately loved Miſs W—, and, upon my not complying with the mother's propoſals, they have turned me out of doors—this is to juſtify," &c.

This declaration, ſigned with his name, was actually printed in a number of detached advertiſements, which he ordered to be diſtributed to the public; and afterwards, being convinced by ſome of his friends that he had done a very ſilly thing, he recalled them at half a guinea a piece: A copy of one of them was ſent to me at Paris, and I believe my father has now one of the originals in his poſſeſſion. After this wiſe vindication of his conduct, he made an attempt to carry off the lady from church by force of arms; but ſhe was reſcued by the neighbours, headed by her brother, who, being an attorney, had like to have made his lordſhip ſmart ſeverely for this exploit.

Meanwhile my new admirer had made ſome progreſs in my heart; and, my finances being exhauſted, I was reduced to the alternative of returning to Lord —— again, or accepting Earl B—'s love. When my affairs

were brought to that iſſue, I made no heſitation in my choice, putting myſelf under the protection of a man of honour whom I eſteemed, rather than ſuffer every ſort of mortification from a perſon who was the object of my abhorrence and contempt. From a miſtaken pride, I choſe to live in Lord B—'s houſe, rather than be maintained at his expence in any other place. We ſpent ſeveral months agreeably in balls and other diverſions, viſited Lord B—k, who lived at the diſtance of a few leagues from Paris, and ſtaid ſome days at his houſe, where the entertainment was, in all reſpects, delightful, elegant, and refined. Their habitation was the rendezvous of the beſt company in France; and Lady B—k maintained the ſame ſuperiority in her own ſex, for which her lord is ſo juſtly diſtinguiſhed among the men.

About Chriſtmas we ſet out for England, accompanied by a little North Briton, who lived with Lord B—— as his companion, and did not at all approve of our correſpondence; whether out of real friendſhip for his patron, or apprehenſion that in time I might ſuperſede his own influence with my lord, I ſhall not pretend to determine. Be that as it will, the froſt was ſo ſevere, that we were detained ten days at Calais before we could get out of the harbour; and, during that time, I reflected ſeriouſly on what my new lover had propoſed. As he was very young, and unacquainted with the world, I thought my ſtory might have eſcaped him; and therefore determined to give him a faithful detail of the whole, that he might not have any thing to reproach me with in the ſequel: Beſides, I did not think it honeſt to engage him to do more for me than he might afterwards, perhaps, think I was worth. Accordingly, I communicated to him every particular of my life; and the narration, far from altering his ſentiments, rather confirmed his good opinion, by exhibiting an undoubted proof of my frankneſs and ſincerity. In ſhort, he behaved with ſuch generoſity, as made an abſolute conqueſt of my heart: But my love was of a different kind from that which had formerly reigned within my breaſt, being founded upon the warmeſt gratitude and eſteem, excluſive of any other conſideration, though his perſon was very agreeable, and his addreſs engaging.

When we arrived in England, I went directly to his

country ſeat, about twelve miles from London, where he ſoon joined me, and we lived ſome time in perfect retirement, his relations being greatly alarmed with the apprehenſion that Lord —— would bring an action againſt him, though he himſelf deſired nothing more, and lived ſo eaſy under that expectation, that they ſoon laid aſide their fears on his account.

We were viſited by Mr. H—— B——, a relation of my lord, and one Mr. R—— of the guards, who, with the little Scotchman and my lover, made an agreeable ſet, among whom I enjoyed hunting, and all manner of country diverſions. As to Mr. H—— B——, if ever there was perfection in one man, it centered in him; or, at leaſt, he, of all the men I ever knew, approached neareſt to that idea which I had conceived of a perfect character. He was both good and great, poſſeſſed an uncommon genius, and the beſt of hearts. Mr. R—— was a very ſociable man, had a good perſon, and cultivated underſtanding; and my lord was exceſſively good humoured:—So that, with ſuch companions, no place could be dull or inſipid. For my own part, I conducted the family; and, as I endeavoured to pleaſe and make every body happy, I had the good fortune to ſucceed. Mr. B—— told me, that, before he ſaw me, he heard I was a fool: but finding (as he was pleaſed to ſay) that I had been egregiouſly miſrepreſented, he courted my friendſhip, and a correſpondence commenced between us: Indeed, it was impoſſible for any perſon to know him, without entertaining the utmoſt eſteem and veneration for his virtue.

After I had lived ſome time in this agreeable retreat, my huſband began to make a buſtle. He ſent a meſſage, demanding me from Lord B——; then came in perſon, with his night-cap in his pocket, intending to have ſtaid all night, had he been aſked, and attended by a relation, whom he aſſured that I was very fond of him, and detained by force from his arms.

Finding himſelf diſappointed in his expectations, he commenced a law-ſuit againſt Lord B——, though not for a divorce, as we deſired, but with a view to reclaim me as his lawful wife. His lawyers, however, attempted to prove criminal converſation, in hopes of extorting money from my lover: But their endeavours were altogether

fruitleſs; for no ſervant of Lord B——'s or mine could with juſtice ſay we were ever ſeen to treſpaſs againſt modeſty and decorum; ſo that the plaintiff was nonſuited.

While this cauſe was depending, all my lover's friends expreſſed fear and concern for the iſſue, while he himſelf behaved with the utmoſt reſolution, and gave me ſuch convincing proofs of a ſtrong and ſteady affection, as augmented my gratitude, and rivetted the ties of my love, which was unblemiſhed, faithful, and ſincere.

Soon after this event, I was ſeized with a violent fit of illneſs, in which I was viſited by my father, and attended by two phyſicians, one of whom deſpaired of my life, and took his leave accordingly; but Dr. S——, who was the other, perſiſted in his attendance, and, in all human appearance, ſaved my life, a circumſtance by which he acquired a great ſhare of reputation: Yet, notwithſtanding all his aſſiſtance, I was confined to my bed for ten weeks; during which Lord B——'s grief was immoderate, his care and generoſity unlimited. While I lay in this extremity, Mr. S——, penetrated by my melancholy condition, which revived his tenderneſs, begged leave to be admitted to my preſence; and Lord B—— would have complied with his requeſt, had I not been judged too weak to bear the ſhock of ſuch an interview. My conſtitution, however, agreeably diſappointed their fears; and the fever had no ſooner left me, than I was removed to a hunting ſeat belonging to my lover, from whence, after I had recovered my ſtrength, we went to B—— Caſtle, where we kept open houſe: And, while we remained at this place, Lord B—— received a letter from Lord ——, dated in November, challenging him to ſingle combat in May, upon the frontiers of France and Flanders. This defiance was ſent in conſequence of what had paſſed betwixt them long before my indiſpoſition, at a meeting in a certain tavern, where they quarrelled, and, in the fray, my lover threw his antagoniſt under the table. I counſelled him to take no notice of this rhodomontade, which I knew was void of all intention of performance; and he was wiſe enough to follow my advice, reſolved, however, ſhould the meſſage be repeated, to take the challenger at his word.

Having reſided ſome time in this place, we returned to

the other country houſe which he had left, where Lord B—— addicted himſelf ſo much to hunting, and other male diverſions, that I began to think he neglected me, and appriſed him of my ſuſpicion, aſſuring him, at the ſame time, that I would leave him as ſoon as my opinion ſhould be confirmed.

This declaration had no effect upon his behaviour, which became ſo remarkably cold, that even Mr R——, who lived with us, imagined that his affection was palpably diminiſhed. When I went to town, I was uſually attended by his couſin, or this gentleman, or both, but ſeldom favoured with his company; nay, when I repaired to Bath, for the re-eſtabliſhment of my health, he permitted me to go alone—ſo that I was quite perſuaded of his indifference; and yet I was miſtaken in my opinion: But I had been ſpoiled by the behaviour of my firſt huſband, and Mr. S——, who never quitted me for the ſake of any amuſement, and often reſiſted the calls of the moſt urgent buſineſs, rather than part from me, though but for a few hours. I thought every man who loved me truly would act in the ſame manner; and, whether I am right or wrong in my conjectures, I leave wiſer caſuiſts to judge. Certain it is, ſuch ſacrifice and devotion is the moſt pleaſing proof of an admirer's paſſion; and, *Voyez moi plus ſouvent, et ne me donnez rien*, is one of my favourite maxims. A man may give money, becauſe he is profuſe; he may be violently fond, becauſe he is of a ſanguine conſtitution: But, if he give me his time, he gives me an unqueſtionable proof of my being in full poſſeſſion of his heart.

My appearance at Bath, without the company of Lord B——, occaſioned a general ſurpriſe, and encouraged the men to peſter me with addreſſes, every new admirer endeavouring to advance his ſuit by demonſtrating the unkind and diſreſpectful behaviour of his lordſhip. Indeed, this was the moſt effectual ſtring they could touch: My pride and reſentment were alarmed, and I was weak enough to liſten to one man, who had like to have inſinuated himſelf into my inclinations. He was tall and large boned, with white hair, inclining to what is called ſandy, and had the reputation of being handſome, though I think he ſcarce deſerved that epithet. He poſſeſſed a

large fortune, loved miſchief, and ſtuck at nothing for the accompliſhment of his deſigns, one of his chief pleaſures being that of ſetting any two lovers at variance. He employed his addreſs upon me with great aſſiduity, and knew ſo well how to manage my reſentment, that I was pleaſed with his manner, heard his vows without diſguſt, and, in a word, promiſed to deliberate with myſelf upon his propoſals, and give him an account of my determination in writing.

Thus reſolved, I went to Lord B——, in Wiltſhire, whither I was followed by this pretender to my heart, who viſited us on the footing of an acquaintance; but, when I reflected on what I had done, I condemned my own conduct as indiſcreet, though nothing deciſive had paſſed between us, and began to hate him in proportion to the ſelf-conviction I felt, perceiving that I had involved myſelf in a difficulty from which I ſhould not be eaſily diſengaged. For the preſent, however, I found means to poſtpone my declaration: He admitted my excuſe, and I returned to London with Lord B——, who was again ſummoned to the field by his former challenger.

H—d—n, governor, counſellor, and ſteward to this little hero, came to Lord B—— with a verbal meſſage, importing, that his lordſhip had changed his mind about going to Flanders, but expected to meet him, on ſuch a day and hour, in the burying ground near Red Lion Square. Lord B—— accepted the challenge, and gave me an account of what had paſſed; but he had been anticipated by the meſſenger, who had already tried to alarm my fears, from the conſideration of the conſequence, that I might take ſome meaſures to prevent their meeting. I perceived his drift, and told him plainly, that Lord ——— had no intention to riſk his perſon, though he endeavoured with all his might to perſuade me, that his principal was deſperate and determined. I knew my little huſband too well to think he would bring matters to any dangerous iſſue, and was apprehenſive of nothing but foul play, from the villany of H——n, with which I was equally well acquainted. Indeed, I ſignified my doubts on that ſcore to Mr. B—, who would have attended his kinſman to the field, had he not thought he might be liable to cenſure, if any thing ſhould happen to Lord B——, becauſe he himſelf was heir at

law: For that reaſon he judiciouſly declined being perſonally concerned; and we pitched upon the Earl of A——, his lordſhip's uncle, who willingly undertook the office.

At the appointed time they went to the houſe of rendezvous, where they had not waited long when the challenger appeared, in a new pink ſattin waiſtcoat, which he had put on for the occaſion, with his ſword under his arm, and his ſteward by him, leaving, in an hackney coach at ſome diſtance, a ſurgeon whom he had provided for the care of his perſon. Thus equipped he advanced to his antagoniſt, and deſired him to chooſe his ground; upon which Lord B—— told him, that if he muſt fall, it was not material which grave he ſhould tumble over.

Our little hero, finding him ſo jocoſe and determined, turned to Lord A——, and deſired to ſpeak with him, that he might diſburden his conſcience before they ſhould begin the work of death. They accordingly went aſide; and he gave him to underſtand, that his motive for fighting, was Lord B——'s detaining his wife from him by compulſion. The Earl of A—— aſſured him, he was egregiouſly miſtaken in his conjecture; that his nephew uſed no force or undue influence to keep me in his houſe; but it could not be expected that he would turn me out of doors.

This explanation was altogether ſatisfactory to Lord ——, who ſaid he was far from being ſo unreaſonable, as to expect Lord B—— would commit ſuch a breach of hoſpitality; and all he deſired was, that his wife ſhould be left to her own inclinations. Upon theſe articles, peace was concluded, and they parted without bloodſhed. At leaſt theſe are the particulars of the ſtory, as they were related by Lord A——, with whom I laughed heartily at the adventure, for I never doubted that the challenger would find ſome expedient to prevent the duel, though I wondered how he muſtered up reſolution enough to carry it ſo far.

That he might not, however, give us any more trouble, we reſolved to go and enjoy ourſelves in France, whither I went by myſelf, in hopes of being ſoon joined by my lover, who was obliged to ſtay ſome time longer in England, to ſettle his affairs. He was ſo much affected at our parting (though but for a few weeks), that he was

almoſt diſtracted: And this affliction renewed my tenderneſs for him, becauſe it was an undoubted proof of his love. I wrote to him every poſt from France; and, as I had no ſecrets, deſired him to take care of all the letters that ſhould come to his houſe, directed to me, after my departure from England.

This was an unfortunate office for him, in the execution of which he chanced to open a letter from Sir T—— A——, with whom (as I have already obſerved) I had ſome correſpondence at Bath. I had, according to my promiſe, given this gentleman a deciſive anſwer, importing that I was determined to remain in my preſent ſituation; but as Lord B—— was ignorant of my ſentiments in that particular, and perceived from the letter that ſomething extraordinary had paſſed between us, and that I was earneſtly ſolicited to leave him, he was ſeized with the utmoſt conſternation and concern; and having previouſly obtained the king's leave to go abroad, ſet out that very night for France, leaving his affairs in the greateſt confuſion.

Sir T—— A—— hearing I was gone, without underſtanding the cauſe of my departure, took the ſame route, and both arrived at Dover next day. They heard of each other's motions: Each bribed the maſter of a packet-boat to tranſport him with expedition; but that depending upon the wind, both reached Calais at the ſame time, though in different veſſels. Sir T—— ſent his valet de chambre, poſt, with a letter, entreating me to accompany him into Italy, where he would make me miſtreſs of his whole fortune, and to ſet out directly for that country, that he might not loſe me by the arrival of Lord B——, promiſing to join me on the road, if I would conſent to make him happy. I ſent his meſſenger back with an anſwer, wherein I expreſſed ſurpriſe at his propoſals, after having ſignified my reſolution to him before I left England. He was ſcarce diſmiſſed, when I received another letter from Lord B——, beſeeching me to meet him at Clermont, upon the road from Calais; and conjuring me to avoid the ſight of his rival, ſhould he get the ſtart of him in travelling. This, however, was not likely to be the caſe, as Lord B—— rode poſt, and the other was, by his corpulence, obliged to travel in a chaiſe; yet, that I might

not increaſe his anxiety, I left Paris immediately on the receipt of his meſſage, and met him at the appointed place, where he received me with all the agitation of joy and fear, and aſked if I had ever encouraged Sir T—— A—— in his addreſſes. I very candidly told him the whole tranſaction, at which he was incenſed; but his indignation was ſoon appeaſed, when I profeſſed my penitence, and aſſured him that I had totally rejected his rival. Not that I approve of my behaviour to Sir T——, who (I own) was ill uſed in this affair; but ſurely it was more excuſable to halt here, than proceed farther in my indiſcretion.

My lover being ſatisfied with my declaration, we went together to Paris, being attended by the Scotchman whom I have already mentioned, though I believe he was not over and above well pleaſed to ſee matters thus amicably compromiſed. The furious knight followed us to the capital; inſiſted on ſeeing me in perſon; told this North Briton, that I was actually engaged to him; wrote every hour, and railed at my perfidious conduct. I took no notice of theſe delirious tranſports, which were alſo diſregarded by Lord B——, till one night he was exaſperated by the inſinuations of Mr. C———, who, I believe, inflamed his jealouſy, by hinting a ſuſpicion that I was really in love with his rival. What paſſed betwixt them I know not, but he ſent for me from the opera, by a phyſician of Paris, who was a ſort of go-between among us all, and who told me, that, if I did not come home on the inſtant, a duel would be fought on my account.

I was very much ſhocked at this information; but by being uſed to alarms from the behaviour of Lord ———, I had acquired a pretty good ſhare of reſolution, and with great compoſure entered the room where Lord B—— was, with his companion, whom I immediately ordered to withdraw. I then gave his lordſhip to underſtand, that I was informed of what had paſſed, and thought myſelf ſo much injured by the perſon who had juſt quitted the apartment, that I would no longer live under the ſame roof with him.

Lord B—— raved like a bedlamite, taxing me with want of candour and affection; but I eaſily juſtified my own integrity, and gave him ſuch aſſurances of my love, that his jealouſy ſubſided, and his ſpirits were recompoſed.

Nevertheleſs, I inſiſted upon his diſmiſſing Mr. C——, on pain of my leaving the houſe, as I could not help thinking he had uſed his endeavours to prejudice me in the opinion of my lord. If his conduct was the reſult of friendſhip for his patron, he certainly acted the part of an honeſt and truſty adherent. But I could not eaſily forgive him, becauſe, a few weeks before, he had, by my intereſt, obtained a conſiderable addition to his allowance; and even after the ſteps he had taken to diſoblige me, I was not ſo much his enemy but that I prevailed upon Lord B—— to double his ſalary, that his leaving the family might be no detriment to his fortune.

His lordſhip having complied with my demand, this gentleman, after having ſtaid three days in the houſe, to prepare for his departure, during which I would not ſuffer him to be admitted into my preſence, made his retreat with a fine young girl who was my companion; and I have never ſeen him ſince that time.

Sir T—— ſtill continued furious, and would not take a denial, except from my own mouth; upon which, with the approbation of Lord B——, I indulged him with an interview. He entered the apartment with a ſtern countenance, and told me I had uſed him ill. I pleaded guilty to the charge, and begged his pardon accordingly. I attempted to reaſon the caſe with him, but he would hear no arguments except his own, and even tried to intimidate me with threats; which provoked me to ſuch a degree, that I defied his vengeance. I told him, that I feared nothing but the report of my own conſcience; that though I had acted a ſimple part, he durſt not ſay there was any thing criminal in my conduct; and that, from his preſent frantic and unjuſt behaviour, I thought myſelf happy in having eſcaped him. He ſwore I was the moſt inflexible of all creatures, aſked if nothing would move me? and when I anſwered, "Nothing," took his leave, and never afterwards perſecuted me with his addreſſes; though I have heard he was vain and falſe enough to boaſt of favours; which, upon my honour, he never received, as he himſelf, at one time, owned to Dr. Cantwell at Paris.

While he underwent all this frenzy and diſtraction upon my account, he was loved with the ſame violence of paſſion by a certain Scotch lady of quality, who, when

he followed me to France, purſued him thither with the ſame eagerneſs and expedition. Far from being jealous of me as a rival, ſhe uſed to come to my houſe, implore my good offices with the object of her love, and, laying herſelf on the floor at full length before the fire, weep and cry like a perſon bereft of her ſenſes. She bitterly complained, that he had never obliged her but once; and begged, with the moſt earneſt ſupplications, that I would give her an opportunity of ſeeing him at my houſe. But I thought proper to avoid her company, as ſoon as I perceived her intention.

We continued at Paris for ſome time, during which I contracted an acquaintance with the ſiſter of Madam la T———. She was the ſuppoſed miſtreſs of the Prince of C———, endowed with a great ſhare of underſtanding, and loved pleaſure to exceſs, though ſhe maintained her reputation on a reſpectable footing, by living with her huſband and mother. This lady, perceiving that I had inſpired her lover with a paſſion, which gave me uneaſineſs on her account, actually practiſed all her eloquence and art, in perſuading me to liſten to his love; for it was a maxim with her to pleaſe him at any rate. I was ſhocked at her indelicate complaiſance, and rejected the propoſal, as repugnant to my preſent engagement, which I held as ſacred as any nuptial tie, and much more binding than a forced or unnatural marriage.

Upon our return to England, we lived in great harmony and peace; and nothing was wanting to my happineſs, but the one thing to me the moſt needful; I mean the enchanting tenderneſs and delightful enthuſiaſm of love. Lord B———'s heart (I believe) felt the ſoft impreſſions; and, for my own part, I loved him with the moſt faithful affection. It is not enough to ſay I wiſhed him well; I had the moſt delicate, the moſt genuine eſteem for his virtue; I had an intimate regard and anxiety for his intereſt; and felt for him as if he had been my own ſon: But ſtill there was a vacancy in my heart; there was not that fervour, that tranſport, that ecſtaſy of paſſion which I had formerly known; my boſom was not filled with the little deity; I could not help recalling to my remembrance the fond, the raviſhing moments I had paſſed with S——. Had I underſtood the conditions of

life, thoſe pleaſures were happily exchanged for my preſent ſituation, becauſe, if I was now deprived of thoſe rapturous enjoyments, I was alſo exempted from the cares and anxiety that attended them; but I was generally extravagant in my notions of happineſs, and therefore conſtrued my preſent tranquillity into an inſipid languor and ſtagnation of life.

While I remained in this inactivity of ſentiment, Lord —— having received a very conſiderable addition to his fortune, ſent a meſſage to me, promiſing, that if I would leave Lord B——, he would make me a preſent of a houſe and furniture, where I ſhould live at my eaſe, without being expoſed to his viſits, except when I ſhould be diſpoſed to receive them. This propoſal he made, in conſequence of what I had always declared, namely, that if he had not reduced me to the neceſſity of putting myſelf under the protection of ſome perſon or other, by depriving me of any other means of ſubſiſtence, I ſhould never have given the world the leaſt cauſe to ſcandalize my reputation; and that I would withdraw myſelf from my preſent dependence, as ſoon as he ſhould enable me to live by myſelf. I was therefore reſolved to be as good as my word, and accepted his offer, on condition that I ſhould be wholly at my own diſpoſal, and that he ſhould never enter my door but as a viſitant or common friend.

Theſe articles being ratified by his word and honour (the value of which I did not then know), an houſe was furniſhed according to my directions; and I ſignified my intention to Lord B——, who conſented to my removal, with this proviſo, that I ſhould continue to ſee him. I wrote alſo to his relation Mr. B——, who, in his anſwer, obſerved, that it was too late to adviſe, when I was actually determined. All my friends and acquaintance approved of the ſcheme, though it was one of the moſt unjuſtifiable ſteps I had ever taken, being a real act of ingratitude to my benefactor; which I ſoon did, and always ſhall regret and condemn. So little is the world qualified to judge of private affairs!

When the time of our parting drew near, Lord B—— became gloomy and diſcontented, and even entreated me to poſtpone my reſolution; but I told him, that now every thing was prepared for my reception, I could not retract

without incurring the imputation of folly and extravagance. On the very day of my departure, Mr. B—— endeavoured, with all the arguments he could ſuggeſt, to diſſuade me from my purpoſe; and I made uſe of the ſame anſwer which had ſatisfied his friend. Finding me determined upon removing, he burſt out into a flood of tears, exclaiming, "By God, if Lord B—— can bear it, I can't." I was thunderſtruck at this expreſſion; for though I had been told that Mr. B—— was in love with me, I gave no credit to the report, becauſe he had never declared his paſſion, and this was the firſt hint of it that ever eſcaped him in my hearing. I was therefore ſo much amazed at the circumſtance of this abrupt explanation, that I could make no anſwer; but having taken my leave, went away ruminating on the unexpected declaration.

Lord B—— (as I was informed) ſpoke not a word that whole night, and took my leaving him ſo much to heart, that two years elapſed before he got the better of his grief. This intelligence I afterwards received from his own mouth, and aſked his forgiveneſs for my unkind retreat, though I ſhall never be able to obtain my own. As for Mr. B——, he was overwhelmed with ſorrow, and made ſuch efforts to ſuppreſs his concern, as had well nigh coſt him his life. Dr. S—— was called to him in the middle of the night, and found him almoſt ſuffocated. He ſoon gueſſed the cauſe, when he underſtood that I had left the houſe: So that I myſelf was the only perſon concerned, who was utterly ignorant of his affection; for I ſolemnly declare he never gave me the leaſt reaſon to ſuſpect it while I lived with his relation, becauſe he had too much honour to entertain a thought of ſupplanting his friend, and too good an opinion of me to believe he ſhould have ſucceeded in the attempt. Though my love for Lord B— was not ſo tender and intereſting as the paſſion I had felt for S——, my fidelity was inviolable, and I never harboured the moſt diſtant thought of any other perſon, till after I had reſolved to leave him, when (I own) I afforded ſome ſmall encouragement to the addreſſes of a new admirer, by telling him, that I ſhould, in a little time, be my own miſtreſs, though I was not now at my own diſpoſal.

I enjoyed my new houſe as a little paradiſe: It was ac-

commodated with all ſorts of conveniencies; every thing was new, and therefore pleaſing, and the whole abſolutely at my command. I had the company of a relation, a very good woman, with whom I lived in the moſt amicable manner; was viſited by the beſt people in town (I mean thoſe of the male ſex, the ladies having long ago forſaken me); I frequented all reputable places of public entertainment, and had a concert at home once a week; ſo that my days rolled on in happineſs and quiet, till all my ſweets were embittered by the vexatious behaviour of my huſband, who began to importune me again to live with him; and by the increaſing anxiety of Lord B——, who (though I ſtill admitted his viſits) plainly perceived that I wanted to relinquiſh his correſpondence. This diſcovery raiſed ſuch tempeſts of jealouſy and deſpair within his breaſt, that he kept me in continual alarms: He ſent meſſages to me every hour, ſigned his letters with his own blood, raved like a man in an ecſtaſy of madneſs, railed at my ingratitude, and praiſed my conduct by turns. He offered to ſacrifice every thing for my love, to leave the kingdom forthwith, and live with me for ever in any part of the world where I ſhould chooſe to reſide.

Theſe were generous and tempting propoſals; but I was beſet with counſellors who were not totally diſintereſted, and who diſſuaded me from embracing the profers of my lover, on pretence that Lord —— would be highly injured by my compliance. I liſtened to their advice, and hardened my heart againſt Lord B——'s ſorrow and ſolicitations. My behaviour on this occaſion is altogether unaccountable; this was the only time that ever I was a ſlave to admonition. The condition of Lord B—— would have melted any heart but mine, and yet mine was one of the moſt ſenſible: He employed his couſin as an advocate with me, till that gentleman actually refuſed the office, telling him candidly, that his own inclinations were too much engaged to permit him to perform the taſk with fidelity and truth. He accordingly reſolved to avoid my preſence, until my lord and I ſhould come to ſome final determination, which was greatly retarded by the perſeverance of his lordſhip, who would not reſign his hopes, even when I pretended that another man had engaged my heart, but ſaid, that in time my affection might return.

ur correſpondence, however, gradually wore off; up-
hich Mr. B—— renewed his viſits, and many agree-
and happy hours we paſſed together. Not that he,
y other perſon whom I now ſaw, ſucceeded to the
lege of a fortunate lover; I knew he loved me to
ieſs; but I would not gratify his paſſion any other
than by the moſt profound eſteem and veneration for
irtues, which were altogether amiable and ſublime;
I would here draw his character minutely, but it
d take up too much time to ſet forth his merit; the
man living of my acquaintance who reſembles him,
rd F——, of whom I ſhall ſpeak in the ſequel.
out this time I underwent a very intereſting change
e ſituation of my heart. I had ſent a meſſage to my
over S——, deſiring he would allow my picture,
h was in his poſſeſſion, to be copied; and he now
mitted it to me by my lawyer, whom he directed to
if I intended to be at the next maſquerade. This
ſity had a ſtrange effect upon my ſpirits; my heart
red at the queſtion, and my imagination glowed with
uſand fond preſages. I anſwered in the affirmative;
ve met by accident at the ball. I could not behold
without emotion; when he accoſted me, his well
n voice made my heart vibrate, like a muſical chord,
its uniſon is ſtruck. All the ideas of our paſt love,
h the lapſe of time and abſence had enfeebled and
to ſleep, now awoke, and were reinſpired by his
rance; ſo that his artful excuſes were eaſily admit-
I forgave him all that I had ſuffered on his account,
iſe he was the natural lord of my affection; and our
er correſpondence was renewed.
hought myſelf in a new world of bliſs in conſequence
is reconciliation, the rapture of which continued un-
ired for the ſpace of four months, during which time
as fonder of me, if poſſible, than before, repeated his
iſe of marriage, if we ſhould ever have it in our
r; aſſured me he had never been happy ſince he
ie; that he believed no woman had ever loved like
And indeed, to have a notion of my paſſion for that
you muſt firſt have loved as I did: But through a
ge caprice, I broke off the correſpondence, out of
henſion that he would forſake me again. From his

paſt conduct, I dreaded what might happen; and the remembrance of what I had undergone by his inconſtancy, filled my imagination with ſuch horror, that I could not endure the ſhocking proſpect, and prematurely plunged myſelf into the danger, rather than endure the terrors of expectation. I remembered that his former attachment began in the ſeaſon of my proſperity, when my fortune was in the zenith, and my youth in its prime; and that he had forſaken me in the day of trouble, when my life became embarraſſed, and my circumſtances were on the decline: I foreſaw nothing but continual perſecution from my huſband, and feared, that, once the keener tranſports of our reconciliation ſhould be over, his affection would ſink under the ſeverity of its trial. In conſequence of this deſertion, I received a letter from him, acknowledging that he was rightly ſerved, but that my retreat gave him inexpreſſible concern.

Meanwhile Lord —— continued to act in the character of a fiend, tormenting me with his nauſeous importunities: He prevailed upon the Duke of L—— to employ his influence in perſuading me to live with him; aſſuring his grace, that I had actually promiſed to give him that proof of my obedience, and that I would come home the ſooner for being preſſed to compliance by a perſon of his rank and character. Induced by theſe repreſentations, the duke honoured me with a viſit; and, in the courſe of his exhortations, I underſtood how he had been thus miſinformed: Upon which I ſent for Lord ——, and, in his preſence, convicted him of the falſehood, by communicating to his grace the articles of our laſt agreement, which he did not think proper to deny; and the duke being undeceived, declared, that he would not have given me the trouble of vindicating myſelf, had he not been miſled by the inſincerity of my lord.

Baffled in this attempt, he engaged Mr. H—V—, and afterwards my own father, in the ſame taſk; and though I ſtill adhered to my firſt reſolution, perſiſted with ſuch obſtinacy in his endeavours to make me unhappy, that I determined to leave the kingdom. Accordingly, after I had ſpent the evening with him at Ranelagh, I went away about two o'clock in the morning, leaving my companion, with directions to reſtore to my lord his houſe, furniture,

plate, and every thing he had given me ſince our laſt accommodation; ſo far was I, upon this occaſion, or at any other time of my life, from embezzling any part of his fortune. My friend followed my inſtructions moſt punctually; and his lordſhip knows and will acknowledge the truth of this aſſertion.

Thus have I explained the true cauſe of my firſt expedition to Flanders, whither the world was good-natured enough to ſay, I followed Mr. B— and the whole army, which happened to be ſent abroad that ſummer. Before my departure, I likewiſe tranſmitted to Lord B—— the dreſſing-plate, china, and a very conſiderable ſettlement, of which he had been generous enough to make me a preſent. This was an inſtance of my integrity, which I thought due to a man who had laid me under great obligations; and though I lived to be refuſed a ſmall ſum, both by him and S—, I do not repent of my diſintereſted behaviour; all the revenge I harbour againſt the laſt of theſe lovers, is the deſire of having it in my power to do him good.

I now found myſelf adrift in the world again, and very richly deſerved the hardſhips of my condition, for my indiſcretion in leaving Lord B——, and in truſting to the word of Lord ——, without ſome further ſecurity; but I have dearly paid for my imprudence. The more I ſaw into the character of this man, whom deſtiny hath appointed my ſcourge, the more was I determined to avoid his fellowſhip and communication; for he and I are, in point of diſpoſition, as oppoſite as any two principles in nature. In the firſt place, he is one of the moſt unſocial beings that ever exiſted; when I was pleaſed and happy, he was always out of temper; but if he could find means to overcaſt and cloud my mirth, though never ſo innocent, he then diſcovered ſigns of uncommon ſatisfaction and content, becauſe, by this diſagreeable temper, he baniſhed all company from his houſe. He is extremely weak of underſtanding, though he poſſeſſes a good [illegible] of low cunning, which has ſo egregiouſly impoſ[illegible] ſome people, that they have actually believed him natured eaſy creature, and blamed me becauſe I manage him to better purpoſe; but, upon furth[illegible] quaintance, they have always found him obſtin[illegible]

mule, and capricious as a monkey: Not that he is utterly void of all commendable qualities: He is punctual in paying his debts, liberal when in good humour, and would be well-bred, were he not ſubject to fits of abſence, during which he is altogether unconverſable; but he is proud, naturally ſuſpicious, jealous, equally with and without cauſe, never made a friend, and is an utter ſtranger to the joys of intimacy; in ſhort, he hangs like a damp upon ſociety, and may be properly called *Kill-joy*, an epithet which he has juſtly acquired. He honours me with conſtant profeſſions of love; but his conduct is ſo oppoſite to my ſentiments of that paſſion, as to have been the prime ſource of all my misfortunes and affliction; and I have often wiſhed myſelf the object of his hate, in hopes of profiting by a change in his behaviour.

Indeed, he has not been able to make me more unhappy than, I believe he is in his own mind; for he is literally a ſelf-tormentor, who never enjoyed one gleam of ſatisfaction, except at the expence of another's quiet; and yet with this (I had almoſt called it diabolical) quality, he expects that I ſhould cheriſh him with all the tenderneſs of affection. After he has been at pains to incur my averſion, he puniſhes my diſguſt, by contriving ſchemes to mortify and perplex me, which have often ſucceeded ſo effectually, as to endanger my life and conſtitution; for I have been fretted and frighted into ſundry fits of illneſs, and then I own I have experienced his care and concern.

Over and above the oddities I have mentioned, he is ſo unſteady in his economy, that he is always new-modelling his affairs, and exhauſting his fortune, by laying out ten pounds, in order to ſave a ſhilling. He inquires into the character of a ſervant, after he has lived two years in his family, and is ſo ridiculouſly ſtocked with vanity and ſelf-conceit, that, notwithſtanding my aſſurance before, and the whole ſeries of my conduct ſince our marriage, which ought to have convinced him of my diſlike, he is ſtill perſuaded, that, at bottom, I muſt admire and be enamoured of his agreeable perſon and accompliſhments, and that I would not fail to manifeſt my love, were I not ſpirited up againſt him by his own relations. Perhaps it might be their intereſt to foment the miſunderſtanding betwixt us; but

really they give themſelves no trouble about our affairs; and, ſo far as I know them, are a very good ſort of people. On the whole, I think I may with juſtice pronounce my precious yoke-fellow a trifling, teazing, inſufferable, inconſiſtent creature.

With the little money which remained of what I had received from his lordſhip for houſekeeping, I tranſported myſelf to Flanders, and arrived in Ghent, a few days after our troops were quartered in that city, which was ſo much crowded with theſe new viſitants, that I ſhould have found it impracticable to procure a lodging, had I not been accommodated by lord R— B—, the Duke of A——'s youngeſt brother, who very politely gave me up his own. Here I ſaw my friend Mr. B——, who was overjoyed at my arrival, though jealous of every man of his acquaintance; for he loved me with all the ardour of paſſion, and I regarded him with all the perfection of friendſhip, which, had he lived, in time might have produced love; though that was a fruit which it never brought forth. Notwithſtanding his earneſt ſolicitations to the contrary, I ſtaid but a week in Ghent, from whence I proceeded to Bruſſels, and fixed my abode in the Hotel de Flandre, among an agreeable ſet of gentlemen and ladies, with whom I ſpent my time very cheerfully. There was a ſort of court in this city, frequented by all the officers who could obtain permiſſion to go thither; and the place in general was gay and agreeable. I was introduced to the beſt families, and very happy in my acquaintance; for the ladies were polite, good tempered, and obliging, and treated me with the utmoſt hoſpitality and reſpect. Among others, I contracted a friendſhip with Madam la Compteſſe de C—— and her two daughters, who were very amiable young ladies; and became intimate with the Princeſs C—— and Counteſs W——, lady of the bed-chamber to the Queen of Hungary, and a great favourite of the governor Monſieur D' H——, in whoſe houſe ſhe lived with his wife, who was alſo a lady of a very engaging diſpoſition.

Soon after I had fixed my habitation in Bruſſels, the company at our hotel was increaſed by three officers, who profeſſed themſelves my admirers, and came from Ghent, with a view of ſoliciting my love. This triumvirate con-

ſiſted of the Scotch Earl of ——, Lord R— M—, and another young officer: The firſt was a man of a very genteel figure and amorous complexion, danced well, and had a great deal of good humour, with a mixture of vanity and ſelf-conceit. The ſecond had a good face, though a clumſy perſon, and a very ſweet diſpoſition, very much adapted for the ſentimental paſſion of love: And the third (Mr. W—— by name) was tall, thin, and well-bred, with a great ſtock of good nature and vivacity. Theſe adventurers began their addreſſes in general acts of gallantry, that comprehended ſeveral of my female friends, with whom we uſed to engage in parties of pleaſure, both in the city and the environs, which are extremely agreeable. When they thought they had taken the preliminary ſteps of ſecuring themſelves in my good opinion and eſteem, they agreed to go on without further delay, and that Lord ——— ſhould make the firſt attack upon my heart.

He accordingly laid ſiege to me, with ſuch warmth and aſſiduity, that I believe he deceived himſelf, and began to think he was actually in love; though, at bottom, he felt no impulſe that deſerved the ſacred name. Though I diſcouraged him in the beginning, he perſecuted me with his addreſſes; he always ſat by me at dinner, and imparted a thouſand trifles in continual whiſpers, which attracted the notice of the company ſo much, that I began to fear his behaviour would give riſe to ſome report to my prejudice, and therefore avoided him with the utmoſt caution. Notwithſtanding all my care, however, he found means one night, while my maid, who lay in my room, went down ſtairs, to get into my chamber after I was a-bed: Upon which, I ſtarted up, and told him, that, if he ſhould approach me, I would alarm the houſe; for I never wanted courage and reſolution. Perceiving my diſpleaſure, he kneeled by the bed-ſide, begged I would have pity on his ſufferings, and ſwore I ſhould have *carte blanche* to the utmoſt extent of his fortune. To theſe propoſals I made no other reply, but that of proteſting I would never ſpeak to him again, if he did not quit my apartment that moment; upon which he thought proper to withdraw; and I never afterwards gave him an opportunity of ſpeaking to me on the ſame ſubject: So that, in a few weeks, he ſeparated himſelf from our ſo-

ciety; though the ladies of Bruſſels conſidered him as my lover, becauſe, of all the other officers, he was their greateſt favourite.

His lordſhip being thus repulſed, Mr. W— took the field, and aſſailed my heart in a very different manner. He ſaid he knew not how to make love, but was a man of honour, would keep the ſecret and ſo forth. To this cavalier addreſs I anſwered, that I was not angry, as I otherwiſe ſhould have been, at his blunt declaration, becauſe I found by his own confeſſion, he did not know what was due to the ſex; and my unhappy ſituation in ſome ſhape excuſed him for a liberty which he would not have dreamed of taking, had not my misfortunes encouraged his preſumption. But I would deal with him in his own way; and, far from aſſuming the prude, frankly aſſured him, that he was not all to my taſte, hoping he would conſider my diſlike as a ſufficient reaſon to reject his love.

Lord R— began to feel the ſymptoms of a genuine paſſion, which he carefully cheriſhed in ſilence, being naturally diffident and baſhful; but, by the very means he uſed to conceal it from my obſervation, I plainly diſcerned the ſituation of his heart, and was not at all diſpleaſed at the progreſs I had made in his inclinations. Meanwhile he cultivated my acquaintance with great aſſiduity and reſpect, attended me in all my excurſions, and particularly in an expedition to Antwerp, with two other gentlemen, where, in downright *gaite de cœur*, we ſat for our pictures, which were drawn in one piece, one of the party being repreſented in the dreſs of an huſſar, and another in that of a running footman. This incident I mention, becauſe the performance, which is now in my poſſeſſion, gave birth to a thouſand groundleſs reports circulated in England at our expence.

It was immediately after this jaunt, that Lord R— began to diſcloſe his paſſion; though he at the ſame time ſtarted ſuch objections as ſeemed well nigh to extinguiſh his hopes, lamenting, that, even if he ſhould have the happineſs to engage my affections, his fortune was too inconſiderable to ſupport us againſt the efforts of Lord —, ſhould he attempt to interrupt our felicity: and that he himſelf was obliged to follow the motions of the

army. In ſhort, he ſeemed to conſider my felicity more than his own, and behaved with ſuch delicacy, as gradually made an impreſſion on my heart; ſo that, when we parted, we agreed to renew our correſpondence in England.

In the midſt of theſe agreeable amuſements, which I enjoyed in almoſt all the different towns of Flanders, I happened to be at Ghent one day, ſitting among a good deal of company, in one of their hotels, when a poſt-chaiſe ſtopped at the gate; upon which we went to the windows to ſatisfy our curioſity, when who ſhould ſtep out of the convenience, but my little inſignificant lord. I no ſooner announced him to the company, than all the gentlemen aſked whether they ſhould ſtay and protect me, or withdraw; and when I aſſured them that their protection was not neceſſary, one and all of them retired; though Lord R— M--- went no farther than the parlour below, being determined to ſcreen me againſt all violence and compulſion. I ſent a meſſage to my lord, deſiring him to walk up into my apartment; but although his ſole errand was to ſee and carry me off, he would not venture to accept of my invitation, till he had demanded me in form from the governor of the place.

That gentleman, being altogether a ſtranger to his perſon and character, referred him to the commanding officer of the Engliſh troops, who was a man of humour, and, upon his lordſhip's application, pretended to doubt his identity; obſerving, that he had always heard Lord ------ repreſented as a jolly corpulent man. He gave him to underſtand, however, that, even granting him to be the perſon, I was by no means ſubject to military law, unleſs he could prove that I had ever liſted in his Majeſty's ſervice.

Thus diſappointed in his endeavours, he returned to the inn, and, with much perſuaſion, truſted himſelf in my dining-room, after having ſtationed his attendant at the door, in caſe of accidents. When I aſked what had procured me the honour of this viſit, he told me, his buſineſs and intention were to carry me home. This declaration produced a conference, in which I argued the caſe with him; and matters were accommodated for the preſent, by my promiſing to be in England ſome time in

September, on condition that he would permit me to live by myſelf, as before, and immediately order the arrears of my pin-money to be paid. He aſſented to every thing I propoſed, returned in peace to his own country, and the deficiencies of my allowance were made good; while I returned to Bruſſels, where I ſtaid until my departure for England, which I regulated in ſuch a manner as was conſiſtent with my engagement.

I took lodgings in Pall-mall, and, ſending for my lord, convinced him of my punctuality, and put him in mind of his promiſe; when, to my utter aſtoniſhment and confuſion, he owned, that his promiſe was no more than a decoy to bring me over, and that I muſt lay my account with living in his houſe like a dutiful and obedient wife. I heard him with the indignation ſuch treatment deſerved, upbraiding him with his perfidious dealing, which I told him would have determined me againſt cohabitation with him had I not been already reſolved; and, being deſtitute of all reſource, repaired to Bath, where I afterwards met with Mr. D— and Mr. R—, two gentlemen who had been my fellow paſſengers in the yacht from Flanders, and treated me with great friendſhip and politeneſs, without either talking or thinking of love.

With theſe gentlemen, who were as idle as myſelf, I went to the jubilee at Preſton, which was no other than a great number of people aſſembled in a ſmall town, extremely ill accommodated, to partake of diverſions that were bad imitations of plays, concerts, and maſquerades. If the world ſhould place to the account of my indiſcretion my travelling in this manner with gentlemen to whom I had no particular attachment, let it alſo be conſidered, as an alleviation, that I always lived in terror of my lord, and conſequently was often obliged to ſhift my quarters; ſo that, my finances being extremely ſlender, I ſtood the more in need of aſſiſtance and protection. I was, beſides, young, inconſiderate, and ſo ſimple, as to ſuppoſe the figure of an ugly man would always ſecure me from cenſure on his account; neither did I ever dream of any man's addreſſes, until he made an actual declaration of his love.

Upon my return to Bath, I was again haraſſed by Lord —— who came thither accompanied by my father,

whom I was very glad to ſee, though he importuned me to comply with my huſband's deſire, and for the future keep meaſures with the world. This remonſtrance about living with my lord, which he conſtantly repeated, was the only inſtance of his unkindneſs which I ever felt. But all his admonitions were not of force ſufficient to ſhake my reſolution in that particular; though the debate continued ſo late, that I told his lordſhip, it was high time to retire, for I could not accommodate him with a bed. He then gave me to underſtand, that he would ſtay where he was; upon which my father took his leave, on pretence of looking out for a lodging for himſelf.

The little gentleman being now left *tete-a-tete* with me, began to diſcover ſome ſigns of apprehenſion in his looks; but, muſtering up all his reſolution, he went to the door, called up three of his ſervants, whom he placed as centinels upon the ſtair, and flounced into my elbow-chair, where he reſigned himſelf to reſt. Intending to go to bed, I thought it was but juſt and decent that I ſhould ſcreen myſelf from the intruſion of his footmen, and with that view bolted the door. Lord ——, hearing himſelf locked in, ſtarted up in the utmoſt terror and conſternation, kicked the door with his heel, and ſcreamed aloud, as if he had been in the hands of an aſſaſſin. My father, who had not yet quitted the houſe, hearing theſe outcries, ran up ſtairs again, and, coming through my bed-chamber into the dining-room where we were, found me almoſt ſuffocated with laughter, and his heroic ſon-in-law ſtaring like one who had loſt his wits, with his hair ſtanding on end.

When my father aſked the meaning of his exclamations, he told him, with all the ſymptoms of diſmay, that I had locked him in, and he did not underſtand ſuch uſage: But I explained the whole myſtery, by ſaying, I had bolted the door, becauſe I did not like the company of his ſervants, and could not imagine the cauſe of his panic, unleſs he thought I deſigned to raviſh him; an inſult than which nothing was farther from my intention. My father himſelf could ſcarce refrain from laughing at his ridiculous fear; but, ſeeing him in great confuſion, took pity on his condition, and carried him off to his own

lodgings, after I had given my word, that I would not attempt to eſcape, but give him audience next morning. I accordingly kept my promiſe, and found means to perſuade them to leave me at my own diſcretion. Next day I was rallied upon the ſtratagem I had contrived to frighten Lord ——; and a thouſand idle ſtories were told about this adventure, which happened literally as I have related it.

From Bath I betook myſelf to a ſmall houſe near Lincoln, which I had hired of the D— of A—, becauſe a country life ſuited beſt with my income, which was no more than four hundred pounds a-year, and that not well paid. I continued ſome months in this retirement, and ſaw no company, except Lord R— M—, who lived in the neighbourhood, and viſited me twice; till, finding myſelf indiſpoſed, I was obliged to remove to London, and took lodgings in Maddox-ſtreet, where my garriſon was taken by ſtorm by my lord and his ſteward, reinforced by Mr. L— V— (who, as my lord told me, had a ſubſidy of five and twenty pounds before he would take the field), and a couple of hardy footmen. This formidable band ruſhed into my apartment, laid violent hands upon me, dragged me down ſtairs without gloves or a cloak, and thruſting me into a coach that ſtood at the door, conveyed me to my lord's lodgings in Glouceſter-ſtreet.

Upon this occaſion, his lordſhip courageouſly drew his ſword upon my woman, who attempted to defend me from his inſults, and, in all probability, would have intimidated him from proceeding; for he looked pale and aghaſt, his knees knocked together, and he breathed thick and hard, with his noſtrils dilated, as if he had ſeen a ghoſt; but he was encouraged by his mercenary aſſociate, who, for the five and twenty pounds, ſtood by him in the day of trouble, and ſpirited him on to this gallant enterpriſe.

In conſequence of this exploit, I was cooped up in a paltry apartment in Glouceſter-ſtreet, where I was cloſe beſet by his lordſhip, and his worthy ſteward Mr. H——, with a ſet of ſervants that were the creatures of this fellow, of whom Lord ——— himſelf ſtood in awe; ſo that I could not help thinking myſelf in Newgate, among thieves and ruffians. To ſuch a degree did my terror

avail, that I actually believed I was in danger of being poiſoned, and would not receive any ſuſtenance, except from the hands of one harmleſs looking fellow, a foreigner, who was my lord's valet de chambre. I will not pretend to ſay my fears were juſt; but ſuch was my opinion of H——, that I never doubted he would put me out of the way, if he thought my life interfered with his intereſt.

On the ſecond day of my impriſonment, I was viſited by the Duke of L——, a friend of my lord, who found me ſitting upon a trunk, in a poor little dining-room filled with lumber, and lighted with two bits of tallow candle, which had been left over-night. He perceived in my countenance a mixture of rage, indignation, terror, and deſpair: He compaſſionated my ſufferings, though he could not alleviate my diſtreſs, any other way than by interceding with my tyrant to mitigate my oppreſſion. Nevertheleſs, I remained eleven days in this uncomfortable ſituation: I was watched like a criminal all day, and one of the ſervants walked from one room to another all night, in the nature of a patrole; while my lord, who lay in the chamber above me, got out of bed, and tripped to the window, at the ſound of every coach that chanced to paſs through the ſtreet. H——, who was conſummate in the arts of a ſycophant, began to court my favour, by condoling my affliction, and aſſuring me, that the only method by which I could regain my liberty, was a cheerful compliance with the humour of my lord. I was fully convinced of the truth of this obſervation; and, though my temper is altogether averſe to diſſimulation, attempted to affect an air of ſerenity and reſignation. But this diſguiſe, I found, would not anſwer my purpoſe; and therefore I had recourſe to the aſſiſtance of my maid, who was permitted to attend me in my confinement. With her I frequently conſulted about the means of accompliſhing my eſcape. In conſequence of our deliberations, ſhe directed a coach and ſix to be ready at a certain part of the town, and to wait for me three days in the ſame place, in caſe I could not come before the expiration of that term.

This previous meaſure being taken according to my inſtructions, the next neceſſary ſtep was to elude the vigi-

lance of my guard: And in this manner did I effectuate my purpoſe. Being by this time indulged in the liberty of going out in the coach, for the benefit of the air, attended by two footmen, who had orders to watch all my motions, I made uſe of this privilege one forenoon, when Lord ——— expected ſome company to dinner, and bade the coachman drive to the lodgings of a man who wrote with his mouth, intending to give my ſpies the ſlip, on pretence of ſeeing this curioſity: But they were too alert in their duty to be thus outwitted, and followed me up ſtairs into the very apartment.

Diſappointed in this hope, I revolved another ſcheme, which was attended with ſucceſs: I bought ſome olives at an oil-ſhop; and, telling the ſervants I would proceed to St. James's gate, and take a turn in the park, broke one of the bottles by the way, complained of the misfortune when I was ſet down, and deſired that my coach might be cleaned before my return. While my attendants were employed in this office, I tripped acroſs the parade to the horſe-guards, and chanced to meet with an acquaintance in the park, who ſaid, he ſaw by my countenance that I was upon ſome expedition. I owned his ſuſpicion was juſt; but, as I had not time to relate particulars, I quickened my pace, and took poſſeſſion of an hackney-coach, in which I proceeded to the vehicle which I had appointed to be in waiting.

While I thus compaſſed my eſcape, there was nothing but perplexity and confuſion at home; dinner was delayed till ſix o'clock; my lord ran half the town over in queſt of his equipage, which at laſt returned, with an account of my elopement. My maid was brought to the queſtion, and grievouſly threatened; but (like all the women I ever had) remained unſhaken in her fidelity. In the mean time, I travelled night and day towards my retreat in Lincolnſhire, of which his lordſhip had not as yet got the leaſt intelligence; and as my coachman was but an unexperienced driver, I was obliged to make uſe of my own ſkill in that exerciſe, and direct his endeavours the whole way, without venturing to go to bed, or take the leaſt repoſe, until I reached my own habitation. There I lived in peace and tranquillity for the ſpace of ſix weeks, when I was alarmed by one of my lord's

myrmidons, who came into the neighbourhood, blaſtering and ſwearing that he would carry me off either dead or alive.

It is not to be ſuppoſed that I was perfectly eaſy when I was made acquainted with his purpoſe and declaration, as my whole family conſiſted of no more than a couple of women and one footman. However, I ſummoned up my courage, which had been often tried, and never forſook me in the day of danger; and ſent him word, that, if ever he ſhould preſume to approach my houſe, I would order him to be ſhot without ceremony. The fellow did not chooſe to put me to the trial, and returned to town without his errand. But as the place of my abode was now diſcovered, I laid my account with having a viſit from his employer: I therefore planted ſpies upon the road, with a promiſe of reward to him who ſhould bring me the firſt intelligence of his lordſhip's approach.

Accordingly, I was one morning appriſed of his coming; and, mounting horſe immediately, with my woman and valet, away we rode, in defiance of winter. In two days I traverſed the wilds of Lincolnſhire and hundreds of Eſſex, croſſed the river at Tilbury, breakfaſted at Chatham, by the help of a guide and moonlight arrived at Dover the ſame evening, embarked for Calais, in which place I found myſelf next day at two o'clock in the afternoon; and, being heartily tired with my journey, betook myſelf to reſt. My maid, who was not able to travel with ſuch expedition, followed me at an eaſier pace; and the footman was ſo aſtoniſhed at my perſeverance, that he could not help aſking me upon the road, if ever I was weary in my life. Certain it is, my ſpirits and reſolution have enabled me to undergo fatigues that are almoſt incredible. From Calais I went to Bruſſels, where I again ſet up my reſt in private lodgings; was again perfectly well received by the faſhionable people of that place; and, by the intereſt of my friends, obtained the queen of Hungary's protection againſt the perſecution of my huſband, while I ſhould reſide in the Auſtrian Netherlands.

Thus ſecured, I lived uncenſured, converſing with the Engliſh company, with which this city was crowded; but ſpent the moſt agreeable part of my time with the Coun-

teſs of Calemberg, in whoſe houſe I generally dined and ſupped: And I alſo contracted an intimacy with the Princeſs of Chemay, who was a great favourite with Madam D'Harrach, the governor's lady.

I had not been long in this happy ſituation, when I was diſturbed by the arrival of Lord ——, who demanded me of the governor; but finding me ſheltered from his power, he ſet out for Vienna; and, in conſequence of his repreſentations, ſtrengthened with the Duke of N—'s name, my protection was withdrawn. But, before this application, he had gone to the camp, and addreſſed himſelf to my Lord Stair, who was my particular friend and ally by my firſt marriage, deſiring he would compel me to return to his houſe. His lordſhip told him, that I was in no ſhape ſubject to his command; but invited him to dinner, with a view of diverting himſelf and company at the expence of his gueſt. In the evening, he was plied with ſo many bumpers to my health, that he became intoxicated, and extremely obſtreperous, inſiſted upon ſeeing Lord Stair after he was retired to reſt, and quarrelled with Lord D—, who being a tall, large, raw-boned Scotchman, could have ſwallowed him at one mouthful; but he thought he might venture to challenge him, in hopes of being put under arreſt by the general: Though he reckoned without his hoſt; Lord Stair knew his diſpoſition, and, in order to puniſh his preſumption, winked at the affair. The challenger, finding himſelf miſtaken in his conjecture, got up early in the morning, and went off poſt for Vienna: And Lord Stair deſired a certain man of quality to make me a viſit, and give me an account of his behaviour.

Being now deprived of my protection and pin-money, which my generous huſband would no longer pay, I was reduced to great difficulty and diſtreſs. The Ducheſs d'Aremberg, Lord G—, and many other perſons of diſtinction, interceded in my behalf with his Majeſty, who was then abroad; but he refuſed to interpoſe between man and wife. The Counteſs of Calemberg wrote a letter to my father, in which ſhe repreſented my uncomfortable ſituation, and undertook to anſwer for my conduct, in caſe he would allow me a ſmall annuity, on which I could live independent of Lord ——, who, by all ac-

counts, was a wretch with whom I could never enjoy the leaſt happineſs or quiet, otherwiſe ſhe would be the firſt to adviſe me to an accommodation. She gave him to underſtand, that her character was neither doubtful nor obſcure; and that, if my conduct there had not been irreproachable, ſhe ſhould not have taken me under her protection: That, as I propoſed to board in a convent, a ſmall ſum would anſwer my occaſions; but, if that ſhould be denied, I would actually go to ſervice, or take ſome other deſperate ſtep, to avoid the man who was my bane and averſion.

To this kind remonſtrance my father anſwered that his fortune would not allow him to aſſiſt me; he had now a young family; and that I ought, at all events, to return to my huſband. By this time, ſuch was the extremity of my circumſtances, that I was forced to pawn my clothes, and every trifling trinket in my poſſeſſion, and even to deſcend ſo far as to ſolicit Mr. S— for a loan of fifty pounds, which he refuſed.

Thus was I deſerted in my diſtreſs by two perſons, to whom, in the ſeaſon of my affluence, my purſe had been always open. Nothing ſo effectually ſubdues a ſpirit unuſed to ſupplicate, as want: Repulſed in this manner, I had recourſe to Lord B—, who was alſo (it ſeems) unable to relieve my neceſſities. This mortification I deſerved at his hands, though he had once put it in my power to be above all ſuch paltry applications; and I ſhould not have been compelled to the diſagreeable taſk of troubling my friends, had not I voluntarily reſigned what he formerly gave me. As to the other gentleman to whom I addreſſed myſelf on this occaſion, I think he might have ſhown more regard to my ſituation, not only for the reaſons already mentioned, but becauſe he knew me too well to be ignorant of what I muſt have ſuffered in condeſcending to make ſuch a requeſt.

Several officers, who gueſſed my adverſity, generouſly offered to ſupply me with money; but I could not bring myſelf to make uſe of their friendſhip, or even to own my diſtreſs, except to one perſon, of whom I borrowed a ſmall ſum. To crown my misfortunes, I was taken very ill, at a time when there was no other way of avoiding the clutches of my perſecutor but by a precipitate flight.

n this emergency, I applied to a worthy gentleman at Bruſſels, a very good friend of mine, but no lover. I ſay no lover, becauſe every man is ſuppoſed to act in that capacity who befriends a young woman in diſtreſs. This generous Fleming ſet out with me in the night from Bruſſels, and conducted me to the frontiers of France. Being very much indiſpoſed both in mind and body when I was obliged to undertake this expedition, I ſhould in all probability have ſunk under the fatigue of travelling, had not my ſpirits been kept up by the converſation of my companion, who was a man of buſineſs and conſequence, and undertook to manage my affairs in ſuch a manner as would enable me to re-eſtabliſh my reſidence in the place I had left. He was young and active, attended me with the utmoſt care and aſſiduity, and left nothing undone which he thought would contribute to my eaſe and ſatisfaction. I believe his friendſhip for me was a little tinctured with another paſſion; but he was married, and lived very well with his wife, who was alſo my friend; ſo that he knew I would never think of him in the light of a lover.

Upon our arrival at Valenciennes, he accommodated me with a little money (for a little was all I would take), and returned to his own city, after we had ſettled a correſpondence by letters. I was detained a day or two in this place by my indiſpoſition, which increaſed; but, nevertheleſs, proceeded to Paris, to make intereſt for a protection from the King of France, which that monarch graciouſly accorded me, in three days after my firſt application; and his miniſter ſent orders to all the governors and intendants of the province towns, to protect me againſt the efforts of Lord ——, in whatever place I ſhould chooſe to reſide.

Having returned my thanks at Verſailles for this favour, and tarried a few days at Paris, which was a place altogether unſuitable to the low ebb of my fortune, I repaired to Liſle, where I intended to fix my habitation; and there my diſorder recurred with ſuch violence, that I was obliged to ſend for a phyſician, who ſeemed to have been a diſciple of Sangrado; for he ſcarce left a drop of blood in my body, and yet I found myſelf never a whit the better. Indeed, I was ſo much exhauſted by theſe

evacuations, and my conſtitution ſo much impaired by fatigue and perturbation of mind, that I had no other hope of recovering but that of reaching England, and putting myſelf under the direction of a phyſician, on whoſe ability I could depend.

With this doubtful proſpect, therefore, I determined to attempt a return to my native air, and actually departed from Liſle, in ſuch a melancholy enfeebled condition, that I had almoſt fainted when I was put into the coach. But before I reſolved upon this journey, I was reduced to the utmoſt exigence of fortune, ſo that I could ſcarce afford to buy proviſions, had it been in my power to eat, and ſhould not have been able to defray my travelling expences, had I not been generouſly befriended by Lord R— M—, who (I am ſure) would have done any thing for my eaſe and accommodation, though he has unjuſtly incurred the imputation of being parſimonious, and I had no reaſon to expect any ſuch favour at his hands.

In this deplorable ſtate of health I was conveyed to Calais, being all the way (as it were) in the arms of death, without having ſwallowed the leaſt ſuſtenance on the road. So much was my indiſpoſition augmented by the fatigue of the journey, that I ſwooned when I was brought into the inn, and had almoſt expired before I could receive the leaſt aſſiſtance or advice: However, my ſpirits were a little revived by ſome bread and wine, which I took at the perſuaſion of a French ſurgeon, who, chancing to paſs by the door, was called up to my relief. Having ſent my ſervant to Bruſſels, to take care of my clothes, I embarked in the packet boat, and by the time we arrived at Dover was almoſt in extremity.

Here I found a return coach, in which I was carried to London, and was put to bed in the houſe we put up at, more dead than alive. The people of the inn ſent for an apothecary, who adminiſtered ſome cordial that recalled me to life; and, when I recovered the uſe of ſpeech, I told him who I was, and deſired him to wait upon Dr. S—, and inform him of my ſituation. A young girl, who was niece to the landlord's wife, ſeeing me unattended, made a tender of her ſervice to me, and I accepted the offer, as well as of a lodging in the apothecary's houſe, to which I was conveyed as ſoon as my ſtrength would ad-

mit of my removal. There I was viſited by my phyſician, who was ſhocked to find me in ſuch a dangerous condition: However, having conſidered my caſe, he perceived that my indiſpoſition proceeded from the calamities I had undergone, and encouraged me with the hope of a ſpeedy cure, provided I could be kept eaſy and undiſturbed.

I was accordingly attended with all imaginable care; my lord's name being never mentioned in my hearing, becauſe I conſidered him as the fatal ſource of all my misfortunes; and in a month I recovered my health, by the great ſkill and tenderneſs of my doctor, who now finding me ſtrong enough to encounter freſh troubles, endeavoured to perſuade me, that it would be my wiſeſt ſtep to return to my huſband, whom at that time he had often occaſion to ſee. But I rejected his propoſal, commenced a new law-ſuit for ſeparation, and took a ſmall houſe in St. James's Square.

About this time, my woman returned from Bruſſels, but without my clothes, which were detained on account of the money I owed in that place; and, aſking her diſmiſſion from my ſervice, ſet up ſhop for herſelf. I had not lived many weeks in my new habitation, when my proſecutor renewed his attempts to make himſelf maſter of my perſon; but I had learned from experience to redouble my vigilance, and he was fruſtrated in all his endeavours. I was again happy in the converſation of my former acquaintance, and viſited by a great number of gentlemen, moſtly perſons of probity and ſenſe, who cultivated my friendſhip, without any other motive of attachment. Not that I was unſolicited on the article of love: That was a theme on which I never wanted orators; and could I have prevailed upon myſelf to profit by the advances that were made, I might have managed my opportunities ſo as to have ſet fortune at defiance for the future. But I was none of theſe economiſts, who can ſacrifice their hearts to intereſted conſiderations.

One evening, while I was converſing with three or four of my friends, my lawyer came in, and told me he had ſomething of conſequence to impart: Upon which all the gentlemen but one went away. Then he gave me to underſtand, that my ſuit would immediately come to trial; and, though he hoped the beſt, the iſſue was uncertain:

That, if it ſhould be given againſt me, the deciſion would inſpire my lord with freſh ſpirits to diſturb my peace; and therefore it would be convenient for me to retire, until the affair ſhould be brought to a determination.

I was very much diſconcerted at this intelligence; and the gentleman who ſtaid perceiving my concern, aſked what I intended to do, or if he could ſerve me in any ſhape, and deſired to know whither I propoſed to retreat? I affected to laugh, and anſwered, "To a garret, I believe." To this overſtrained raillery he replied, that, if I ſhould, his friendſhip and regard would find the way to my apartment; and I had no reaſon to doubt the ſincerity of his declaration. We conſulted about the meaſures I ſhould take, and I determined to remove into the country, where I was ſoon favoured with a letter from him, wherein he expreſſed the infinite pleaſure he had in being able to aſſure me that my ſuit had been ſucceſsful, and that I might appear again with great ſafety.

Accordingly I returned to town in his coach and ſix, which he had ſent for my convenience, and the ſame evening went with him to the maſquerade, where we paſſed the night very agreeably, his ſpirits, as well as mine, being elevated to a joyous pitch by the happy event of my proceſs. This gentleman was a perſon of great honour, worth, and good nature; he loved me extremely, but did not care that I ſhould know the extent of his paſſion: On the contrary, he endeavoured to perſuade me, he had laid it down as a maxim, that no woman ſhould ever have power enough over his heart, to give him the leaſt pain or diſquiet. In ſhort, he had made a progreſs in my affection, and ſo his generoſity was I indebted for my ſubſiſtence two whole years; during which, he was continually profeſſing this philoſophic indifference, while, at the ſame time, he was giving me daily aſſurances of his friendſhip and eſteem, and treating me with inceſſant marks of the moſt paſſionate love: So that I concluded his intention was cold, though his temper was warm. Conſidering myſelf as an encumbrance upon his fortune, I redoubled my endeavours to obtain a ſeparate maintenance from my lord, and removed from St. James's Square to lodgings at Kenſington, where I had not long enjoyed myſelf in tranquillity, before it was interrupted by a very unexpected viſit.

While I was buſy one day dreſſing in my dining-room, I found his lordſhip at my elbow before I was aware of his approach, although his coach was at the door, and the houſe already in the poſſeſſion of his ſervants. He accoſted me in the uſual ſtyle, as if we had parted the night before; and I anſwered him with an appearance of the ſame careleſs familiarity, deſiring him to ſit down, while I retreated to my chamber, locked the door, and fairly went to bed, being perhaps the firſt woman who went thither for protection from the inſults of a man. Here then I immured myſelf with my faithful Abigail. My lord finding me ſecured, knocked at the door, and through the key-hole begged to be admitted, aſſuring me that all he wanted was a conference. I deſired to be excuſed, though I believed his aſſurance; but I had no inclination to converſe with him, becauſe I knew from experience the nature of his converſation, which was ſo diſagreeable and tormenting, that I would have exchanged it at any time for a good beating, and thought myſelf a gainer by the bargain. However, he perſiſted in his importunities to ſuch a degree, that I aſſented to his propoſal, on condition that the Duke of L—— ſhould be preſent at the interview; and he immediately ſent a meſſage to his grace, while I in peace ate my breakfaſt, conveyed in a baſket, which was hoiſted up to the window of my bed-chamber.

The duke was ſo kind as to come at my lord's requeſt, and, before I would open the door, gave me his word, that I ſhould be protected from all violence and compulſion. Thus aſſured, they were permitted to enter. My little gentleman, ſitting down by my bed-ſide, began to repeat the old hackneyed arguments he had formerly uſed, with the view of inducing me to live with him; and I, on my ſide, repeated my former objections, or pretended to liſten to his repreſentations, while my imagination was employed in contriving the means of effecting an eſcape, as the duke eaſily perceived by my countenance.

Finding all his remonſtrances ineffectual, he quitted the chamber, and left his cauſe to the eloquence of his grace, who ſat with me a whole half hour, without exerting himſelf much in behalf of his client, becauſe he knew I was altogether obſtinate and determined on that ſcore;

but joked upon the behaviour of his lordſhip, who (though jealous of moſt people) had left him alone with me in my bed-chamber, obſerving, that he muſt either have great confidence in his virtue, or a very bad opinion of him otherwiſe. In ſhort, I found means to defer the categorical anſwer till next day, and invited the duke and his lordſhip to dine with me to-morrow. My wiſe yoke-fellow ſeemed to doubt the ſincerity of this invitation, and was very much diſpoſed to keep poſſeſſion of my houſe: But, by the perſuaſions of his grace, and the advice of H—n, who was his chief counſellor and back, he was prevailed upon to take my word, and for the preſent left me.

They were no ſooner retired, than I roſe with great expedition, packed up my clothes, and took ſhelter in Eſſex for the firſt time. Next day, my lord and his noble friend came to dinner, according to appointment; and being informed of my eſcape by my woman, whom I had left in the houſe, his lordſhip diſcovered ſome ſigns of diſcontent, and inſiſted upon ſeeing my papers; upon which my maid produced a parcel of bills which I owed to different people. Notwithſtanding this diſappointment, he ſat down to what was provided for dinner, and with great deliberation ate up a leg of lamb, the beſt part of a fowl, and ſomething elſe, which I do not now remember; and then very peaceably went away, giving my maid an opportunity of following me to the place of my retreat.

My intention was to have ſought refuge, as formerly, in another country; but I was prevented from putting my deſign in execution by a fit of illneſs, during which I was viſited by my phyſician and ſome of my own relations, particularly a diſtant couſin of mine, whom my lord had engaged in his intereſts, by promiſing to recompence her amply, if ſhe could perſuade me to comply with his deſire. In this office ſhe was aſſiſted by the doctor, who was my friend, and a man of ſenſe, for whom I have the moſt perfect eſteem, though he and I have often differed in point of opinion. In a word, I was expoſed to the inceſſant importunities of all my acquaintance, which, added to the deſperate circumſtances of my fortune, compelled me to embrace the terms that were offered, and I again returned to the domeſtic duties of a wife.

I was conducted to my lord's houſe by an old friend of mine, a gentleman turned of fifty, of admirable parts and underſtanding; he was a pleaſing companion, cheerful, and humane, and had acquired a great ſhare of my eſteem and reſpect. In a word, his advice had great weight in my deliberations, becauſe it ſeemed to be the reſult of experience and diſintereſted friendſhip. Without all doubt, he had an unfeigned concern for my welfare; but, being an admirable politician, his ſcheme was to make my intereſt coincide with his own inclinations; for I had unwittingly made an innovation upon his heart; and as he thought I ſhould hardly favour his paſſion, while I was at liberty to converſe with the reſt of my admirers, he counſelled me to ſurrender that freedom, well knowing that my lord would be eaſily perſuaded to baniſh all his rivals from the houſe; in which caſe, he did not doubt of his being able to inſinuate himſelf into my affections; becauſe he laid it down as an eternal truth, that, if any two perſons of different ſexes were obliged to live together in a deſert where they would be excluded from all other human intercourſe, they would naturally and inevitably contract an inclination for each other.

How juſt this hypotheſis might be, I leave to the determination of the curious; though, if I may be allowed to judge from my own diſpoſition, a couple ſo ſituated would be apt to imbibe mutual diſguſts, from the nature and neceſſity of their union; unleſs their aſſociation was at firſt the effect of reciprocal affection and eſteem. Be this as it will, I honour the gentleman for his plan, which was ingeniouſly contrived, and artfully conducted; but I happened to have too much addreſs for him in the ſequel, cunning as he was, though, at firſt, I did not perceive his drift; and his lordſhip was much leſs likely to comprehend his meaning.

Immediately after this new accommodation, I was carried to a country-houſe belonging to my lord, and was ſimple enough to venture myſelf (unattended by any ſervant on whoſe integrity I could depend), in the hands of his lordſhip and H——, whoſe villany I always dreaded; though at this time my apprehenſions were conſiderably increaſed, by recollecting, that it was not his intereſt to let me live in the houſe, leſt his conduct ſhould be in-

quired into; and by remembering that the very houſe to which we were going had been twice burnt down in a very ſhort ſpace of time, not without ſuſpicion of his having been the incendiary, on account of ſome box of writings, which was loſt in the conflagration. True it is, this imputation was never made good; and perhaps he was altogether innocent of the charge, which nevertheleſs affected my ſpirits in ſuch a manner, as rendered me the moſt miſerable of all mortals. In this terror did I remain, till my conſternation was weakened by the arrival of Mr. Bal—, a good natured worthy man, whom my lord had invited to his houſe, and I thought would not ſee me ill uſed. In a few weeks we were joined by Dr. S—— and his lady, who viſited us according to their promiſe; and it was reſolved that we ſhould ſet out for Tunbridge, on a party of pleaſure, and at our return examine H——'s accounts.

This laſt part of our ſcheme was not at all reliſhed by our worthy ſteward, who, therefore, determined to overturn our whole plan, and ſucceeded accordingly. My lord, all of a ſudden, declared himſelf againſt the jaunt we had projected, and inſiſted upon my ſtaying at home, without aſſigning any reaſon for this peremptory behaviour; his countenance being cloudy, and, for the ſpace of three days, he did not open his mouth.

At laſt, he one night entered my bed-chamber, to which he now had free acceſs, with his ſword under his arm, and, if I remember aright, it was ready drawn. I could not help taking notice of this alarming circumſtance, which ſhocked me the more, as it happened immediately after a gloomy fit of diſcontent. However, I ſeemed to overlook the incident, and, diſmiſſing my maid, went to bed; becauſe I was aſhamed to acknowledge, even to my own heart, any dread of a perſon whom I deſpiſed ſo much. However, the ſtrength of my conſtitution was not equal to the fortitude of my mind. I was taken ill, and the ſervants were obliged to be called up; while my lord himſelf, terrified at my ſituation, ran up ſtairs to Mrs. S——, who was in bed, told her, with evident perturbation of ſpirits, that I was very much indiſpoſed, and ſaid, he believed I was frighted by his entering my chamber with his ſword in hand.

This lady was ſo ſtartled at his information, that ſhe ran into my apartment half-naked, and as ſhe went down ſtairs, aſked what reaſon could induce him to have carried his ſword with him? Upon which he gave her to underſtand, that his intention was to kill the bats.—I believe and hope he had no other deſign than that of intimidating me; but when the affair happened, I was of a different opinion. Mrs. S—— having put on her clothes, ſat up all night by my bed-ſide, and was ſo good as to aſſure me, that ſhe would not leave me, until I ſhould be ſafely delivered from the apprehenſions that ſurrounded me in this houſe, to which ſhe and the doctor had been the principal cauſe of my coming; for my lord had haunted and importuned them inceſſantly on this ſubject, proteſting that he loved me with the moſt inviolable affection; and all he deſired was, that I would ſit at his table, manage his family, and ſhare his fortune. By theſe profeſſions, uttered with an air of honeſty and good nature, he had impoſed himſelf upon them, for the beſt tempered creature upon earth; and they uſed all their influence with me to take him into favour. This hath been the caſe with a great many people, who had but a ſuperficial knowledge of his diſpoſition; but, in the courſe of their acquaintance, they have never failed to diſcern and acknowledge their miſtake.

The doctor, on his return from Tunbridge, to which place he had made a trip by himſelf, found me ill a-bed, and the whole family in confuſion; ſurpriſed and concerned at this diſorder, he entered into expoſtulation with my lord, who owned, that the cauſe of his diſpleaſure and diſquiet was no other than jealouſy.—H—— had informed him, that I had been ſeen to walk out with Mr. Bal—— in a morning; and that our correſpondence had been obſerved with many additional circumſtances, which were abſolutely falſe and groundleſs. This imputation was no ſooner underſtood, than it was reſolved that the accuſer ſhould be examined in preſence of us all. He accordingly appeared, exceedingly drunk, though it was morning, and repeated the articles of the charge, as an information he had received from a man who came from town to hang the bells, and was long ago returned to London.

This was an inſtance of his cunning and addreſs, which

did not forſake him even in his hours of intoxication. Had he fixed the calumny on any one of the ſervants, he would have been confronted and detected in his falſehood. Nevertheleſs, though he could not be legally convicted, it plainly appeared that he was the author of this defamation, which incenſed Mr. Bal— to ſuch a degree, that he could ſcarce be withheld from puniſhing him on the ſpot, by manual chaſtiſement.—However, he was prevailed upon to abſtain from ſuch immediate vengeance, as a ſtep unworthy of his character; and the affair was brought to this iſſue, that his lordſhip ſhould either part with me or Mr. H ——; for I was fully determined againſt living under the ſame roof with ſuch an incendiary.

This alternative being propoſed, my lord diſmiſſed his ſteward, and we returned to town with the doctor and Mrs. S——; for I had imbibed ſuch horror and averſion for this country-ſeat (though one of the pleaſanteſt in England), that I could not bear to live in it. We therefore removed to an houſe in Bond-ſtreet, where, according to the advice of my friends, I exerted my whole power and complaiſance in endeavours to keep my huſband in good humour; but was ſo unſucceſsful in my attempts, that, if ever he was worſe tempered, more capricious, or intolerable at one time than at another, this was the ſeaſon in which his ill humour predominated in the moſt rancorous degree. I was ſcarce ever permitted to ſtir abroad, ſaw nobody at home but my old male friend whom I have mentioned above, and the doctor with his lady, from whoſe converſation alſo I was at laſt excluded.

Nevertheleſs I contrived to ſteal a meeting, now and then, with my late benefactor, for whom I entertained a great ſhare of affection, excluſive of that gratitude that was due to his generoſity. It was not his fault that I compromiſed matters with my lord: for he was as free of his purſe as I was unwilling to uſe it. It would, therefore, have been unfriendly, unkind, and ungrateful in me (now that I was in affluence), to avoid all intercourſe with a man who had ſupported me in adverſity. I think people cannot be too ſhy and ſcrupulous in receiving favours; but once they are conferred, they ought never to forget the obligation: And I was never more concerned at any incident of my life, than at hearing that this gen-

gleman did not receive a letter, in which I acknowledged the laſt proof of his friendſhip and liberality which I had occaſion to uſe, becauſe I have ſince learned that he ſuſpected me of neglect.

But, to return to my ſituation in Bond-ſtreet. I bore it as well as I could for the ſpace of three months, during which I lived in the midſt of ſpies, who were employed to watch my conduct, and underwent every mortification that malice, power, and folly could inflict. Nay, ſo ridiculous, ſo unreaſonable was my tyrant in his ſpleen, that he declared he would even be jealous of Heydigger, if there was no other man to incur his ſuſpicion: He expected that I ſhould ſpend my whole time with him *tete-a-tete*; when I ſacrificed my enjoyment to theſe comfortable parties, he never failed to lay hold on ſome innocent expreſſion of mine, which he made the foundation of a quarrel; and, when I ſtrove to avoid theſe diſagreeable miſinterpretations by reading or writing, he inceſſantly teized and tormented me with the imputation of being peeviſh, ſullen, and reſerved.

Haraſſed by this inſufferable behaviour, I communicated my caſe to Dr. S—— and his lady, intimating that I neither could nor would expoſe myſelf any longer to ſuch uſage. The doctor exhorted me to bear my fate with patience; and Mrs. S— was ſilent on the ſubject; ſo that I ſtill heſitated between ſtaying and going, when the doctor, being one night at ſupper, happened to have ſome words with my lord, who was ſo violently tranſported with paſſion, that I was actually afraid of going to bed with him; and next morning, when he awaked, there was ſuch an expreſſion of frantic wildneſs in his countenance, that I imagined he was actually diſtracted.

This alarming circumſtance confirmed me in my reſolution of decamping; and I accordingly moved my quarters to a houſe in Sackville-ſtreet, where I had lodged when I was a widow. From thence I ſent a meſſage to the Duke of L—, deſiring he would make my lord acquainted with the place of my abode, my reaſons for removing, and my intention to defend myſelf againſt all his attempts. The firſt night of this ſeparation I went to bed by myſelf with as much pleaſure as a man would feel in going to bed to his miſtreſs whom he had long ſo-

licited in vain, ſo rejoiced was I to be delivered from my obnoxious bedfellow!

From theſe lodgings I ſoon moved to Brook-ſtreet, where I had not long enjoyed the ſweets of my eſcape, when I was importuned to return, by a new ſteward whom my lord had engaged in the room of H——n. This gentleman, who bore a very fair character, made ſuch judicious repreſentations, and behaved ſo candidly in the diſcharge of his function, that I agreed he ſhould act as umpire in the difference betwixt us, and once more a reconciliation was effected, though his lordſhip began to be diſſatisfied even before the execution of our agreement; in conſequence of which he attended me to Bath, whither I went for the benefit of my health, which was not a little impaired.

This accommodation had a ſurpriſing effect upon my lover, who, notwithſtanding his repeated declarations, that no woman ſhould ever gain ſuch an aſcendency over his heart, as to be able to give him pain, ſuffered all the agonies of diſappointed love, when he now found himſelf deprived of the opportunities of ſeeing me, and behaved very differently from what he had imagined he ſhould. His words and actions were deſperate: one of his expreſſions to me was, "It is like twiſting my heart-ſtrings, and tearing it out of my body." Indeed I never ſhould have acted this part, had I foreſeen what he would have ſuffered; but I proteſt I believed him when he ſaid otherwiſe ſo much, that his declaration on that ſubject was the occaſion of my giving him up; and it was now too late to retract.

In our expedition to Bath, I was accompanied by a very agreeable young lady, with whom I paſſed my time very happily, amid the diverſions of the place, which ſcreened me, in a good meaſure, from the vexatious ſociety of my hopeful partner. From this place we repaired to his ſeat in the country, where we ſpent a few months, and thence returned again to our houſe in Bond-ſtreet. Here, while I was confined to my bed by illneſs, it was ſuppoſed my indiſpoſition was no other than a private lying-in, though I was under the roof with my lord, and attended by his ſervants.

While the diſtemper continued, my lord (to do him

juſtice) behaved with all imaginable tenderneſs and care; and his concern on theſe occaſions I have already mentioned as a ſtrange inconſiſtency in his diſpoſition. If his actions were at all accountable, I ſhould think he took pains to fret me into a fever firſt, in order to manifeſt his love and humanity afterwards. When I recovered my ſtrength and ſpirits, I went abroad, ſaw company, and ſhould have been eaſy, had he been contented; but as my ſatisfaction increaſed, his good humour decayed, and he baniſhed from his houſe, one by one, all the people whoſe converſation could have made my life agreeable.

I often expoſtulated with him upon his malignant behaviour, proteſting my deſire of living peaceably with him, and begging he would not lay me under the neceſſity of changing my meaſures. He was deaf to all my remonſtrances (though I warned him more than once of the event), perſiſted in his maxims of perſecution; and, after repeated quarrels, I again left his houſe fully determined to ſuffer all ſorts of extremity, rather than ſubject myſelf to the tyranny of his diſpoſition.

This year was productive of one fatal event, which I felt with the utmoſt ſenſibility of ſorrow, and I ſhall always remember with regret—I mean the death of Mr. B——, with whom I had conſtantly maintained an intimate correſpondence ſince the firſt commencement of our acquaintance. He was one of the moſt valuable men, and promiſed to be one of the brighteſt ornaments that this or any other age had produced. I enjoyed his friendſhip without reſerve; and ſuch was the confidence he repoſed in my integrity, from long experience of my truth, that he often ſaid he would believe my bare aſſertion, even though it ſhould contradict the evidence of his own ſenſes. Theſe being the terms upon which we lived, it is not to be ſuppoſed that I bore the loſs of him without repining: Indeed my grief was unſpeakable; and though the edge of it be now ſmoothed by the lenient hand of time, I ſhall never ceaſe to cheriſh his memory with the moſt tender remembrance.

During the laſt period of my living with my lord, I had agreed to the expediency of obtaining an act of parliament, which would enable him to pay his debts; on

which occaſion there was a neceſſity of cancelling a deed that ſubſiſted between us, relating to a ſeparate maintenance, to which, on certain proviſions, I was entitled; and this was to be ſet aſide, ſo far as it interfered with the above mentioned ſcheme, while the reſt of it ſhould remain in force. When this affair was about to be tranſacted, my lord very generouſly inſiſted upon my concurrence in annulling the whole ſettlement; and, when I refuſed to comply with this demand, becauſe this was the ſole reſource I had againſt his ill uſage, he would not proceed in the execution of his plan, though, by dropping it, he hurt nobody but himſelf; and he accuſed me of having receded from my word, after I had drawn him into a conſiderable expence.

This imputation of breaking my word, which I defy the whole world to prove I ever did, incenſed me the more, as I myſelf had propoſed the ſcheme for his ſervice, although I knew the accompliſhment of it would endanger the validity of my own ſettlement; and my indignation was ſtill more augmented by the behaviour of Mr. G——, who had always profeſſed a regard for my intereſt, and upon my laſt accommodation with my lord, undertaken to effect a reconciliation between my father and me; but, when he was queſtioned about the particulars of this difference, and deſired to declare whether his lordſhip or I was to blame, he declined the office of arbitrator, refuſed to be explicit upon the ſubject, and by certain ſhrewd hums and ha's, ſignified his diſapprobation of my conduct. Yet this very man, when I imparted to him, in confidence, my intention of making another retreat, and frankly aſked his opinion of my deſign, ſeemed to acquieſce in the juſtice of it in theſe remarkable words—"Madam, If I thought or had hopes of my lord's growing better, I would down on my knees to deſire you to ſtay; but, as I have not, I ſay nothing."

If he connived at my conduct in this particular, why ſhould he diſapprove of it when all I aſked was but common juſtice? But he was a dependent; and therefore I excuſe his phlegmatic (not to call it unfriendly) behaviour. Indeed he could not be too cautious of giving offence to his lordſhip, who ſometimes made him feel the effects of that wrath which other people had kindled;

particularly in conſequence of a ſmall adventure which happened about this very period of time.

A very agreeable, ſprightly, good-natured young man, a near relation of my lord, happening to be at our houſe one evening, when there was a fire in the neighbourhood, we agreed to go and ſup at a tavern *en famille*; and having ſpent the evening with great mirth and good humour, this young gentleman, who was naturally facetious, in taking his leave, ſaluted us all round. My lord who had before entertained ſome jealouſy of his kinſman, was very much provoked by this trifling incident, but very prudently ſuppreſſed his diſpleaſure till he returned to his own houſe, where his rage co-operating with the Champagne he had drank, inflamed him to ſuch a degree of reſolution, that he ſprung upon the innocent G——n, and collared him with great fury, though he was altogether unconcerned in the cauſe of his indignation.

This extravagant and frantic behaviour, added to other grievances under which I laboured, haſtened my reſolution of leaving him; and he to this day blames his relation as the immediate cauſe of my eſcape, whereas he ought to place it to the account of his own madneſs and indiſcretion. When I retired to Park-ſtreet, he cautioned all my tradeſmen (not even excepting my baker) againſt giving me credit, aſſuring them that he would not pay any debts I ſhould contract; and the difficulties to which I was reduced, in conſequence of this charitable declaration, together with the reflection of what I had ſuffered, and might undergo, from the caprice and barbarity of his diſpoſition, affected my health ſo much, that I was taken again ill, and my life thought in danger.

My conſtitution, however, got the better of my diſtemper, and I was ordered into the country by my phyſicians, for the benefit of the air; ſo that I found myſelf under the neceſſity of keeping two houſes, when I was little able to ſupport one, and ſet up my chariot, becauſe I could not defray the expence of a hackney-coach; for I had as much credit given me as I aſked for, notwithſtanding my lord's orders to the contrary.

Having recruited my ſpirits in the country, I returned to town, and was viſited by my friends, who never for-

ſook me in adverſity, and, in the ſummer removed to a houſe in Eſſex, where I lived a few months in great tranquillity, unmoleſted by my tyrant, who ſometimes gave me a whole year's reſpite. Here I uſed to ride and drive by turns (as my humour dictated) with horſes which were lent me; and I had the company of my lover, and another gentleman, who was a very agreeable companion, and of ſingular ſervice to me in the ſequel.

At laſt, my lord having received intelligence of the place of my abode, and his tormenting humour recurring, he ſet out for my habitation, and in the morning appeared in his coach and ſix, attended by Mr. G—n, and another perſon, whom he had engaged for the purpoſe, with ſeveral domeſtics armed. I immediately ſhut up my doors at his approach, and refuſed him admittance, which he endeavoured to obtain by a ſucceſſion of prayers and threats; but I was deaf to both, and reſolved to hold out to the laſt. Seeing me determined, he began his attack, and his ſervants actually forced their way into the houſe; upon which I retreated up ſtairs, and fortified myſelf in my apartment, which the aſſailants ſtormed with ſuch fury, that the door began to give way, and I retired into another room.

Whilſt I remained in this poſt, Mr. G—n demanded a parley, in which he begged I would favour my lord with an interview, otherwiſe he knew not what might be the conſequence. To this remonſtrance I replied, that I was not diſpoſed to comply with his requeſt; and that though their deſign ſhould be murder, I was not at all afraid of death. Upon this declaration they renewed their attacks, which they carried on with indifferent ſucceſs till the afternoon, when my lord (as if he had been at play) ſent a formal meſſage to me, deſiring that all hoſtilities ſhould ceaſe, till after both parties ſhould have dined. At the ſame time, my own ſervants came for inſtructions; and I ordered them to let him have every thing which he ſhould call for, as far as the houſe would afford.

He did not fail to make uſe of this permiſſion; but ſitting down with his companions, eat up my dinner without heſitation, after he had paid me the compliment of deſiring to know what he ſhould ſend up to my apart-

ment. Far from having any ſtomach to partake of his meal, I ſat ſolitary upon my bed, in a ſtate of melancholy expectation, having faſtened the door of the outward room for my ſecurity, while I kept my chamber open for the convenience of air, the weather being exceſſively hot.

His lordſhip, having indulged his appetite, reſumed his attempt, and all of a ſudden I heard a noiſe in the next room; upon which I ſtarted up, and perceiving that he had got into my antichamber, by the help of a bench that ſtood under the window, I flung to the door of my room, which I locked with great expedition, and opening another that communicated with the ſtair-caſe, ran out of the houſe, through a crowd of more than a hundred people, whom this fray had gathered together.

Being univerſally beloved in the neighbourhood, and reſpected by my lord's ſervants, I paſſed among them untouched, and took refuge in a neighbouring cottage; while his lordſhip bawled and roared for aſſiſtance, being afraid to come out as he had gone in. Without waiting for his deliberations, I changed clothes with the poor woman who had given me ſhelter, and in her blue apron and ſtraw hat ſallied out into the fields, intending to ſeek protection at the houſe of a gentleman not far off, though I was utterly ignorant of the road that led to it. However, it was my good fortune to meet with a farmer, who undertook to conduct me to the place; otherwiſe I ſhould have miſſed my way, and in all probability lain in the fields; for by this time it was eight o'clock at night.

Under the direction of this guide, I traverſed hedges and ditches (for I would not venture to travel in the highway, leſt I ſhould fall into the hands of my purſuer), and after I had actually tumbled in the mire, and walked ſix or ſeven long miles by the help of a good ſpirit, which never failed me on ſuch occaſions, I arrived at the place, and rung the bell at the garden gate for admittance. Seeing my figure, which was very uncouth, together with my draggled condition, they denied me entrance; but, when they underſtood who I was, immediately opened the door, and I was hoſpitably entertained, after having been the ſubject of mirth, on account of my dreſs and adventure.

Next day I returned and took poſſeſſion of my houſe

1981 A

again, where I reſumed my former amuſements, which I enjoyed in quiet for the ſpace of a whole month, waiting with reſignation for the iſſue of my law-ſuit; when, one afternoon, I was appriſed of his lordſhip's approach by one of my ſpies, whom I always employed to reconnoitre the road; and ſo fortunate was I in the choice of theſe ſcouts, that I never was betrayed by one of them, though they were often bribed for that purpoſe.

I no ſooner received this intelligence, than I ordered my horſe to be ſaddled, and mounting, rode out of ſight immediately, directing my courſe a different way from the London road. I had not long proceeded in this track, when my career was all of a ſudden ſtopped by a five-bar gate, which, after ſome heſitation, I reſolved to leap (my horſe being an old hunter), if I ſhould find myſelf purſued. However, with much difficulty I made a ſhift to open it, and arrived in ſafety at the houſe of my very good friend Mr. G——, who being a juſtice of the peace, had promiſed me his protection, if it ſhould be wanted.

Thus ſecured for the preſent, I ſent out ſpies to bring information of his lordſhip's proceedings, and underſtood that he had taken poſſeſſion of my houſe, turned my ſervants adrift, and made himſelf maſter of all my moveables, clothes, and papers. As for the papers, they were of no conſequence, but of clothes I had a good ſtock; and when I had reaſon to believe that he did not intend to relinquiſh his conqueſt, I thought it was high time for me to remove to a greater diſtance from his quarters. Accordingly, two days after my eſcape, I ſet out at eleven o'clock at night, in a chariot and four, which I borrowed of my friend, attended by a footman, who was a ſtout fellow and well armed, I myſelf being provided with a brace of good piſtols, which I was fully determined to uſe againſt any perſon who ſhould preſume to lay violent hands upon me, except my lord, for whom a leſs mortal weapon would have ſufficed, ſuch as a bodkin or a tinder-box. Nothing could be farer from my intention than the deſire of hurting any living creature, much leſs my huſband; my deſign was only to defend myſelf from cruelty and oppreſſion, which I knew, by fatal experience, would infallibly be my lot, ſhould he get me into his power: And I thought I had as good a right to preſerve my hap-

pineſs, as that which every individual has to preſerve his life, eſpecially againſt a ſet of ruffians, who were engaged to rob me of it for a little dirty lucre.

In the midſt of our journey, the footman came up, and told me I was dogged; upon which I looked out, and, ſeeing a man riding by the chariot ſide, preſented one of my piſtols out of my window, and preſerved that poſture of defence, until he thought proper to retreat, and rid me of the fears that attended his company. I arrived in town, and, changing my equipage, hired an open chaiſe, in which (though I was almoſt ſtarved with cold) I travelled to Reading, which I reached by ten next morning; and from thence proceeded farther in the country, with a view of taking refuge with Mrs. C——, who was my particular friend. Here I ſhould have found ſhelter, though my lord had been beforehand with me, and endeavoured to prepoſſeſs her againſt my conduct, had not the houſe been crowded with company, among whom I could not poſſibly have been concealed, eſpecially from her brother, who was an intimate friend of my perſecutor.

Things being thus ſituated, I enjoyed but a very ſhort interview with her, in which her ſorrow and perplexity on my account appeared with great expreſſion in her countenance; and though it was not in her power to afford me the relief I expected, ſhe, in the moſt genteel manner, ſent after me a ſmall ſum of money, thinking that, conſidering the hurry in which I left my houſe, I might have occaſion for it on the road. I was by this time benumbed with cold, fatigued with travelling, and almoſt fretted to death by my diſappointment. However, this was no time to indulge deſpondence; ſince nobody could or would aſſiſt me, I ſtood the more in need of my own reſolution and preſence of mind. After ſome deliberation, I ſteered my courſe back to London; and being unwilling to return by the ſame road in which I came, as well as impatient to be at the end of my journey, I choſe the Bagſhot way, and ventured to croſs the heath by moonlight.

Here I was attacked by a footpad armed with a broad ſword, who came up and demanded my money. My ſtock amounted to twelve guineas; and I foreſaw, that,

ſhould I be ſtripped of the whole ſum, I could not travel without diſcovering who I was, and conſequently running the riſk of being detected by my purſuer. On theſe conſiderations I gave the fellow three guineas and ſome ſilver; with which he was ſo far from being ſatisfied, that he threatened to ſearch me for more: But I ordered the coachman to proceed, and by good fortune eſcaped that ceremony; though I was under ſome apprehenſion of being overtaken with a piſtol bullet in my flight, and therefore held down my head in the chaiſe, in imitation of ſome great men, who are ſaid to have ducked in the ſame manner in the day of battle.

My fears happened to be diſappointed: I lay at an inn upon the road, and next day arrived in town, in the utmoſt difficulty and diſtreſs; for I knew not where to fix my habitation, and was deſtitute of all means of ſupport. In this dilemma, I applied to my lawyer, who recommended me to the houſe of a tradeſman in Weſtminſter, where I lodged and boarded upon credit, with my faithful Abigail (whom I ſhall diſtinguiſh by the name of Mrs. S——r), for the ſpace of ten weeks, during which I ſaw nobody, and never once ſtirred abroad.

While I was thus haraſſed out of all enjoyment of life, and reduced to the utmoſt indigence, by the cruelty of my perſecutor, who had even ſtripped me of my wearing apparel, I made a conqueſt of Lord D——, a nobleman who is now dead, and therefore I ſhall ſay little of his character, which is perfectly well known: This only will I obſerve, that, next to my own tyrant, he was the perſon of whom I had the greateſt abhorrence. Nevertheleſs, when theſe two came in competition, I preferred the offers of this new lover, which were very conſiderable; and as an aſylum was the chief thing I wanted, agreed to follow him to his country-ſeat, whither I actually ſent my clothes, which I had purchaſed upon credit.

However, upon mature deliberation, I changed my mind, and ſignified my reſolution in a letter, deſiring at the ſame time, that my baggage might be ſent back. In conſequence of this meſſage, I expected a viſit from him, in all the rage of indignation and diſappointment, and gave orders that he ſhould not be admitted into my houſe

Yet, notwithſtanding this precaution, he found means to procure entrance; and one of the firſt objects that I ſaw, next morning, in my bed-chamber, was my lover, armed with his horſe-whip, againſt which (from the knowledge of the man) I did not think myſelf altogether ſecure; though I was not much alarmed, becauſe I believed myſelf ſuperior to him in point of bravery, ſhould the worſt come to the worſt: But, contrary to my expectation, and his uſual behaviour to our ſex, he accoſted me very politely, and began to expoſtulate upon the contents of my letter. I freely told him, that I had raſhly aſſented to his propoſal, for my own convenience only; that, when I reflected on what I had done, I thought it ungenerous in me to live with him upon theſe terms; and that, as I did not like him, and could not diſſemble, ſuch a correſpondence could never tend to the ſatisfaction of either. He allowed the inference was juſt, though he was very much chagrined at my previous proceeding: He relinquiſhed his claim, reſtored my clothes, and never afterwards upbraided me with my conduct in this affair; though he at one time owned, that he ſtill loved me, and ever ſhould, becauſe I had uſed him ill; a declaration that ſtrongly marks the peculiarity of his character. As for my own part, I own that my behaviour on this occaſion is no other way excuſable, than on account of the miſerable perplexity of my circumſtances, which were often ſo calamitous, that I wonder I have not been compelled to take ſuch ſteps, as would have rendered my conduct much more exceptionable than it really is.

At laſt all my hopes were blaſted by the iſſue of my ſuit, which was determined in favour of my lord. Even then I refuſed to yield; on the contrary, coming out of retirement, I took lodgings in Suffolk-ſtreet, and ſet my tyrant at defiance. But, being unwilling to truſt my doors to the care of other people, I hired an houſe in Conduit-ſtreet; and no ſooner appeared in the world again, than I was ſurrounded by divers and ſundry ſorts of admirers. I believe I received the incenſe and addreſſes of all kinds under the ſun, except that ſort which was moſt to my liking, a man capable of contracting and inſpiring a mutual attachment; but ſuch a one is equally rare and ineſtimable; not but that I own myſelf greatly obliged to

all thoſe who cultivated my good graces, though they were very little beholden to me; for where I did not really love, I could never profeſs that paſſion; that ſort of diſſimulation is a ſlavery that no honeſt nature will undergo. Except one worthy young man whom I ſometimes ſaw, they were a ſtrange medley of inſignificant beings; one was inſipid, another ridiculouſly affected, a third void of all education, a fourth altogether inconſiſtent; and, in ſhort, I found as many trifling characters among the men, as ever I obſerved in my own ſex. Some of them I endeavoured to bring over to my maxims, while they attempted to make a proſelyte of me; but finding the taſk impracticable on both ſides, we very wiſely dropt each other.

At length, however, I was bleſſed with the acquaintance of one nobleman, who is, perhaps, the firſt character in England, in point of honour, integrity, wit, ſenſe, and benevolence; when I have thus diſtinguiſhed him, I need ſcarce mention Lord ——. This great, this good man, poſſeſſes every accompliſhment requiſite to inſpire admiration, love, and eſteem. With infinitely more merit than almoſt ever fell to one man's ſhare, he manifeſts ſuch diffidence of his own qualifications, as cannot fail to prepoſſeſs every company in his favour. He ſeems to obſerve nothing, yet ſees every thing; his manner of telling a ſtory, and making trifles elegant, is peculiar to himſelf; and, though he has a thouſand oddities, they ſerve only to make him more agreeable. After what I have ſaid, it may be ſuppoſed that I was enamoured of his perſon; but this was not the caſe; love is altogether capricious and fanciful; yet I admire, honour, and eſteem him to the higheſt degree, and when I obſerve that his character reſembled that of my dear departed friend Mr. B——; or rather, that Mr. B——, had he lived, would have reſembled Lord ——, I pay the higheſt compliment I can conceive both to the living and the dead.

In this nobleman's friendſhip and converſation I thought myſelf happy; though I was, as uſual, expoſed to the indefatigable efforts of my lord, who, one day, while I was favoured with the company of this generous friend, appeared at my door in his coach, attended by another gentleman, who demanded entrance with an air of au-

thority. A very honeſt footman, who had been long in my ſervice, ran up ſtairs in the utmoſt conſternation, and gave me an account of what had happened below. Upon which I told him he had nothing to anſwer for, and ordered him to keep the door faſt ſhut againſt all oppoſition; though I was ſo much affected with this unexpected aſſault, that Lord —— ſaid he was never more ſurpriſed and ſhocked in his life, than at the horror which appeared in my countenance, when I ſaw the coach ſtop at my door.

My little hero being refuſed admittance, went away, threatening to return ſpeedily with a reinforcement; and during this interval, I provided myſelf with a ſoldier, whom I placed centinel at the door, within ſide, to guard me from the danger of ſuch aſſaults for the future. My lord, true to his promiſe, marched back with his auxiliaries, reinforced with a conſtable, and repeated his demand of being admitted; and my ſoldier opening the ſaſh, in order to anſwer him, according to my directions, he no ſooner perceived the red coat, than he was ſeized with ſuch a panic, that he inſtantly fled with great precipitation; and, when he recounted the adventure, like Falſtaff in the play, multiplied my guard into a whole file of muſqueteers. He alſo made a ſhift to diſcover the gentleman, who had been ſo kind as to lend me one of his company, and complained of him to the Duke of N——, in hopes of ſeeing him broke for his miſdemeanor; but in that expectation he was luckily diſappointed.

Perceiving that in England I ſhould never enjoy peace, but be continually ſubject to thoſe alarms and diſquiets which had already impaired my health and ſpirits, I reſolved to repair again to France, my beſt refuge and ſure retreat from the perſecution of my tyrant. Yet, before I took this ſtep, I endeavoured, by the advice of my friends, to conceal myſelf near Windſor; but was in a little time diſcovered by my lord, and hunted out of my lurking place accordingly. I then removed to Chelſea, where I ſuffered inconceivable uneaſineſs and agitation of mind, from the nature of my ſituation, my tranquillity being thus inceſſantly invaded by a man who could not be ſatisfied with me, and yet could not live without me: So that, though I was very much indiſpoſed, I ſet out for France,

by the way of the Hague, as the war had ſhut up all other communication, having no other attendant but my woman S———r, who, though ſhe dreaded the ſea, and was upon the brink of matrimony, would not quit me in ſuch a calamitous condition, until I was joined by my footman and other maid, whom I ordered to follow me with the baggage. But, before my departure, I ſent a meſſage to Lord ——, demanding my clothes, which he had ſeized in Eſſex; and he refuſing to deliver them, I was obliged to equip myſelf anew, upon credit.

I was ſupplied with money for my journey by my good friend L——; and, after a ſhort and pleaſant paſſage, arrived at the Hague, where I ſtaid two months, and parted with S——r, on whom I ſettled an annuity of five and twenty pounds, payable out of the proviſion which I had or might obtain from my huſband. The ſame allowance had I prevailed upon Lord B—— to grant to another maid, who attended me while I lived in his houſe.

I did not much reliſh the people in Holland, becauſe they ſeemed entirely devoted to ſelf-intereſt, without any taſte for pleaſure or politeneſs; a ſpecies of diſpoſition that could not be very agreeable to me, who always deſpiſed money, had an unbounded benevolence of heart, and loved pleaſure beyond every other conſideration. When I ſay pleaſure, I would not be underſtood to mean ſenſuality, which conſtitutes the ſupreme happineſs of thoſe only who are void of ſentiment and imagination. Nevertheleſs, I received ſome civilities in this place; and, among the reſt, the reputation of having for my lover the King of P——'s miniſter, who was young and airy, and viſited me often; circumſtances that were ſufficient to lay me under the imputation of an amour, which I frequently incurred without having given the leaſt cauſe of ſuſpicion.

Having taken leave of my Dutch friends, I departed from the Hague, in company with an Engliſh woman, whom I had choſe for that purpoſe, and arrived at Antwerp with much difficulty and danger, the highway being infeſted with robbers. After having repoſed myſelf a few days in this city, I hired a coach for myſelf, and ſet out with my companion for Bruſſels; but, before we reached Mechlin, our vehicle was attacked by two huſſars, who, with their ſabres drawn, obliged the coachman to drive

into a wood near the road. I at firſt imagined they wanted to examine our paſſports, but was ſoon too well convinced of their deſign; and, though very much ſhocked at the diſcovery, found reſolution enough to ſuppreſs my concern, ſo that it ſhould not aggravate the terrors of the young woman, who had almoſt died with apprehenſion. I even encouraged her to hope for the beſt; and, addreſſing myſelf to the robbers in French, begged, in the moſt ſuppliant manner, that they would ſpare our lives; upon which, one of them, who was a little fellow, aſſured me, in the ſame language, that we had nothing to fear for our perſons.

When we were conveyed in a ſtate of dreadful ſuſpence above three quarters of a mile into the wood, the ruffians came into the coach, and, taking my keys, which I kept ready in my hand for them, opened three large trunks that contained my baggage, and emptying them of every thing but my hoops and a few books, packed up their booty in a cloth; then robbed me of my money and jewels, even to my ſhoe-buckles and ſleeve buttons, took my footman's laced hat, and gave it, by way of gratification, to a peaſant, who came from behind the buſhes, and aſſiſted them in packing.

This affair being diſpatched, they ordered us to return to the road, by a different way from that in which we were carried into the wood; and mounting their horſes, rode off with the plunder, though not before the little fellow, who was the leaſt ferocious of the two, had come and ſhaken me by the hand, wiſhing us a good journey; a compliment which I heartily returned, being extremely well pleaſed with the retreat of two ſuch companions, who had detained us a whole half hour; during which, notwithſtanding the aſſurance I had received, I was in continual apprehenſion of ſeeing their operation concluded with the murder of us all; for I ſuppoſe they were of that gang who had ſome time before murdered a French officer, and uſed a lady extremely ill, after having rifled her of all ſhe had.

Having thus undergone pillage, and being reduce[d] the extremity of indigence in a foreign land, it is [to] be ſuppoſed that my reflections were very comfort[able] and yet, though I ſuſtained the whole damage, I wa[s]

only perſon in the company who bore the accident with any reſolution and preſence of mind. My coachman and valet ſeemed quite petrified with fear; and it was not, till I had repeated my directions, that the former drove farther into the wood, and took the firſt turning to the right, in order to regain the road, according to the command of the robbers, which I did not chooſe to diſobey.

This misfortune I ſuffered by the miſinformation I received at Antwerp, where I would have provided myſelf with an eſcort, had not I been aſſured that there was not the leaſt occaſion to put myſelf to ſuch extraordinary expence: And indeed the robbers took the only half hour in which they could have had an opportunity of plundering us; for we no ſooner returned into the highway, than we met with the French artillery coming from Bruſſels, which was a ſecurity to us during the reſt of our journey. We were afterwards informed at a ſmall village, that there was actually a large gang of deſerters, who harboured in that wood, from which they made excurſions in the neighbourhood, and kept the peaſants in continual alarms.

Having proceeded a little way, we were ſtopped by the artillery croſſing a bridge; and as the train was very long, muſt have been detained till night, had not a ſoldier informed me, that if I would take the trouble to come out of my coach, and apply to the commandant, he would order them to halt, and allow me to paſs. I took the man's advice, and was by him conducted, with much difficulty, through the crowd, to ſome officers, who ſeemed ſcarce to deſerve the name; for when I ſignified my requeſt, they neither roſe up, nor deſired me to ſit down; but lolling in their chairs, with one leg ſtretched out, aſked, with an air of diſreſpectful raillery, where I was going? and when I anſwered, "To Paris," deſired to know what I would do there.

I, who am naturally civil where I am civilly uſed, and ſaucy enough where I think myſelf treated with diſregard, was very much piqued at their inſolent and unmannerly behaviour, and began to reply to their impertinent queſtions very abruptly; ſo that a very tart dialogue would have enſued, had not the converſation been interrupted by a tall, thin, genteel young French nobleman, an officer in the army, who chancing to come in, aſked with

great politeneſs, what I would pleaſe to have? I then repeated my deſire, and produced my paſſports, by which he learned who I was. He immediately gave orders that my coach ſhould paſs; and afterwards viſited me at Paris, having obtained my permiſſion, and taken my addreſs at parting; while the others, underſtanding my name and quality, aſked pardon for their impolite carriage, which they told me was owing to the repreſentation of the ſoldier, who gave them to underſtand, that I was a ſtrolling actreſs.

I could not help laughing heartily at this miſtake, which might have proceeded from the circumſtances of my appearance, my footman having been obliged to change hats with the peaſant, and myſelf being without buckles in my ſhoes, and buttons in my riding ſhirt, while my countenance ſtill retained marks of the fear and confuſion I had undergone. After all, perhaps the fellow was a droll, and wanted to entertain himſelf at my expence.

The day was ſo far conſumed in theſe adventures, that I was obliged to take up my lodging at Mechlin, where I addreſſed myſelf to the intendant, giving him an account of the diſaſter I had met with, and deſiring I might have credit at the inn, as our whole company could not raiſe the value of a ſixpence. This gentleman, though a provincial, was polite in his way, and not only granted my requeſt, but invited me to lodge at his own houſe. I accordingly gave him my company at ſupper, but did not chooſe to ſleep in his quarters, becauſe he appeared to be what the French call *un vieux debauche.*

Next day, he ſent a trumpet to the general, with a detail of my misfortune, in hopes of retrieving what I had loſt; but, notwithſtanding all poſſible ſearch, I was fain to put up with my damage, which, in linen, laces, clothes, and baubles, amounted to upwards of ſeven hundred pounds: A loſs which never deprived me of one moment's reſt; for though I lodged at a miſerable inn, and lay in a paltry bed, I ſlept as ſound as if nothing extraordinary had happened, after I had written to London and Paris, directing that the payment of my bills of credit might be ſtopped. Indeed, I know but of two misfortunes in life capable of depreſſing my ſpirits, namely the loſs of health and friends; all others may be pre-

vented or endured. The articles of that calamity which I chiefly regretted, were a picture of Lord W—m, and ſome inimitable letters from Mr. B——.

From Mechlin I proceeded to Bruſſels, where being known, I got credit for ſome neceſſaries, and borrowed twenty guineas, to defray the expence of my journey to Paris. Having conſulted with my friends, about the ſafeſt method of travelling through Flanders, I was perſuaded to take places in the public voiture; and accordingly departed, not without fears of finding one part of the country as much infeſted with robbers as another. Nor were theſe apprehenſions aſſuaged by the converſation of my fellow-travellers, who being of the lower ſort of people, that delight in exaggerating dangers, entertained me all the way with an account of all the robberies and murders which had been committed on that road, with many additional circumſtances of their own invention.

After having been two days expoſed to this comfortable converſation, among very diſagreeable company, which is certainly one of the moſt diſagreeable ſituations in life, I arrived at Liſle, where, thinking the dangerous part of the journey was now paſt, I hired a poſt chaiſe, and in two days more reached Paris without any further moleſtation.

Upon my arrival in the capital, I was immediately viſited by my old acquaintances, who hearing my diſaſter, offered me their clothes, and inſiſted upon my wearing them, until I could be otherwiſe provided. They likewiſe engaged me in parties, with a view of amuſing my imagination, that I might not grow melancholy in reflecting upon my loſs; and deſired me to repeat the particulars of my ſtory forty times over, expreſſing great ſurpriſe at our not being murdered, or raviſhed at leaſt. As for this laſt ſpecies of outrage, the fear of it never once entered my head, otherwiſe I ſhould have been more ſhocked and alarmed than I really was: But it ſeems this was the chief circumſtance of my companion's apprehenſion: and I cannot help obſerving, that an homely woman is always more apt to entertain thoſe fears, than one whoſe perſon expoſes her to much more imminent danger. However, I now learned, that the

riſk I ran was much greater than I imagined it to be, thoſe ruffians being familiarized to rape as well as murder.

Soon after my appearance in Paris, I was favoured with the addreſſes of ſeveral French lovers; but I never had any taſte for foreigners, or indeed for any amuſement of that kind, except ſuch as were likely to be laſting, and ſettled upon a more agreeable footing than that of common gallantry. When I deviated from this principle, my conduct was the effect of compulſion, and therefore I was never eaſy under it, having been reduced to the alternative of two evils, the leaſt of which I was obliged to chooſe, as a man leaps into the ſea, in order to eſcape from a ſhip that is on fire.

Though I rejected their love, I did not refuſe their company and converſation; and though my health was conſiderably impaired by the ſhock I received in my laſt adventure, which was conſiderably greater than I at firſt imagined, and affected my companion ſo much, that ſhe did not recover her ſpirits till ſhe returned to England: I ſay, though I was for ſome time a valetudinarian, I enjoyed myſelf in great tranquillity for the ſpace of ten months, during which I was viſited by Engliſh, Scotch, and French, of all parties and perſuaſions; for pleaſure is of no faction, and that was the chief object of my purſuit; neither was I ſo ambitious of being a politician, as to employ my time and thoughts upon ſubjects which I did not underſtand.—I had admirers of all ſides, and ſhould have ſpent my time very much to my liking, had not I felt my funds ſenſibly diminiſh, without any proſpect of their being repaired; for I had been obliged to lay out a great part of the ſum allotted for my ſubſiſtence, in ſupplying my companion, my ſervant, and myſelf with neceſſaries, in lieu of thoſe which we had loſt.

Having before mine eyes the uncomfortable proſpect of wanting money in a ſtrange place, I found myſelf under the neceſſity of returning to England, where I had more reſources than I could poſſibly have among foreigners; and with that view wrote to Lord ——'s agents, deſiring that I might be enabled to diſcharge my obligations at Paris, by the payment of my pin-money. Thus a negociation commenced, and his lordſhip promiſed to remit money for the clearance of my Paris debts, which amounted

to four hundred pounds: But he would not advance one farthing more, though I gave him to underſtand, that, while he protracted the agreement, I muſt inevitably be adding to my encumbrances, and that I ſhould be as effectually detained by a debt of twenty pounds, as if I owed a thouſand. Notwithſtanding all my repreſentations, he would not part with one ſhilling over the neat ſum which I had at firſt ſtipulated; ſo that all my meaſures were rendered abortive, and I found it altogether impracticable to execute thoſe reſolutions I had formed in his favour.

Thus did he, for a mere trifle, embarraſs the woman for whom he profeſſes the moſt unlimited love, and whoſe principles he pretends to hold in the utmoſt veneration. Indeed his confidence in my integrity is not without foundation; for many wives, with one half of my provocation, would have ruined him to all intents and purpoſes; whereas, notwithſtanding all the extraordinary expences to which I have been expoſed by his continual perſecution, he never paid a ſhilling on my account except one thouſand pounds, excluſive of the ſmall allowance which was my due. In a word, ſo much time elapſed before my lord could prevail upon himſelf to advance the bare four hundred, that I was involved in freſh difficulties, from which I found it impoſſible to extricate myſelf: And though I had occaſion to write a letter to my benefactor Lord ——, in which I expreſſed my acknowledgement for paſt favours, I could not venture to ſolicit more; even when I was encouraged by a very obliging anſwer, wherein he declared, that the good qualities of my mind and heart would bind him to me in friendſhip for ever.

While I ruminated on my uncomfortable ſituation, which would neither permit me to return to England, nor to ſtay much longer where I was, a young Engliſhman of immenſe fortune took Paris in his way from Italy, accompanied by a moſt agreeable Scotchman of very good ſenſe and great vivacity. It was my good or ill fortune to become acquainted with theſe gentlemen, who having ſeen me at the opera, expreſſed a deſire of being known to me, and accordingly favoured me with a viſit one afternoon, when the briſk North Briton engroſſed the

whole converſation, while the other ſeemed fearful and diffident even to a degree of bathfulneſs, through which, however, I could decern a delicate ſenſibility and uncommon underſtanding.---There was in his perſon (which was very agreeable), as well as in his behaviour, a certain *naivete* that was very pleaſing; and at this firſt interview, we reliſhed each other's company ſo well, that a ſort of intimacy immediately commenced, and was carried on in a ſucceſſion of parties of pleaſure, in the courſe of which I found him fraught with all the tenderneſs and ſentiment that render the heart ſuſceptible of the moſt refined love; a diſpoſition that immediately made me partial to him, while it ſubjected his own heart to all the violent impreſſions of a paſſion, which I little imagined our correſpondence would have produced.

Nevertheleſs, I was far from being diſpleaſed with my conqueſt, becauſe his perſon and qualifications, as well as his manner of addreſs, were very much to my liking, and recommended him in a particular manner to my affection. Indeed, he made a greater progreſs in my heart than I myſelf ſuſpected; for there was ſomething congenial in our ſouls, which, from our firſt meeting, I believe, had attracted us (unknown to ourſelves) under the notions of friendſhip and regard, and now diſcloſed itſelf in the moſt paſſionate love.

I liſtened to his addreſſes, and we were truly happy. His attachment was the quinteſſence of tenderneſs and ſincerity, while his generoſity knew no bounds. Not contented with having paid twelve hundred pounds on my account, in the ſpace of one fortnight, he would have loaded me with preſent after preſent, had I not abſolutely refuſed to accept ſuch expenſive marks of his munificence. I was even mortified at thoſe inſtances of his liberality, which my ſituation compelled me to receive, leſt, being but little aquainted with my diſpoſition, he ſhould ſuſpect me of being intereſted in my love, and judge my conduct by the malicious reports of common fame, which (he afterwards owned) had at firſt obtained ſuch credit with him, that he believed our mutual attachment would not be of long duration. But, in this particular, he was ſoon undeceived: His heart, though naturally adapted for the melting paſſion, hath hitherto

eſcaped untouched by all the ladies of Italy and France; and therefore the firſt impreſſions were the more deeply fixed. As he was unpractiſed in the ways of common gallantry and deceit, the ſtriking ſimplicity in his character was the more likely to engage the heart of one who knew the perfidy of the world, and deſpiſed all the farce and bombaſt of faſhionable profeſſion, which I had always conſidered as the phraſe of vanity and oſtentation, rather than the genuine language of love. Beſides, gratitude had a conſiderable ſhare in augmenting my affection, which manifeſted itſelf in ſuch a warm, cordial, artleſs manner, as increaſed his eſteem, and rivetted his attachment; for he could eaſily perceive, from the whole tenor of my conduct, that my breaſt was an utter ſtranger to craft and diſſimulation; yet I was at firſt fearful of contracting any engagement with him, becauſe, being younger than me, he might be more apt to change, and the world might be malicious enough to ſuppoſe, I had practiſed upon his inexperience; but, conſcious of my own integrity, I ſet ſlander at defiance, truſting to my own behaviour, and his natural probity, for the continuance of his love. Though we did not live together in the ſame houſe, the greateſt part of our time was ſpent in each other's company;—we dined and ſupped at the ſame table, frequented public places, went upon parties to the country, and never parted, but for a few hours in the night, which we paſſed in the utmoſt impatience to meet again.

In this agreeable manner did the days roll on, when my felicity was interrupted by a fit of jealouſy with which I happened to be ſeized. I had contracted an acquaintance with a young married lady, who, though her perſonal attractions were but ſlender, was, upon the whole, an agreeable, cheerful, good-natured companion, with a little daſh of the coquette in her compoſition. This woman being in very indigent circumſtances, occaſioned by ſome loſſes her huſband had ſuſtained, no ſooner had an opportunity of ſeeing and converſing with my lover, than ſhe formed the deſign of making a conqueſt of him. I ſhould have forgiven her for this ſcheme, whatever pangs it might have coſt me, had I believed it the effect of real paſſion; but I knew her too well to ſuppoſe her heart was ſuſceptible of love, and accordingly reſented it. In the execution of her plan, ſhe neglected nothing which

ſhe thought capable of engaging his attention. She took all opportunities of ſitting near him at table, ogled him in the moſt palpable manner, directed her whole diſcourſe to him, trod upon his toes; nay, I believe, ſqueezed his hand. My blood boiled at her, though my pride, for ſome time, enabled me to conceal my uneaſineſs; till at length her behaviour became ſo arrogant and groſs, that I could no longer ſuppreſs my indignation, and one day told my lover that I would immediately renounce his correſpondence.

He was greatly alarmed at this unexpected declaration; and, when he underſtood the cauſe of it, aſſured me, that, for the future, he would never exchange one word with her. Satisfied with this mark of his ſincerity and regard, I releaſed him from this promiſe, which he could not poſſibly keep, while ſhe and I lived upon any terms; and we continued to viſit each other as uſual, though ſhe ſtill perſiſted in her endeavours to rival me in his affection, and contracted an intimacy with his companion, who ſeemed to entertain a paſſion for her, that ſhe might have the more frequent opportunities of being among us; for ſhe had no objection againſt favouring the addreſſes of both. One evening, I remember, we ſet out in my coach for the opera; and, in the way, this inamorata was ſo buſy with her feet, that I was incenſed at her behaviour; and, when we arrived at the place, refuſed to alight; but, ſetting them down, declared my intention of returning home immediately. She was ſo much pleaſed with this intimation, that ſhe could not conceal the joy ſhe felt at the thoughts of converſing with him, uninterrupted by my preſence; an opportunity with which I had never favoured her before. This open exultation increaſed my anger and anxiety. I went home; but, being ſtill tortured with the reflection of having left them together, adjuſted myſelf in the glaſs, though I was too angry to take notice of my own figure, and without farther delay returned to the opera.

Having inquired for the box in which they ſat, I took poſſeſſion of one that fronted them, and reconnoitring them, without being perceived, had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing him removed to as great a diſtance from her as the place would permit, and his head turned another way.

Compoſed by this examination, I joined them without further ſcruple, when my young gentleman expreſſed great joy at my appearance, and told me he was determined to have left the entertainment, and come in queſt of me, had not I returned at that inſtant.

In our way homewards, my rival repeated her uſual hints, and with her large hoop almoſt overſhadowed my lover from my view; upon which my jealouſy and wrath recurred with ſuch violence, that I pulled the ſtring, as a ſignal for the coachman to ſtop, with a view of getting out, and going home a-foot; a ſtep which would have afforded a new ſpectacle to the people of Paris. But I reflected in a moment upon the folly of ſuch a reſolution, and ſoon recollected myſelf, by calling my pride to my aſſiſtance. I determined, however, that ſhe ſhould act no more ſcenes of this kind in my preſence, and that ſame night inſiſted upon my lover's dropping all intercourſe and connection with this tormentor. He very cheerfully complied with my deſire, and was even glad of an occaſion to break off his acquaintance with a perſon about whom I had plagued him ſo much.

Thus was I freed from the perſecution of one of thoſe creatures, who, though of little conſequence in themſelves, are yet the peſts of ſociety, and find means to deſtroy that harmony which reigns between two lovers, by the intruſion of a looſe appetite, void of all ſenſibility and diſcretion; having no feeling themſelves, they cannot ſympathize with that of other people, and do miſchief out of mere wantonneſs.

My lover being obliged to go to England, had ſettled me in a genteel houſe in Paris, with a view of returning when his affairs ſhould be adjuſted; but, when the time of his departure approached, he began to be uneaſy at the proſpect of ſeparation, and, in order to alleviate his anxiety, deſired me to accompany him to Calais, where we ſtaid together three or four days, during which the dread of parting became more and more intenſe; ſo that we determined upon my following him into England by the firſt opportunity, where I ſhould live altogether incog. that I might be concealed from the inquiries and attempts of my lord. Even after this reſolution was fixed, we parted with all the agonies of lovers who deſpair of

ever meeting again; and the wind blowing very high after he had embarked, increaſed my fears. But, by the return of the packet-boat, I was bleſſed with the report of his being ſafe arrived in England, and had the ſatisfaction of peruſing his letters by every poſt.

My admirer being thus detached from me, my thoughts were entirely employed in concerting ſome private method of conveying myſelf to him. As I would not truſt myſelf in the common packet, for fear of being diſcovered, after having revolved divers ſchemes, I determined to tranſport myſelf in one of the Dutch fiſhing-boats, though I knew the paſſage would be hazardous; but, in a caſe of ſuch intereſting concern, I overlooked all danger and inconvenience. Before I put this reſolution in practice, I was ſo fortunate as to hear of a ſmall Engliſh veſſel that arrived at Calais with a priſoner of war, in which I embarked, with my companion and another lady, who lived with me for ſome time afterwards; and, when we came on board, diſcovered that the ſhip was no other than a light collier, and that her whole company amounted to no more than three men. Nevertheleſs, though the ſea was ſo rough, and the weather ſo unpromiſing, that no other boat would venture to put to ſea, we ſet ſail, and, between two ſtorms, in about three hours arrived in ſafety in Dover.

From hence my firſt companion went to her friends in the ſtage-coach, while the other lady and I hired an open poſt-chaiſe (though it ſnowed very hard), and without any accident performed our journey to London, where I met with my lover, who flew to my arms in all the tranſports of impatient joy; and, doubtleſs, I deſerved his affection, for the hardſhips, perils, and difficulties I had undergone to be with him; for I never ſcrupled to undertake any thing practicable, in order to demonſtrate the ſincerity of what I profeſſed.

In conſequence of our plan, I aſſumed a fictitious name, and never appeared in public, being fully ſatisfied and happy in the company and converſation of the man I loved; and, when he went into the country, contented myſelf with his correſpondence, which he punctually maintained, in a ſeries of letters equally ſenſible, ſincere, and affectionate.

Upon his return to town for the remainder of the ſeaſon, he devoted the greateſt part of his time to our mutual enjoyment; left me with reluctance, when he was called away by indiſpenſible buſineſs, and the civility which was due to his acquaintance, and very ſeldom went to any place of public entertainment, becauſe I could not accompany and ſhare with him in the diverſion; nay, ſo much did I engroſs his attention, that one evening, after he had been teazed into an agreement of meeting ſome friends at a play, he went thither preciſely at the appointed hour, and, as they did not arrive punctually at the very minute, he returned to me immediately, as much rejoiced at his eſcape as if he had met with ſome ſignal deliverance. Nor was his conſtancy inferior to the ardour of his love: We went once together to a ball in the Haymarket, where, in the midſt of a thouſand fine women, whoſe charms were enhanced by the peculiarity of the dreſſes they wore, he remained unſhaken, unſeduced, preſerving his attachment for me, in ſpite of all temptation.

In the ſummer he provided me with a houſe in the neighbourhood of his own; but the accommodations being bad, and that country affording no other place fit for my reſidence, he brought me home to his own ſeat, and by that ſtep raiſed an univerſal clamour, though I ſaw no company, and led ſuch a ſolitary life, that nothing but exceſſive love could have ſupported my ſpirits: Not but that he gave me as much of his time as he could poſſibly ſpare from the neceſſary duties of paying and receiving viſits, together with the avocations of hunting, and other country amuſements, which I could not partake. Formerly, indeed, I uſed to hunt and ſhoot, but I had left off both; ſo that I was now reduced to the alternative of reading and walking by myſelf; but love made up for all deficiences to me, who think nothing elſe worth the living for!—Had I been bleſſed with a partner for life, who could have loved ſincerely, and inſpired me with a mutual flame, I would have aſked no more of fate. Intereſt and ambition have no ſhare in my compoſition; love, which is pleaſure, or pleaſure, which is love, makes up the whole. A heart ſo diſpoſed cannot be devoid of other good qualities; it muſt be ſubject to the impreſſions of humanity and benevolence, and enemy to nothing but it-

ſelf.—This you will give me leave to affirm, in juſtice to myſelf, as I have frankly owned my failings and miſconduct.

Towards the end of ſummer, my heart was a little alarmed by a report that prevailed, of my lover's being actually engaged in a treaty of marriage; however, I gave little credit to this rumour, till I was obliged to go to town about buſineſs, and there I heard the ſame information confidently affirmed. Though I ſtill conſidered it as a vague ſurmiſe, I wrote to him an account of what I had heard; and, in his anſwer, which is ſtill in my poſſeſſion, he aſſured me, with repeated vows and proteſtations, that the report was altogether falſe. Satisfied with this declaration, I returned to his houſe; and, though the tale was inceſſantly thundered in my ears, ſtill believed it void of all foundation, till my ſuſpicion was awaked by a very inconſiderable circumſtance.

One day, on his return from hunting, I perceived he had a very fine pair of Dreſden ruffles on his ſhirt, which I could not ſuppoſe he would wear at ſuch a ruſtic exerciſe; and therefore my fears immediately took the alarm. When I queſtioned him about this particular of his dreſs, his colour changed; and though he attempted to elude my ſuſpicion, by imputing it to a miſtake of his ſervant, I could not reſt ſatisfied with this account of the matter, but inquired into the truth with ſuch eagerneſs and penetration, that he could not deny he had been to make a viſit. By degrees, I even extorted from him a confeſſion, that he had engaged himſelf farther than he ought to have proceeded, without making me acquainted with his deſign, though he endeavoured to excuſe his conduct, and pacify my diſpleaſure, by ſaying, that the affair would not be brought to bear for a great while, and perhaps might never come to a determination; but he was in great confuſion, and indeed hardly knew what he ſaid.

I would have quitted his houſe that moment, had not he before-hand obtained a promiſe that I would take no raſh reſolution of that kind, and put it out of my power to procure any method of conveyance by which I could make my retreat. I gave no vent to reproaches, but only upbraided him with his having permitted me to return in ignorance to the country, after I was once fairly gone;

upon which he ſwore that he could not bear the thoughts of parting with me. This declaration was a myſtery at that time, but I have been ſince ſo fully ſatisfied of his reaſons for his conduct, that I heartily acquit him of all injuſtice to me. And indeed, it is my ſincere opinion, that, if ever young man deſerved to be happy, he is certainly entitled to that privilege; and if I may be allowed to judge, has an heart ſuſceptible of the moſt refined enjoyment.

The violence of the grief and conſternation which I ſuffered from this ſtroke, having a little ſubſided, I deliberated with myſelf about the meaſures I ſhould take, and determined to leave his houſe ſome day when he ſhould be abroad. I was encouraged in this reſolution by the advice of our Scotch friend, who came about this time from London, on a viſit to his fellow-traveller:—We thought ſuch an abrupt departure would be leſs ſhocking than to ſtay and take a formal leave of my lover, whoſe heart was of ſuch a delicate frame, that, after I told him I ſhould one day withdraw myſelf in his abſence, he never came home from the chaſe, or any other avocation, without trembling with apprehenſion that I had eſcaped.

After he had been ſome time accuſtomed to theſe fears by my previous intimation, I at length decamped in good earneſt, though my heart ached upon the occaſion, becauſe I left him loving and beloved; for his affection was evident, notwithſtanding the ſtep he had taken, by the advice and importunity of all his relations, who laid a diſagreeable reſtraint upon his inclinations, while they conſulted his intereſt in every other particular.

While I halted in the next great town, until I could be ſupplied with freſh horſes, I was viſited by a gentleman who had been formerly intimate with my lover; but a breach had happened in their friendſhip, and he now came to complain of the treatment he had received. Perceiving that I was not in a humour to liſten to his ſtory, he ſhifted the converſation to my own, and obſerved, that I had been extremely ill uſed. I told him that I was of a different opinion; that it was not only juſt, but expedient, that a young man of Mr. ——'s fortune ſhould think of making ſome alliance to ſtrengthen and ſupport the intereſt of his family; and that I had nothing to ac-

uſe him of but his letting me remain ſo long in ignorance of his intention. He then gave me to underſtand, that was ſtill ignorant of a great part of the ill uſage I had received; affirming, that, while I lived in his houſe, he had amuſed himſelf with all the common women in that town, to ſome of whom this gentleman had perſonally introduced him.

At firſt, I could not believe this imputation; but he ſupported his aſſertions with ſo many convincing circumſtances, that I could no longer doubt the truth of them; and I felt ſo much reſentment, that my love vaniſhed immediately into air. Inſtead of proceeding in my journey to London, I went back a conſiderable way, and ſent a meſſage deſiring to ſee him in a little houſe, about midway between his own habitation and the town from whence I came. He obeyed my ſummons, and appeared at the place appointed, where I reproached him with great bitterneſs. He pleaded guilty to the charge, ſo far as acknowledging that he had correſponded with other women lately, in order to get the better of his affection for me, but the experiment had failed, and he found that he ſhould be for ever miſerable.

I did not look upon this candid confeſſion as a ſufficient atonement for his paſt diſſimulation, and, in the ſharpneſs of my revenge, demanded a ſettlement, which he peremptorily refuſed; ſo that, for the preſent, we held each other in the utmoſt contempt. Indeed, I afterwards deſpiſed myſelf for my condeſcenſion, which was owing to the advice of my companion, ſupported and inflamed by the ſpirit of reſentment. Nevertheleſs, he begged that I would return to his houſe, or ſtay all night where I was; but I was deaf to his entreaties, and, after a great deal of ironical civility on my ſide, I took my leave, and went away; yet, before I ſet out, I looked back, and ſaw him on horſeback, with ſuch an air of ſimplicity and truth, as called up a profound ſigh, notwithſtanding all that had paſſed in our converſation.

Upon my arrival in London, I took lodgings in Leiceſter-fields, and anſwered a letter which I had ſome months before received from my lord, telling him that I would go home to him, without ſtipulating for any terms to try what effect my confidence would have upon his genero-

ſity. He readily embraced the offer, and took an houſe in St. James's Street, where I propoſed to comply with his humour in every thing that was conſiſtent with my own peace and tranquillity.

Meanwhile, my lover paſſed his time very diſagreeably in the country, with his friend, of whom (it ſeems) he had conceived ſome jealouſy, which was increaſed by a letter I wrote to that gentleman, till he was made acquainted with the contents, which he read over forty times; and then his paſſion breaking out with more violence than ever, he not only expreſſed his feeling, in an epiſtle which I immediately received, but when he came to town ſuffered ſuch agonies of deſpair as I had never ſeen before, except in Lord B——. It was then in my power to have taken ample revenge upon him, as well as upon my inſolent rival, who had inſiſted upon my leaving his houſe in a very abrupt manner, though he abſolutely refuſed to gratify her malice, for he was now diſpoſed to do any thing for my ſatisfaction: But I knew his worth, and had too much regard for his reputation to adviſe him to act inconſiſtent with his honour.

About this time, many tender meetings and ſorrowful partings happened between us, till the marriage knot was tied, when he ſent me a bank note for a thouſand pounds, by way of ſpecimen (as he called it) of his friendſhip, and of what he would do for me, ſhould I ever want his aſſiſtance. This mark of his generoſity I received in a moſt tender billet, which I ſhall never part with, together with his picture ſet in diamonds.

I now employed my thoughts in keeping meaſures with my lord; we lay in the ſame apartment, and for the firſt four or five months I neither dined nor ſupped abroad above twice; and then he knew where I was, and approved of my company. But all this complacency and circumſpection had no effect upon his temper, which remained as capricious and diſſatisfied as ever. Nay, to ſuch a provoking degree did this unhappy humour prevail, that one day, in the preſence of his lawyer, he harangued upon my miſconduct ſince our laſt re-union; and very freely affirmed, that every ſtep I had taken, was diametrically oppoſite to his will.

Conſcious of the pains I had been at to pleaſe him, I

was ſo incenſed at theſe unjuſt invectives, that, ſtarting up, I told him he was a little dirty fellow; and would have left the houſe immediately, had not his lawyer, and others, who were in the next room, interpoſed, and by dint of argument and importunity diverted me from my purpoſe. By the bye, I have been informed by a perſon of rank, that my lord diſcovered exactly the ſame diſpoſition in his father's lifetime, and only changed the ſubject of his complaint from the word *father* to that of *wife*. Indeed he takes all opportunities of plaguing my dear parent, as he has juſt ſagacity enough to know, that this is the moſt effectual way he can take to diſtreſs me.

After repeated trials, I have given up all hopes of making him happy, or of finding myſelf eaſy in my ſituation; and live with him at preſent to avoid a greater inconvenience. Not that his ill-nature is all the grievance of which I complain; excluſive of the perſonal diſguſt I entertain for him, his folly is of that ſpecies which diſobliges rather than diverts, and his vanity and affectation altogether intolerable; for he actually believes himſelf, or at leaſt would impoſe himſelf upon mankind, as a pattern of gallantry and taſte; and, in point of buſineſs, a perſon of infinite ſagacity and penetration. But the moſt ridiculous part of his character is his pretended talent for politics, in which he ſo deeply concerns himſelf, that he has diſmiſſed many a good ſervant, becauſe he ſuſpected him of having wrong connections; a theme upon which he has often quarrelled with me, even almoſt to parting, accuſe me with holding correſpondence with the Earls of B— and C—, and Mr. H— V—, though I never had the leaſt acquaintance with any of theſe gentlemen, except the Earl of C—, to whom I have not ſpoken for theſe ten years paſt.

In ſhort, I have often been at a loſs to know, whether he was more mad or malicious in thoſe fits of enthuſiaſm, wherein he ſeemed tranſported with zeal for the commonwealth, and tormented me with his admonitions out of all temper and patience. At length, however, I contrived an expedient which freed me from theſe troubleſome expoſtulations, and ſilenced him effectually on the ſcore of politics. This was no other than an open avowal

of being connected with all thoſe people whom I have named. Indeed, I knew him too well to believe there was any thing ſolid in his intention or profeſſions, even when he carried himſelf ſo far as to demand a private audience of the k——, in order to communicate a ſcheme for ſuppreſſing the rebellion; and that being denied, ſolicited the Duke of D——'s intereſt, for permiſſion to raiſe and head a regiment of Kentiſh ſmugglers: Nay, to ſuch a pitch did his loyalty ſoar, that he purchaſed a firelock of particular mechaniſm, calculated for the ſafety of the bearer, in caſe he had been placed centinel at his Majeſty's door, and kept his horſes ready capariſoned, with a view of attending his ſovereign to the field. Notwithſtanding all theſe pompous preparations, had he been put to the proof, he would have infallibly crept out of his engagements, through ſome ſneaking evaſion, his imagination being very fertile in ſuch ſaving pretences. Yet he will talk ſometimes ſo fervently, and even ſenſibly, on the ſubject, that a ſtranger would miſtake him for a man of underſtanding, and determined zeal for the good of his country.

Since my laſt return to his houſe, that act of parliament paſſed, by which he was enabled to pay his debts, and, among the reſt, a thouſand pounds of my contracting, the only burden of that kind I ever entailed upon him, excluſive of my pin-money, which was never regularly paid; nor would he have been ſubject to this, had he not, by his perſecution and purſuit, expoſed me to an extraordinary expence. I have alſo had it in my power to reward ſome of my faithful Abigails; in particular, to relieve from extreme diſtreſs that maid to whom (as I have already obſerved) Lord B— granted an annuity, which ſhe had ſold; ſo that ſhe was reduced to the moſt abject poverty, and I found her in a diſmal hole, with two infants, periſhing for want; a ſpectacle which drew tears from my eyes, and indeed could not but make deep impreſſion upon an heart like mine, which the miſery of my fellow-creatures never failed to melt.

Nor did I upon this occaſion forget the attachment and fidelity of my other woman Mrs. S—, who hearing I was robbed in my paſſage through Flanders, had generouſly relinquiſhed the allowance I had ſettled upon her at part-

ing. The exerciſe of ſuch acts of humanity and benevolence, and the pleaſure of ſeeing my dear and tender parent often, in ſome meaſure alleviate the chagrin to which I am ſubject from the diſagreeable diſpoſition of my lord, who, conſiſtent with his former inconſiſtency, upon our laſt reconciliation, cheerfully agreed to a propoſal I made of having concerts in the houſe, and even approved of the ſcheme with marks of particular ſatisfaction: But before one half of the winter was expired, he found means to baniſh all the company, beginning with Lord R— B—, who, as he walked up ſtairs one evening, was ſtopped by a footman, who plainly told him he had orders to ſay to him in particular, that his lordſhip was not at home; yet the very next day, perceiving that nobleman and me walking together in the park, he joined us with an air of alacrity, as if no ſuch thing had happened, and even behaved to Lord R— with the moſt fawning complaiſance. His deportment was equally abſurd and impertinent to the reſt of his friends, who forſook us gradually, being tired of maintaining any friendly communication with ſuch a diſagreeable compoſition of ignorance and arrogance. For my own part, I look upon him as utterly incorrigible; and, as fate hath ſubjected me to his power, endeavour to make the bitter draught go down, by detaching myſelf as much as poſſible from the ſuppoſition that there is any ſuch exiſtence upon earth. Indeed, if I had not fatal experience to the contrary, I ſhould be apt to believe that ſuch a character is not to be found among the ſons of men; becauſe his conduct is altogether unaccountable by the known rules and maxims of life, and falls entirely under the poet's obſervation, when he ſays,

'Tis true, no meaning puzzles more than wit.

Her ladyſhip having thus concluded her ſtory, to the entertainment of the company, and the admiration of Peregrine, who expreſſed his aſtoniſhment at the variety of adventures ſhe had undergone, which was ſuch as he thought ſufficient to deſtroy the moſt hardy and robuſt conſtitution, and therefore infinitely more than enough to overwhelm one of her delicate frame; one of the gentlemen preſent roundly taxed her with want of candour,

in ſuppreſſing ſome circumſtances of her life, which he thought eſſential in the conſideration of her character.

She reddened at this peremptory charge, which had an evident effect upon the countenances of the whole audience, when the accuſer proceeded to explain his imputation, by obſerving, that, in the courſe of her narration, ſhe had omitted to mention a thouſand acts of uncommon charity, of which he himſelf knew her to be guilty; and that ſhe had concealed a great many advantageous propoſals of marriage, which ſhe might have accepted before ſhe was engaged.

The company were agreeably undeceived by this explanation; which her ladyſhip acknowledged in very polite terms, as a compliment equally genteel and unexpected: And our hero, after having teſtified the ſenſe he had of her complaiſance and condeſcenſion, in regaling him with a mark of her confidence and eſteem, took his leave, and went home in a ſtate of confuſion and perplexity; for, from the circumſtances of the tale he had heard, he plainly perceived, that her ladyſhip's heart was too delicate to receive ſuch incenſe, as he, in the capacity of an admirer, could at preſent pay; becauſe, though he had in ſome meaſure abridged the empire of Emilia in his own breaſt, it was not in his power to reſtrain it ſo effectually, but that it would interfere with any other ſovereign whom his thoughts ſhould adopt; and, unleſs Lady —— could engroſs his whole love, time, and attention, he foreſaw that it would be impoſſible for him to ſupport the paſſion which he might have the good fortune to inſpire. He was, moreover, deterred from declaring his love, by the fate of her former admirers, who ſeemed to have been wound up to a degree of enthuſiaſm, that looked more like the effect of enchantment, than the inſpiration of human attractions; an ecſtaſy of paſſion which he durſt not venture to undergo. He therefore reſolved to combat with the impreſſions he had already received, and, if poſſible, cultivate her friendſhip without ſoliciting her affection: But, before he could fix upon this determination, he deſired to know the footing on which he ſtood in her opinion; and, by the intelligence of Crabtree, obtained in the uſual manner, underſtood that her ſentiments of him were very favourable, though without the

leaſt tincture of love. He would have been tranſported with joy, had her thoughts of him been of a more tender texture; though his reaſon was better pleaſed with the information he received; in conſequence of which he muſtered up the ideas of his firſt paſſion, and ſet them in oppoſition to thoſe of this new and dangerous attachment; by which means he kept the balance *in æquilibrio*, and his boſom tolerably quiet.

CHAPTER LXXXII.

He perſuades Cadwallader to aſſume the character of a magician, in which he acquires a great ſhare of reputation, by his reſponſes to three females of diſtinction, who ſeverally conſult the reſearches of his art.

His heart being thus, as it were, ſuſpended between two objects that leſſened the force of each other's attraction, he took this opportunity of enjoying ſome reſpite, and for the preſent detached his ſentiments from both, reſolving to indulge himſelf in the exerciſe of that practical ſatire which was ſo agreeable and peculiar to his diſpoſition. In this laudable determination he was confirmed by the repeated ſuggeſtions of his friend Cadwallader, who taxed him with letting his talents ruſt in indolence, and ſtimulated his natural vivacity with a ſucceſſion of freſh diſcoveries in the world of ſcandal.

Peregrine was now ſeized with a ſtrange whim, and when he communicated the conceit to Cadwallader, it in a moment acquired his approbation. This notion he imparted in a propoſal to ſubject the town to their ridicule, by giving reſponſes in the character of a profeſſed conjurer, to be perſonated by the old miſanthrope, whoſe aſpect was extremely well calculated for the purpoſe. The plan was immediately adjuſted in all its parts; an apartment hired in a houſe accommodated with a public ſtair, ſo that people might have free ingreſs and egreſs, without being expoſed to obſervation; and this tenement being furniſhed with the apparatus of a magician, ſuch as globes, teleſcopes, a magic lanthorn, a ſkeleton, a dried monkey, together with the ſkins of an alligator, otter,

and ſnake, the conjurer himſelf took poſſeſſion of his caſtle, after having diſtributed printed advertiſements, containing the particulars of his undertaking.

Theſe bills ſoon operated according to the wiſh of the projectors. As the price of the oracle was fixed at half a guinea, the public naturally concluded that the author was no common fortune-teller; and the very next day, Peregrine found ſome ladies of his quality acquaintance infected with the deſire of making an experiment upon the ſkill of this new conjurer, who pretended to be juſt arrived from the Mogul's empire, where he had learned the art from a Brachman philoſopher. Our young gentleman affected to talk of the pretenſions of this ſage with ridicule and contempt, and with ſeeming reluctance undertook to attend them to his apartment, obſerving that it would be a very eaſy matter to detect the fellow's ignorance, and no more than common juſtice to chaſtiſe him for his preſumption. Though he could eaſily perceive a great fund of credulity in the company, they affected to eſpouſe his opinion, and, under the notion of a frolic, agreed that one particular lady ſhould endeavour to baffle his art, by appearing before him in the dreſs of her woman, who ſhould at the ſame time perſonate her miſtreſs, and be treated as ſuch by our adventurer, who promiſed to ſquire them to the place. Theſe meaſures being concerted, and the appointment fixed for the next audience day, Peregrine furniſhed his friend with the neceſſary information; and when the hour of aſſignation arrived, conducted his charge to this oraculous ſeer.

They were admitted by our hero's valet de chambre, whoſe viſage, being naturally meagre and ſwarthy, was adorned with artificial whiſkers; ſo that he became the Perſian dreſs which he wore, and ſeemed a very proper maſter of the ceremonies to an oriental necromancer. Having croſſed his arms upon his breaſts, with an inclination of the head, he ſtalked in ſolemn ſilence before them into the penetralia of the temple where they found the conjurer ſitting at a table, provided with pen, ink, and paper, divers books, and mathematical inſtruments, and a long white wand lying acroſs the whole. He was habited in a black gown and fur cap: His countenance, over and above a double proportion of philoſophic gravity,

which he had aſſumed for the occaſion, was improved by a thick beard, white as ſnow, that reached to his middle, and upon each ſhoulder ſat a prodigious large black cat which had been tutored for the purpoſe.

Such a figure, which would have ſtartled Peregrine himſelf, had not he been concerned in the myſtery, could not fail to make an impreſſion upon thoſe whom he accompanied. The fictitious chambermaid, in ſpite of all her natural pertneſs and vivacity, changed colour when ſhe entered the room, while the pretended lady, whoſe intellects were not quite ſo enlightened, began to tremble in every joint, and ejaculate petitions to heaven for her ſafety. Their conductor, advancing to the table, preſented his offering, and, pointing to the maid, told him, that lady deſired to know what would be her deſtiny in point of marriage. The philoſopher, without lifting up his eyes to view the perſon in whoſe behalf he was conſulted, turned his ear to one of the ſable familiars that purred upon his ſhoulder, and, taking up the pen, wrote upon a detached ſlip of paper theſe words, which Peregrine, at the deſire of the ladies, repeated aloud: "Her deſtiny will, in a great meaſure, depend upon what happened to her about nine o'clock in the morning on the third day of laſt December."

This ſentence was no ſooner pronounced, than the counterfeit lady ſcreamed, and ran out into the anti-chamber, exclaiming, "Chriſt have mercy upon us! Sure he is the devil incarnate!" Her miſtreſs, who followed her with great conſternation, inſiſted upon knowing the tranſaction to which the reſponſe alluded; and Mrs. Abigail, after ſome recollection, gave her to underſtand that ſhe had an admirer, who, on that very hour and day mentioned by the cunning man, had addreſſed himſelf to her in a ſerious propoſal of marriage. This explanation, however, was more ingenious than candid; for the admirer was no other than the identical Mr. Pickle himſelf, who was a mere dragon among the chambermaids, and in his previous information communicated to his aſſociate, had given an account of this aſſignation, with which he had been favoured by the damſel in queſtion.

Our hero ſeeing his company very much affected with the circumſtance of the wizzard's art, which had almoſt

frightened both miſtreſs and maid into hyſteric fits, pretended to laugh them out of their fears, by obſerving that there was nothing extraordinary in this inſtance of his knowledge, which might have been acquired by ſome of thoſe ſecret emiſſaries whom ſuch impoſtors are obliged to employ for intelligence, or imparted by the lover himſelf, who had, perhaps, come to conſult him about the ſucceſs of his amour. Encouraged by this obſervation, or rather prompted by an inſatiable curioſity, which was proof againſt all ſorts of apprehenſion, the diſguiſed lady returned to the magician's own apartment, and aſſuming the air of a pert chamber-maid, "Mr. Conjurer (ſaid ſhe), now you have ſatisfied my miſtreſs, will you be ſo good as to tell me, if ever I ſhall be married!" The ſage, without the leaſt heſitation, favoured her with an anſwer, in the following words: "You cannot be married before you are a widow; and whether or not that will ever be the caſe, is a queſtion which my art cannot reſolve, becauſe my foreknowledge exceeds not the term of thirty years."

This reply, which at once cut her off from the pleaſing proſpect of ſeeing herſelf independent in the enjoyment of youth and fortune, in a moment clouded her aſpect; all her good humour was overcaſt, and ſhe went away, without further inquiry, muttering in the rancour of her chagrin, that he was a ſilly impertinent fellow, and a mere quack in his profeſſion. Notwithſtanding the prejudice of this reſentment, her conviction ſoon recurred; and when the report of his anſwers was made to thoſe confederates by whom ſhe had been deputed to make trial of his ſkill, they were univerſally perſuaded that his art was altogether ſupernatural, though each affected to treat it with contempt, reſolving in her own breaſt to have recourſe to him in private.

In the mean time, the maid, though laid under the moſt peremptory injunctions of ſecrecy, was ſo full of the circumſtance which related to her own conduct, that ſhe extolled his preſcience, in whiſpers to all acquaintances, aſſuring them, that he had told her all the particulars of her life; ſo that his fame was almoſt inſtantaneouſly conveyed, through a thouſand different channels, to all parts of the town; and the very next time he aſſumed the chair, his doors were beſieged by curious people of all ſects and denominations.

Being an old practitioner in this art, Cadwallader knew it would be impoſſible for him to ſupport his reputation in the promiſcuous exerciſe of fortune-telling, becauſe every perſon that ſhould come to conſult him would expect a ſample of his ſkill relating to things paſt; and it could not be ſuppoſed that he was acquainted with the private concerns of every individual who might apply to him for that purpoſe: He therefore ordered his miniſter, whom he diſtinguiſhed by the name of Hadgi Rourk, to ſignify to all thoſe who demanded entrance, that his price was half a guinea; and that all ſuch as were not diſpoſed to gratify him with that conſideration, would do well to leave the paſſage free for the reſt.

This declaration ſucceeded to his wiſh; for this congregation conſiſted chiefly of footmen, chamber-maids, 'prentices, and the lower claſs of tradeſmen, who could not afford to purchaſe preſcience at ſuch a price; ſo that, after fruitleſs offers of ſhillings and half crowns, they dropped off one by one, and left the field open for cuſtomers of an high rank.

The firſt perſon of this ſpecies who appeared was dreſſed like the wife of a ſubſtantial tradeſman; but this diſguiſe could not ſcreen her from the penetration of the conjurer, who at firſt ſight knew her to be one of the ladies of whoſe coming he had been appriſed by Peregrine, on the ſuppoſition that their curioſity was rather inflamed than allayed by the intelligence they had received from his firſt client. This lady approached the philoſopher with that intrepidity of countenance ſo conſpicuous in matrons of her dignified ſphere, and in a ſoft voice, aſked with a ſimper, of what complexion her next child would be? The necromancer, who was perfectly well acquainted with her private hiſtory, forthwith delivered his reſponſe in the following queſtion, written in the uſual form: "How long has Pompey the black been diſmiſſed from your ladyſhip's ſervice?"

Endued as ſhe was with a great ſhare of that fortitude which is diſtinguiſhed by the appellation of effrontery, her face exhibited ſome ſigns of ſhame and confuſion at the receipt of this oracular interrogation, by which ſhe was convinced of his extraordinary intelligence; and accoſting him in a very ſerious tone, "Doctor (ſaid he), I per-

ceive you are a perſon of great abilities in the art you profeſs; and therefore, without pretending to diſſemble, I will own you have touched the true ſtring of my apprehenſions. I am perſuaded I need not be more particular in my inquiries. Here is a purſe of money; take it, and deliver me from a moſt alarming and uneaſy ſuſpenſe."—So ſaying, ſhe depoſited her offering upon the table, and waited for his anſwer, with a face of fearful expectation, while he was employed in writing this ſentence for her peruſal; "Though I ſee into the womb of time, the proſpect is not perfectly diſtinct; the ſeeds of future events lie mingled and confuſed: So that I am under the neceſſity of aſſiſting my divination in ſome caſes, by analogy and human intelligence; and cannot poſſibly ſatisfy your preſent doubts, unleſs you will condeſcend to make me privy to all thoſe occurrences which you think might have interfered with the cauſe of your apprehenſion."

The lady having read the declaration, affected a ſmall emotion of ſhyneſs and repugnance, and ſeating herſelf upon a ſettee, after having cautiouſly informed herſelf of the privacy of the apartment, gave ſuch a detail of the ſucceſſion of her lovers, as amazed while it entertained the necromancer, as well as his friend Pickle, who, from a cloſet in which he had concealed himſelf, overheard every ſyllable of her confeſſion.—Cadwallader liſtened to her ſtory with a look of infinite importance and ſagacity, and after a ſhort pauſe told her, that he would not pretend to give a categorical anſwer, until he ſhould have deliberated maturely upon the various circumſtances of the affair; but if ſhe would take the trouble of honouring him with another viſit on his next public day, he hoped he ſhould be able to give her full ſatisfaction. Conſcious of the importance of her doubts, ſhe could not help commending his caution, and took her leave, with a promiſe of returning at the appointed time: Then the conjurer being joined by his aſſociate, they gave a looſe to their mirth, which having indulged, they began to concert meaſures for inflicting ſome diſgraceful puniſhment on the ſhameleſs and inſatiate termagant who had ſo impudently avowed her own proſtitution.

They were interrupted, however, in their conference, by the arrival of a new gueſt, who being announced by

Hadgi, our hero retreated to his lurking place, and Cadwallader reſumed his myſterious appearance. This new client, though ſhe hid her face in a maſk, could not conceal herſelf from the knowledge of the conjurer, who by her voice recognized her to be an unmarried lady of his own acquaintance. She had, within a ſmall compaſs of time, made herſelf remarkable for two adventures, which had not at all ſucceeded to her expectation: Being very much addicted to play, ſhe had, at a certain rout, indulged that paſſion to ſuch exceſs, as not only got the better of her juſtice, but alſo of her circumſpection; ſo that ſhe was unfortunately detected in her endeavours to appropriate to herſelf what was not lawfully her due. This ſmall ſlip was attended with another indiſcretion, which had likewiſe an unlucky effect upon her reputation. She had been favoured with the addreſſes of one of thoſe hopeful heirs who ſwarm and ſwagger about town, under the denomination of bucks; and, in the confidence of his honour, conſented to be one of a party that made an excurſion as far as Windſor, thinking herſelf ſecured from ſcandal by the company of another young lady, who had alſo condeſcended to truſt her perſon to the protection of her admirer. The two gallants, in the courſe of this expedition, were ſaid to uſe the moſt perfidious means to intoxicate the paſſions of their miſtreſſes, by mixing drugs with their wine, which inflamed their conſtitutions to ſuch a degree, that they fell an eaſy ſacrifice to the appetites of their conductors, who, upon their return to town, were ſo baſe and inhuman as to boaſt among their companions of the exploit they had achieved. Thus the ſtory was circulated, with a thouſand additional circumſtances to the prejudice of the ſufferers, one of whom had thought proper to withdraw into the country, until the ſcandal raiſed at her expence ſhould ſubſide; while the other, who was not ſo eaſily put out of countenance, reſolved to outface the report, as a treacherous aſperſion, invented by her lover as an excuſe for his own inconſtancy; and actually appeared in public, as uſual, till ſhe found herſelf neglected by the greateſt part of her acquaintance.

In conſequence of this diſgrace, which ſhe knew not whether to impute to the card affair, or to the laſt *faux pas* ſhe had committed, ſhe now came to conſult the con-

tinguiſhed. This obſervation might be proved and illuſtrated by a thouſand undeniable examples, out of which I ſhall only ſelect one inſtance, for the entertainment and edification of the company: A very honeſt gentleman, remarkable for the gravity of his deportment, was one day in a certain coffeehouſe accoſted by one of his particular friends, who, taking him by the hand, expreſſed uncommon ſatisfaction in ſeeing him abroad, and in good health, after the dangerous and portentous malady he had undergone. Surpriſed at this ſalutation, the gentleman replied, it was true, he had been a little out of order over night, but there was nothing at all extraordinary in his indiſpoſition. "Jeſu! not extraordinary! (cried the other) when you vomited three black crows." This ſtrange exclamation the grave gentleman at firſt miſtook for raillery, though his friend was no joker; but perceiving in him all the marks of ſincerity and aſtoniſhment, he ſuddenly changed his opinion, and, after a ſhort reverie, taking him aſide, expreſſed himſelf in theſe words—"Sir, it is not unknown to you, that I am at preſent engaged in a treaty of marriage, which would have been ſettled long ago, had it not been retarded by the repeated machinations of a certain perſon who profeſſed himſelf my rival. Now I am fully perſuaded that this affair of the three crows is a ſtory of his invention, calculated to prejudice me in the opinion of the lady, who, to be ſure, would not chooſe to marry a man who has a rookery in his bowels; and therefore I muſt inſiſt upon knowing your author of this ſcandalous report, that I may be able to vindicate my character from the malicious aſperſion." His friend, who thought the demand was very reaſonable, told him, without heſitation, that he was made acquainted with the circumſtance of his diſtemper by Mr. Such-a-one, their common acquaintance; upon which the perſon who conceived himſelf injured went immediately in queſt of his ſuppoſed defamer, and, having found him, "Pray Sir (ſaid he, with a peremptory tone), who told you that I vomited three black crows?"—"Three? (anſwered the gentleman) I mentioned two only."—"Zounds! Sir (cried the other, incenſed at his indifference), you will find the two too many, if you refuſe to diſcover the villanous ſource of ſuch calumny." The gentleman, ſur-

priſed at his heat, ſaid he was ſorry to find he had been the accidental inſtrument of giving him offence, but tranſlated the blame (if any there was) from himſelf to a third perſon, to whoſe information he owed his knowledge of the report. The plaintiff, according to the direction he received, repaired to the houſe of the accuſed; and his indignation being inflamed at finding the ſtory had already circulated among his acquaintance, he told him, with evident marks of diſpleaſure, that he was come to pluck that ſame brace of crows which he ſaid he had diſgorged. The defendant ſeeing him very much irritated, poſitively denied that he had mentioned a brace: "One indeed (ſaid he) I own I took notice of, upon the authority of your own phyſician, who gave me an account of it this morning."—"By the Lord! (cried the ſufferer, in a rage, which he could no longer contain) that raſcal has been ſuborned by my rival to ſlander my character in this manner; but I'll be revenged, if there be either law or equity in England." He had ſcarce pronounced theſe words, when the doctor happened to enter the room; when his exaſperated patient lifting up his cane, "Sirrah (ſaid he) if I live, I'll make that black crow the blackeſt circumſtance of thy whole life and converſation." The phyſician, confounded at this addreſs, aſſured him that he was utterly ignorant of his meaning, and, when the other gentleman explained it, abſolutely denied the charge, affirming he had ſaid no more than that he had vomited a quantity of ſomething as black as a crow. The landlord of the houſe acknowledged that he might have been miſtaken; and thus the whole myſtery was explained.

The company ſeeming to reliſh the ſtory of the three black crows, which they conſidered as an impromptu of Cadwallader's own invention; but, granting it to be true, they unanimouſly declared that it could have no weight in invalidating the teſtimony of divers perſons of honour, who had been witneſſes of the magician's ſupernatural ſkill. On the next day of conſultation, the necromancer being in the chair, and his friend behind the curtain, the outward door was ſcarce opened, when a female viſitant flounced in, and diſcovered to the magician the features of one of thoſe inquiſitive ladies, whoſe curioſity, he knew, his confederate had arouſed, in the manner above de-

ſcribed. She addreſſed herſelf to him with a familiar air, obſerving, that ſhe had heard much of his great knowledge, and was come to be a witneſs of his art, which ſhe deſired him to diſplay, in declaring what he knew to be her ruling paſſion.

Cadwallader, who was no ſtranger to her diſpoſition, aſſumed the pen without heſitation, and furniſhed her with an anſwer, importing, that the love of money predominated, and ſcandal poſſeſſed the next place in her heart. Far from being offended at his freedom, ſhe commended his frankneſs with a ſmile; and, ſatisfied of his uncommon talents, expreſſed a deſire of being better acquainted with his perſon; nay, ſhe began to catechiſe him, upon the private hiſtory of divers great families, in which he happened to be well verſed; and he, in a myſterious manner, dropt ſuch artful hints of his knowledge, that ſhe was amazed at his capacity, and actually aſked if his art was communicable. The conjurer replied in the affirmative; but, at the ſame time, gave her to underſtand, that it was attainable by thoſe only who were pure and undefiled in point of chaſtity and honour, or ſuch as, by a long courſe of penitence, had weaned themſelves from all attachments to the fleſh. She not only diſapproved, but ſeemed to doubt the truth of this aſſertion; telling him, with a look of diſdain, that his art was not worth having, if one could not uſe it for the benefit of one's pleaſure; ſhe had even penetration enough to take notice of an inconſiſtency in what he had advanced; and aſked, why he himſelf exerciſed his knowledge for hire, if he was ſo much detached from all worldly concerns. "Come, come, doctor (added ſhe) you are in the right to be cautious againſt impertinent curioſity; but, perhaps, I may make it worth your while to be communicative."

Theſe overtures were interrupted by a rap at the door, ſignifying the approach of another client; upon which the lady inquired for his private paſſage, through which ſhe might retire, without the riſk of being ſeen; when ſhe underſtood he was deficient in that convenience, ſhe withdrew into an empty room adjoining to the audience chamber, in order to conceal herſelf from the obſervation of the new-comer. This was no other than the ina-

morata, who came by appointment to receive the ſolution of her doubts; and the miſanthrope, glad of an opportunity to expoſe her to the cenſure of ſuch an indefatigable miniſter of fame as the perſon, who, he knew, would liſten from the next apartment, laid her under the neceſſity of refreſhing his remembrance with a recapitulation of her former confeſſion, which was almoſt finiſhed, when ſhe was alarmed by a noiſe at the door, occaſioned by two gentlemen, who attempted to enter by force.

Terrified at this uproar, which diſconcerted the magician himſelf, ſhe ran for ſhelter into the place which was pre-occupied by the other lady, who, hearing this diſturbance, had cloſed the window ſhutters, that ſhe might have the better chance of remaining unknown. Here they enſconced themſelves in the utmoſt conſternation, while the necromancer, after ſome recollection, ordered Hadgi to open the door, and admit the rioters, who, he hoped, would be overawed by the authority of his appearance. The janitor had no ſooner obeyed his inſtructions, than in ruſhed a young libertine, who had been for ſome time upon the town, together with his tutor, who was a worn-out debauchee, well known to the magician. They were both in that degree of intoxication neceſſary to prepare ſuch diſpoſitions for what they commonly call frolics, and the ſober part of mankind feel to be extravagant outrages againſt the laws of their country, and the peace of their fellow-ſubjects. Having ſtaggered up to the table, the ſenior, who undertook to be ſpokeſman, ſaluted Cadwallader with, "How do'ſt do, old Capricorn? Thou ſeem'ſt to be a moſt venerable pimp, and, I doubt not, haſt abundance of diſcretion. Here is this young whoremaſter (a true chip of the old venereal block his father) and myſelf, come for a comfortable caſt of thy function. I don't mean that ſtale pretence of conjuring; damn futurity; let us live for the preſent, old Haly. Conjure me up a couple of hale wenches, and, I warrant, we ſhall get into the magic circle in a twinkling. What ſays Galileo? What ſays the Reverend Brahe? Here is a purſe, you pimp: Hark, how it chinks! This is ſweeter than the muſic of the ſpheres."

Our necromancer, perplexed at this rencounter, made

no reply; but, taking up his wand, waved it around his head in a very myſterious motion, with a view of intimidating theſe forward viſitants, who, far from being awed by this ſort of evolution, became more and more obſtreperous, and even threatened to pull him by the beard, if he would not immediately comply with their deſire. Had he called his aſſociate, or even Hadgi, to his aid, he knew he could have ſoon calmed their turbulence; but, being unwilling to run the riſk of a diſcovery, or even of a riot, he bethought himſelf of chaſtiſing their inſolence in another manner that would be leſs hazardous, and rather more effectual. In conſequence of this ſuggeſtion, he pointed his wand towards the door of the apartment in which the ladies had taken ſanctuary; and the two rakes, underſtanding the hint, ruſhed in without heſitation.

The females, finding their place of retreat taken by aſſault, ran about the room in great conſternation, and were immediately taken priſoners by the aſſailants, who, pulling them towards the windows, opened the ſhutters at the ſame inſtant of time, when, ſtrange to tell! one of the heroes diſcovered in the prize he had made, the very wife of his boſom; and his companion perceived that he had ſtumbled in the dark upon his own mother. Their mutual aſtoniſhment was unſpeakable at this eclairciſſement, which produced an univerſal ſilence for the ſpace of ſeveral minutes. During this pauſe the ladies having recollected themſelves, an expoſtulation was begun by the elder of the two, who roundly took her ſon to talk for his diſorderly life, which laid her under the diſagreeable neceſſity of watching his motions, and detecting him in ſuch an infamous place.

While the careful mother thus exerciſed her talent for reprehenſion, the hopeful young gentleman, with an hand in each fob, ſtood whiſtling an opera tune, without ſeeming to pay the moſt profound regard to his parent's reproof; and the other lady, in imitation of ſuch a conſummate pattern, began to open upon her huſband, whom ſhe bitterly reproached with his looſeneſs and intemperance, demanding to know what he had to allege in alleviation of his preſent miſconduct. The ſurpriſe occaſioned by ſuch an unexpected meeting, had already in a great meaſure deſtroyed the effects of the wine he had ſo plen-

tifully drank, and the firſt uſe he made of his recovered ſobriety, was to revolve within himſelf the motives that could poſſibly induce his wife to give him the rendezvous in this manner. As he had good reaſon to believe ſhe was utterly void of jealouſy, he naturally placed this rencounter to the account of another paſſion; and his chagrin was not at all impaired by the effrontery with which ſhe now preſumed to reprimand him. He liſtened to her, therefore, with a grave or rather grim aſpect; and to the queſtion with which ſhe concluded her rebuke, anſwered, with great compoſure, "All that I have to allege, Madam, is, that the bawd has committed a miſtake, in conſequence of which we are both diſappointed; and ſo, ladies, your humble ſervant." So ſaying, he retired with manifeſt confuſion in his looks; and as he paſſed through the audience-chamber, eying the conjurer aſkance, pronounced the epithet of *precious raſcal*, with great emphaſis. Meanwhile, the junior, like a dutiful child, handed his mamma to her chair; and the other client, after having reviled the necromancer, becauſe he could not foreſee this event, went away in a ſtate of mortification.

The coaſt being clear, Peregrine came forth from his den, and congratulated his friend upon the peaceable iſſue of the adventure which he had overheard; but, that he might not be expoſed to ſuch inconvenience for the future, they reſolved, that a grate ſhould be fixed in the middle of the outward door, through which the conjurer himſelf might reconnoitre all the viſitants, before their admiſſion; ſo that, to thoſe whoſe appearance he might not like, Hadgi ſhould, without opening, give notice, that his maſter was engaged. By this expedient too, they provided againſt thoſe difficulties which Cadwallader muſt have encountered, in giving ſatisfaction to ſtrangers, whom he did not know: for the original intention of the founders, was to confine the practice of their art to people of faſhion only, moſt of whom were perſonally known to the counterfeit magician and his coadjutors.

Indeed theſe aſſociates, Cadwallader in particular, notwithſtanding his boaſted inſight into the characters of life, never imagined that his pretended ſkill would be conſulted by any but the weaker minded of the female ſex, incited by that ſpirit of curioſity which he knew was implanted

in their nature; but, in the courſe of his practice, he found himſelf cultivated in his preternatural capacity by people of all ſexes, complexions, and degrees of reputation, and had occaſion to obſerve, that, when the paſſions are concerned, howſoever cool, cautious, and deliberate the diſpoſition may otherwiſe be, there is nothing ſo idle, frivolous, or abſurd, to which they will not apply for encouragement and gratification. The laſt occurrence, according to the hopes and expectation of the confederates, was whiſpered about by the ladies concerned, in ſuch a manner, that the whole affair was in a few days the univerſal topic of diſcourſe, in which it was retailed with numberleſs embelliſhments, invented by the parties themſelves, who had long indulged a pique at each other, and took this opportunity of enjoying their revenge.

Theſe incidents, while they regaled the ſpleen, at the ſame time augmented the renown of the conjurer, who was deſcribed on both ſides as a very extraordinary perſon in his way; and the alteration in his door was no ſooner performed, than he had occaſion to avail himſelf of it, againſt the intruſion of a great many, with whom he would have found it very difficult to ſupport the fame he had acquired.

Among thoſe who appeared at his grate, he perceived a certain clergyman, whom he had long known an humble attendant on the great, and with ſome the reputed miniſter of their pleaſures. This Levite had diſguiſed himſelf in a great coat, boots, and dreſs quite foreign to the habit worn by thoſe of his function; and, being admitted, attempted to impoſe himſelf as a country ſquire upon the conjurer, who, calling him by his name, deſired him to ſit down. This reception correſponding with the report he had heard, touching our magician's art, the doctor ſaid he would lay aſide all diſſimulation. After having profeſſed an implicit belief, that his ſupernatural knowledge did not proceed from any communication with evil ſpirits, but was the immediate gift of heaven, he declared the intention of his coming, was to inquire into the health of a good friend and brother of his, who poſſeſſed a certain living in the country, which he named; and, as he was old and infirm, to know what ſpace of time was allotted to him in this frail ſtate of mortality, that he might have

he melancholy ſatisfaction of attending him in his laſt moments, and aſſiſting him in his preparations for eternity.

The conjurer, who at once perceived the purport of this queſtion, after a ſolemn pauſe, during which he ſeemed abſorbed in contemplation, delivered this reſponſe to his conſulter: "Though I foreſee ſome occurrences, I do not pretend to be omniſcient. I know not to what age that clergyman's life will extend, but ſo far I can penetrate into the womb of time, as to diſcern, that the incumbent will ſurvive his intended ſucceſſor." This dreadful ſentence in a moment baniſhed the blood from the face of the appalled conſulter, who, hearing his own doom pronounced, began to tremble in every joint; he lifted up his eyes in the agony of fear, and ſaying, "The will of God be done," withdrew in ſilent deſpondence, his teeth chattering with terror and diſmay.

This client was ſucceeded by an old man about the age of ſeventy-five, who being reſolved to purchaſe a leaſe, deſired to be determined in the term of years by the necromancer's advice, obſerving, that, as he had no children of his own body, and had no regard for his heirs at law, the purchaſe would be made with a view to his own convenience only; and therefore, conſidering his age, he himſelf heſitated in the period of the leaſe, between thirty and threeſcore years.

The conjurer, upon due deliberation, adviſed him to double the laſt ſpecified term, becauſe he diſtinguiſhed in his features ſomething portending extreme old age and ſecond childhood, and he ought to provide for that ſtate of incapacity, which otherwiſe would be attended with infinite miſery and affliction. The ſuperannuated wretch, thunderſtruck with this prediction, held up his hands, and in the firſt tranſports of his apprehenſion, exclaimed, "Lord have mercy upon me! I have not wherewithal to purchaſe ſuch a long leaſe, and I have long out-lived all my friends; what then muſt become of me, ſinner that I am, one hundred and twenty years hence!" Cadwallader (who enjoyed his terror), under pretence of alleviating his concern, told him that what he had prognoſticated did not deprive him of the means which he and every perſon had in their power, to curtail a life of misfortune; and

the old gentleman went away, ſeemingly comforted with the aſſurance, that it would always be in his power to employ an halter for his own deliverance.

Soon after the retreat of this elder, the magician was viſited by one of thoſe worthies known among the Romans by the appellation of *Heredipetes*, who had amaſſed a large fortune by a cloſe attention to the immediate wants and weakneſs of raw unexperienced heirs. This honourable uſurer had ſold an annuity upon the life of a young ſpendthrift, being thereto induced by the affirmation of his phyſician, who had aſſured him his patient's conſtitution was ſo rotten, that he could not live one year to an end: He had, nevertheleſs, made ſhift to weather eighteen months, and now ſeemed more vigorous and healthy than he had ever been known; for he was ſuppoſed to have nouriſhed an hereditary pox from his cradle. Alarmed at this alteration, the ſeller came to conſult Cadwallader, not only about the life of the annuitant, but alſo concerning the ſtate of his health at the time of his purchaſing the annuity, purpoſing to ſue the phyſician for falſe intelligence, ſhould the conjurer declare that the young man was ſound when the doctor pronounced him diſeaſed. But this was a piece of ſatisfaction he did not obtain from the miſanthrope, who, in order to puniſh his fordid diſpoſition, gave him to underſtand, that the phyſician had told him the truth, and nothing but the truth; and that the young gentleman was in a fair way of attaining a comfortable old age. "That is to ſay (cried the client, in the impatience of his mortification at this anſwer), bating accidents; for, thank God, the annuitant does not lead the moſt regular life: Beſides, I am credibly informed he is choleric and raſh; ſo that he may be concerned in a duel: Then there are ſuch things as riots in the ſtreet, in which a rake's ſkull may be caſually cracked; he may be overturned in a coach, overſet in the river, thrown from a vicious horſe, overtaken with a cold, endangered by a ſurfeit; but what I place my chief confidence in, is an hearty pox, a diſtemper which hath been fatal to his whole family. Not but that the iſſue of all theſe things is uncertain; and expedients might be found, which would more effectually anſwer the purpoſe. I know they have arts in India, by which a man can ſee

cure his own intereſt, in the ſalutation of a friendly ſhake by the hand; and I don't doubt that you, who have lived in that country, are maſter of the ſecret. To be ſure, if you was inclined to communicate ſuch a noſtrum, there are abundance of people who would purchaſe it at a very high price."

Cadwallader underſtood this inſinuation, and was tempted to amuſe him in ſuch a manner as would tend to his diſgrace and confuſion; but, conſidering that the caſe was of two criminal a nature to be tampered with, he withſtood his deſire of puniſhing this rapacious cormorant any other way than by telling him he would not impart the ſecret for his whole fortune ten times doubled; ſo that the uſurer retired, very much diſſatisfied with the iſſue of his conſultation.

The next perſon who preſented himſelf at this altar of intelligence, was an author, who recommended himſelf to a gratis advice, by obſerving, that a prophet and poet were known by the ſame appellation among the ancients; and that, at this day, both the one and the other ſpoke by inſpiration. The conjurer refuſed to own this affinity, which, he ſaid, formerly ſubſiſted, becauſe both ſpecies of the *Vates* were the children of fiction; but as he himſelf did not fall under that predicament, he begged leave to diſown all connection with the family of the poets; and the poor author would have been diſmiſſed without his errand, though he offered to leave an ode as ſecurity for the magician's fee, to be paid from the profits of his firſt third night, had not Cadwallader's curioſity prompted him to know the ſubject of this gentleman's inquiry. He therefore told him, that, in conſideration of his genius, he would for once ſatisfy him without a fee; and deſired him to ſpecify the doubts in which he wiſhed to be reſolved.

The ſon of Parnaſſus, glad of this condeſcenſion, for which he thanked the necromancer, gave him to underſtand, that he had ſome time before preſented a play in manuſcript to a certain great man, at the head of taſte, who had not only read and approved the performance, but alſo undertaken to introduce and ſupport it on the ſtage; that he (the author) was aſſured by this patron, that the play was already (in conſequence of his recom-

mendation) accepted by one of the managers, who had faithfully promiſed to bring it to light; but that, when he waited on this ſame manager, to know when he intended to put his production in rehearſal, the man declared he had never ſeen or heard of the piece: "Now, Mr. Conjurer (ſaid he), I want to know whether or not my play has been preſented, and if I have any ſort of chance of ſeeing it acted this winter."

Cadwallader, who had, in his younger days, ſported among the theatrical muſes, began to loſe his temper at this queſtion, which recalled the remembrance of his own diſappointments; and diſpatched the author with an abrupt anſwer, importing, that the affairs of the ſtage were altogether without the ſphere of his divination, being entirely regulated by the dæmons of diſſimulation, ignorance, and caprice.

It would be an endleſs taſk to recount every individual reſponſe which our magician delivered in the courſe of his conjuration. He was conſulted in all caſes of law, phyſic, and trade, over and above the ordinary ſubjects of marriage and fornication; his advice and aſſiſtance were ſolicited by ſharpers, who deſired to poſſeſs an infallible method of cheating unperceived; by fortune-hunters, who wanted to make prize of widows and heireſſes; by debauchees, who were diſpoſed to lie with other mens wives; by coxcombs, who longed for the death of their fathers; by wenches with child, who wiſhed themſelves rid of their burdens; by merchants, who had inſured above value, and thirſted after the news of a wreck; by underwriters, who prayed for the gift of preſcience, that they might venture money upon ſuch ſhips only as ſhould perform the voyage in ſafety; by Jews, who wanted to foreſee the fluctuations of ſtock; by uſurers, who advance money upon undecided cauſes; by clients, who were dubious of the honeſty of their counſel: In ſhort, all matters of uncertain iſſue were appealed to this tribunal; and, in point of calculation, *De Moivre* was utterly neglected.

CHAPTER LXXXIV.

he conjurer and his aſſociate execute a plan of vengeance againſt certain infidels who pretend to deſpiſe their art; and Peregrine achieves an adventure with a young nobleman.

By theſe means, the whole variety of characters, undiſtiſed, paſſed, as it were, in review before the confedetes, who, by divers ingenious contrivances, puniſhed e moſt flagrant offenders with as much ſeverity as the ıture of their plan would allow. At length they proted a ſcheme for chaſtiſing a number of their own acıaintance, who had all along profeſſed the utmoſt conmpt for the talent of this conjurer, which they endeaıured to ridicule in all companies, where his ſurpriſing t was the ſubject of diſcourſe; not that they had ſenſe ıd diſcernment enough to perceive the abſurdity of his ·etenſions, but affected a ſingularity of opinion, with a ew of inſulting the inferior underſtandings of thoſe who ere deceived by ſuch an idle impoſtor.

Peregrine, indeed, for obvious reaſons, had always pouſed their judgment in this caſe, and joined them in ·viling the public character of his friend: But he knew ow far the capacities of thoſe virtuoſi extended, and had equently caught them in the fact of recounting their exloits againſt the conjurer, which were the productions f their own invention only. On theſe conſiderations, his rath was kindled againſt them, and he accordingly con·rted meaſures with his coadjutor, for overwhelming ıem with confuſion and diſmay.

In the firſt place, a report was ſpread by his emiſſaries, ıat the magician had undertaken to entertain their view ith the appearance of any perſon whom his cuſtomers ıould deſire to ſee, whether dead, or at the diſtance of thouſand leagues. This extraordinary propoſal chancing) be the ſubject of converſation in a place where moſt f thoſe infidels were aſſembled, they talked of it in the ſual ſtyle, and ſome of them ſwore the fellow ought to ⁻ pillory'd for his preſumption.

Our hero, ſeizing this favourable opportunity, acquieſed in their remarks, and obſerved, with great vehemence, ıat it would be a meritorious action to put the raſcal to

the proof, and then toſs him in a blanket for non-performance. They were wonderfully pleaſed with this ſuggeſtion, and forthwith determined to try the experiment; though, as they underſtood the apparition would be produced to one only at a time, they could not immediately agree in the choice of the perſon who ſhould ſtand the firſt brunt of the magician's ſkill. While each of them ſeverally excuſed himſelf from this preference on various pretences, Peregrine readily undertook the poſt, expreſſing great confidence of the conjurer's incapacity to give him the leaſt cauſe of apprehenſion.

This point being ſettled, they detached one of their number to Crabtree, in order to beſpeak and adjuſt the hour and terms of the operation, which he inſiſted upon performing at his own apartment, where every thing was prepared for the occaſion. At the appointed time, they went thither in a body, to the number of ſeven, in full expectation of detecting the impoſtor; and were received with ſuch gloomy formality, as ſeemed to have an effect upon the countenances of ſome among them; though they were encouraged by the vivacity of Pickle, who affected a double ſhare of petulance, for the more effectual accompliſhment of his purpoſe.

Cadwallader made no reply to the interrogations they uttered, in the levity of their inſolence, at the firſt entrance, but ordered Hadgi to conduct them through the next room, that they might ſee there was no previous apparatus to affright their deputy with objects foreign to his undertaking. They found nothing but a couple of wax tapers burning on a table that ſtood with a chair by it in the middle of the apartment, and returned to the audience-chamber, leaving Peregrine by himſelf, to encounter the phantom of that perſon whom they ſhould (without his knowledge) deſire the magician to conjure up to his view.

All the doors being ſhut, and the company ſeated, a profound ſilence enſued, together with a face of dreadful expectation, encouraged by the blue flame of the candles, which were tipt with ſulphur for that purpoſe, and heightened by the diſmal ſound of a large bell, which Hadgi tolled in the antichamber. Cadwallader having thus practiſed upon their ignorance and fear, deſired them to name

ıe perſon to be produced. After ſome whiſpers among ıemſelves, one of them took the pen, and, writing the ame of Commodore Trunnion upon a ſlip of paper, put into the hands of the magician, who roſe from his ſeat, ıd, opening the door of his cloſet, diſplayed to their ew a ſkull, with thigh bones croſſed, upon a table cover- l with black cloth.

This melancholy ſpectacle made a remarkable impreſ- on upon the imaginations of the company, already pre- offeſſed by the previous ceremony; and they began to ırvey one another with looks of conſternation, while adwallader, ſhutting himſelf in the cloſet, that was con- guous to the chamber in which his friend Peregrine was ationed, thruſt the label with his uncle's name through ſmall chink in the partition, according to agreement, ıuttering all the time a ſort of gibberiſh, that increaſed he panic of his audience; then returning to his chair, he knell was tolled again, and Pickle called aloud, "Damn our mummery, why don't you diſpatch?"

This was a ſignal to Crabtree, who thus certified of his ıaving received the paper, ſtood up and waved his wand n the figure of an S. The motion being thrice perform- d, their ears were all of a ſudden invaded by a terrible ıoiſe in the next room, accompanied with the voice of Peregrine, who exclaimed, in a tone of horror and amaze- nent, "Guard me, Heaven! my uncle Trunnion!" This jaculation had ſuch an effect upon the hearers, that two f them ſwooned with fear, a third fell upon his knees, ınd prayed aloud, while the other three, in a tranſport of liſmay and diſtraction, burſt open the door, and ruſhed ınto the haunted chamber, where they found the table ınd chair overturned, and Peregrine extended (in all ap- pearance) without ſenſe or motion upon the floor.

They immediately began to chafe his temples, and the firſt ſymptom of his recovery which they perceived was an hollow groan; after which he pronounced theſe words: "Merciful powers! if I live, I ſaw the commodore with his black patch, in the very clothes he wore at my ſiſter's wedding." This declaration completed their aſtoniſhment and terror; they obſerved a wildneſs in his looks, which he ſeemed to bend on ſomething concealed from their view; and were infected by his appearance to ſuch a

pitch of ſuperſtition, that it would have been an eaſy matter to perſuade them that the chair and table were apparitions of their forefathers. However, they conducted Peregrine into the council chamber, where the conjurer and Hadgi were employed in miniſtering to thoſe who had fainted. The patients having retrieved the uſe of their faculties, Cadwallader, aſſuming a double portion of ſeverity in his aſpect, aſked if they were not aſhamed of their former incredulity; declaring, that he was ready to give them more convincing proofs of his art upon the ſpot, and would immediately recal three generations of their progenitors from the dead, if they were diſpoſed to reliſh ſuch company. Then turning to one of them, whoſe grandfather had been hanged, "Are you (ſaid he) ambitious of ſeeing the firſt remarkable perſonage of your family? Say the word, and he ſhall appear."

This youth, who had been the moſt inſolent and obſtreperous of the whole ſociety, and was now depreſſed with the ſame proportion of fear, alarmed at the propoſal, aſſured the magician he had no curioſity of that ſort remaining; and that what he had already ſeen would (he hoped) have a good effect upon his future life and converſation. Every one of theſe heroes made an acknowledgment and profeſſion of the ſame kind, ſome of which were attended with tears; and Hadgi having provided chairs for the whole company, they departed exceedingly creſt-fallen. Two of the number actually ſickened with the agitation they had undergone, while our hero and his aſſociate made themſelves merry with the ſucceſs of their enterpriſe.

But this ſcheme of fortune-telling did not engroſs his whole attention; he ſtill continued to maintain his appearance in the beau monde; and, as his expence far exceeded his income, ſtrove to contract intimacies with people of intereſt and power; he ſhowed himſelf regularly at court, paid his reſpects to them in all places of public diverſion, and frequently entered into their parties, either of pleaſure or cards. In the courſe of this cultivation, he happened one evening, at a certain chocolate-houſe, to overlook a match at piquet, in which he perceived a couple of ſharpers making prey of a young nobleman, who had neither temper nor ſkill ſufficient to cope with ſuch antagoniſts.

Our hero, being a profeſſed enemy to all knights of induſtry, could not bear to ſee them cheat in public with ſuch inſolent audacity. Under pretence of communicating ſome buſineſs of importance, he begged the favour of ſpeaking to the young gentleman in another corner of the room, and in a friendly manner cautioned him againſt the arts of his opponents. This hot-headed repreſentative, far from thinking or owning himſelf obliged to Pickle for his good counſel, looked upon his advice as an inſult upon his underſtanding; and replied, with an air of ferocious diſpleaſure, that he knew how to take care of his own concerns, and would not ſuffer either him or them to bubble him out of one ſhilling.

Peregrine, offended at the aſſociation, as well as at the ingratitude and folly of this conceited coxcomb, expreſſed his reſentment, by telling him, that he expected at leaſt an acknowledgment for his candid intention; but he found his intellects too much warped by his vanity to perceive his own want of capacity and experience. Inflamed by this reproof, the young nobleman challenged him to play for five hundred pounds, with many opprobrious, or at leaſt contemptuous terms of defiance, which provoked our hero to accept the propoſal. After the other had diſengaged himſelf from the old rooks, who were extremely mortified at the interruption, the two young champions ſat down, and fortune acting with uncommon impartiality, Pickle, by the ſuperiority of his talents, in two hours won to the amount of as many thouſand pounds, for which he was obliged to take his antagoniſt's note, the ſharpers having previouſly ſecured his ready money.

Frantic with his loſs, the raſh young man would have continued the game, and doubled ſtakes every time; ſo that Peregrine might have increaſed his acquiſition to ten times the ſum he had gained; but he thought he had already ſufficiently chaſtiſed the preſumption of the challenger, and was unwilling to empower fortune to raviſh from him the fruits of his ſucceſs; he therefore declined my lord's propoſal, unleſs he would play for ready money; and his lordſhip having in vain tried his credit among the company, our adventurer withdrew, leaving him in an ecſtaſy of rage and diſappointment.

As the inſolence of his behaviour had increaſed with his ill luck, and he had given vent to divers expreſſions which Peregrine took amiſs, our young gentleman reſolved to augment his puniſhment, by teazing him with demands which could not, he knew, be immediately ſatisfied; and next day ſent Pipes to his father's houſe with the note, which was drawn payable upon demand. The debtor, who had gone to bed half diſtracted with his misfortune, finding himſelf waked with ſuch a diſagreeable dunn, loſt all patience, curſed Pickle, threatened his meſſenger, blaſphemed with horrible execrations, and made ſuch a noiſe as reached the ears of his father, who, ordering his ſon to be called into his preſence, examined him about the cauſe of that uproar, which had diſturbed the whole family. The young gentleman, after having eſſayed to amuſe him with ſundry equivocations, which ſerved only to increaſe his ſuſpicion, and deſire of knowing the truth, acknowledged that he had loſt ſome money over night at cards, to a gameſter who had been ſo impertinent as to ſend a meſſage, demanding it that morning, though he had told the fellow that it would not ſuit him to pay it immediately. The father, who was a man of honour, reproached him with great ſeverity for his profligate behaviour in general, and this ſcandalous debt in particular, which he believed to be ſome trifle; then giving him a bank note for five hundred pounds, commanded him to go and diſcharge it without loſs of time. This well-principled heir took the money; but, inſtead of waiting upon his creditor, he forthwith repaired to the gaming-houſe, in hopes of retrieving his loſs; and, before he roſe from the table, ſaw his note mortgaged for ſeven eighths of its value.

Meanwhile, Pickle, incenſed at the treatment which his ſervant had received, and informed of his lordſhip's ſecond loſs, which aggravated his reſentment, determined to preſerve no medium; and, taking out a writ the ſame day, put it immediately in execution upon the body of his debtor, juſt as he ſtept into his chair at the door of White's Chocolate-houſe. The priſoner being naturally fierce and haughty, attempted to draw upon the bailiffs, who diſarmed him in a twinkling; and this effort ſerved only to heighten his diſgrace; which was witneſſed by a

thouſand people, moſt of whom laughed very heartily at the adventure of a lord's being arreſted.

Such a public tranſaction could not long eſcape the knowledge of his father, who that very day had the ſatisfaction to hear that his ſon was in a ſpunging-houſe. In conſequence of this information, he ſent his ſteward to learn the particulars of the arreſt, and was equally offended, ſurpriſed, and concerned, when he underſtood the nature of the debt, which he imagined his ſon had already diſcharged. Unwilling to pay ſuch a conſiderable ſum for a ſpendthrift, whom he had but too much indulged, and who in leſs than one week might involve himſelf in ſuch another difficulty, the old gentleman wrote a letter to Peregrine, repreſenting what a hardſhip it would be upon him to forfeit ſuch ſums by the indiſcretion of a ſon, whoſe engagements he was not bound to fulfil, and deſiring ſome mitigation in his demand, as it was not a debt contracted for value received, but incurred without ſubjecting him to the leaſt damage or inconvenience.

Our adventurer no ſooner received this letter, than he went in perſon to wait upon the author, to whom he, in a candid manner, related the particular circumſtances of the match, together with the ingratitude and audacity of his ſon, which he owned had ſtimulated him to ſuch meaſures as he otherwiſe would have ſcorned to take. The nobleman acknowledged that the revenge was hardly adequate to the provocation, and condemned the conduct of his ſon with ſuch juſtice and integrity, as diſarmed Peregrine of his reſentment, and diſpoſed him to give an undoubted proof of his own diſintereſtedneſs, which he immediately exhibited, by producing the note, and tearing it to pieces, after having aſſured his lordſhip that the writ ſhould be withdrawn, and the priſoner diſcharged before night.

The earl, who perfectly well underſtood the value of money, and was no ſtranger to the characters of mankind, ſtood amazed at this ſacrifice, which Pickle proteſted was offered by his eſteem for his lordſhip; and, after having complimented him upon his generoſity, in a very uncommon ſtrain of encomium, begged the favour of his acquaintance, and inſiſted upon his dining with him next day. The youth, proud of having met with ſuch an op-

portunity to diſtinguiſh himſelf, in leſs than an hour performed every article of his promiſe; and in the morning was viſited by the debtor, who came, by the expreſs order of his father, to thank him for the obligation under which he was laid, and to aſk pardon for the offence he had given.

This condeſcenſion was very glorious for our hero, who graciouſly received his ſubmiſſion, and accompanied him to dinner, where he was careſſed by the old earl with marks of particular affection and eſteem. Nor was his gratitude confined to exterior civility; he offered him the uſe of his intereſt at court, which was very powerful, and repeated his deſire of ſerving him ſo preſſingly, that Peregrine thought he could not diſpenſe with the opportunity of aſſiſting his abſent friend Godfrey, in whoſe behalf he begged the influence of his lordſhip.

The earl, pleaſed with this requeſt, which was another proof of the young gentleman's benevolence, ſaid, he would not fail to pay the utmoſt regard to his recommendation; and in ſix weeks a captain's commiſſion was actually ſigned for the brother of Emilia, who was very agreeably ſurpriſed at the intimation he received from the war-office, though he was utterly ignorant of the canal through which he obtained that promotion.

CHAPTER LXXXV.

Peregrine is celebrated as a wit and patron, and proceeds to entertain himſelf at the expence of whom it did concern.

In the mean time, Peregrine flouriſhed in the gay ſcenes of life, and (as I have already obſerved) had divers opportunities of profiting in the way of marriage, had not his ambition been a little too inordinate, and his heart ſtill biaſſed by a paſſion, which all the levity of youth could not balance, nor all the pride of vanity overcome. Nor was our hero unmarked in the world of letters and taſte: He had ſignalized himſelf in ſeveral poetical productions, by which he had acquired a good ſhare of reputation: Not that the pieces were ſuch as ought to have done much honour

to his genius; but any tolerable performance from a perſon of his figure, and ſuppoſed fortune, will always be conſidered by the bulk of readers, as an inſtance of aſtoniſhing capacity; though the very ſame production, uſhered into the world with the name of an author in leſs affluent circumſtances, would be juſtly diſregarded and deſpiſed; ſo much is the opinion of moſt people influenced and overawed by ridiculous conſiderations.

Be this as it will, our young gentleman was no ſooner diſtinguiſhed as an author, than he was marked out as a patron by all the ſtarving retainers to poetry; he was ſolemnized in odes, celebrated in epigrams, and fed with the milk of ſoft dedication. His vanity even reliſhed this incenſe; and, though his reaſon could not help deſpiſing thoſe that offered it, not one of them was ſent away unowned by his munificence. He began to think himſelf, in good earneſt, that ſuperior genius which their flattery had deſcribed; he cultivated acquaintance with the wits of faſhion, and even compoſed in ſecret a number of bons mots, which he uttered in company as the impromptus of his imagination. In this practice indeed he imitated ſome of the moſt renowned genuiſes of the age, who (if the truth were known) have laboured in ſecret, with the ſweat of their brows, for many a repartee which they have vended as the immediate production of fancy and expreſſion. He was ſo ſucceſsful in this exerciſe of his talents, that his fame actually came in competition with that great man who had long ſat at the helm of wit; and, in a dialogue that once happened between them, on the ſubject of a cork-ſcrew, wherein the altercation was diſcharged (according to Bayes), flap for flap, daſh for daſh, our hero was judged to have the better of his lordſhip, by ſome of the minor ſatellites, that commonly ſurround and reflect the rays of ſuch mighty luminaries.

In a word, he dipped himſelf ſo far in theſe literary amuſements, that he took the management of the pit into his direction, putting himſelf at the head of thoſe critics who call themſelves the town; and in that capacity chaſtiſed ſeveral players, who had been rendered inſolent and refractory by unmerited ſucceſs. As for the new productions of the ſtage, though generally unſpirited and inſipid, they always enjoyed the benefit of his influence and pro-

tection; because he never disliked the performance so much as he sympathized with the poor author, who stood behind the scenes in the most dreadful suspense, trembling, as it were, on the very brink of damnation: Yet, though he extended his generosity and compassion to the humble and needy, he never let slip one opportunity of mortifying villany and arrogance. Had the executive power of the legislature been vested in him, he would have doubtless devised strange species of punishment for all offenders against humanity and decorum; but, restricted as he was, he employed his invention in subjecting them to the ridicule and contempt of their fellow-subjects.

It was with this view he set on foot the scheme of conjuration, which was still happily carried on, and made use of the intelligence of his friend Cadwallader; though he sometimes converted this advantage to the purposes of gallantry, being (as the reader may have perceived) of a very amorous complexion. He not only acted the reformer, or rather the castigator, in the fashionable world, but also exercised his talents among the inferior class of people, who chanced to incur his displeasure.

One mischievous plan that entered our hero's imagination, was suggested by two advertisements published in the same paper, by persons who wanted to borrow certain sums of money, for which they promised to give undeniable security. Peregrine, from the style and manner of both, concluded they were written by attorneys, a species of people for whom he entertained his uncle's aversion. In order to amuse himself, and some of his friends, with their disappointment, he wrote a letter signed A. B. to each advertiser, according to the address specified in the newspaper, importing that if he would come with his writings to a certain coffeehouse near the Temple, precisely at six in the evening, he would find a person sitting in the right hand box next to the window, who would be glad to treat with him about the subject of his advertisement; and, should his security be liked, would accommodate him with the sum which he wanted to raise. Before the hour of this double appointment, Pickle, with his friend Cadwallader, and a few more gentlemen, to whom he had thought proper to communicate the plan, went to the coffeehouse, and seated themselves near the place that was destined for their meeting.

The hope of getting money had ſuch an evident effect upon their punctuality, that one of them arrived a conſiderable time before the hour; and having reconnoitred the room, took his ſtation according to the direction he had received, fixing his eye upon a clock that ſtood before him, and aſking of the bar-keeper, if it was not too ſlow. He had not remained in this poſture many minutes, when he was joined by a ſtrange figure that waddled into the room, with a bundle of papers in his boſom, and the ſweat running over his noſe. Seeing a man in the box to which he had been directed, he took it for granted he was the lender; and as ſoon as he could recover his breath, which was almoſt exhauſted by the diſpatch he had made, "Sir (ſaid he), I preſume you are the gentleman I was to meet about that loan."—Here he was interrupted by the other, who eagerly replied, "A. B. Sir, I ſuppoſe." "The ſame (cried the laſt comer), I was afraid I ſhould be too late; for I was detained beyond my expectation by a nobleman in the other end of the town that wants to mortgage a ſmall triſle of his eſtate, about a thouſand a-year; and my watch happens to be in the hands of the maker, having met with an accident a few nights ago, which ſet it aſleep. But howſomever, there is no time loſt, and I hope this affair will be tranſacted to the ſatisfaction of us both. For my own part, I love to do good offices myſelf, and therefore I expect nothing but what is fair and honeſt of other people."

His new friend was exceedingly comforted by this declaration, which he conſidered as a happy omen of his ſucceſs; and the hope of fingering the caſh operated viſibly in his countenance, while he expreſſed his ſatisfaction at meeting with a perſon of ſuch candour and humanity. "The pleaſure (ſaid he) of dealing with an eaſy conſcientious man, is, in my opinion, ſuperior to that of touching all the money upon earth; for what joy can be compared with what a generous mind feels in befriending its fellow-creatures? I was never ſo happy in my life, as at one time, in lending five hundred pounds to a worthy gentleman in diſtreſs, without inſiſting upon rigid ſecurity. Sir, one may eaſily diſtinguiſh an upright man by his countenance. For example now, I think I could take your word for ten thouſand pounds." The other, with

great joy, proteſted, that he was right in his conjecture, and returned the compliment a thouſand fold: By which means, the expectation of both was wound up to a very intereſting pitch; and both, at the ſame inſtant, began to produce their papers, in the untying of which, their hands ſhook with tranſports of eagerneſs and impatience; while their eyes were ſo intent upon their work, that they did not perceive the occupation of each other.

At length, one of them, having got the ſtart of the other, and unrolled ſeveral ſkins of muſty parchment, directed his view to the employment of his friend; and ſeeing him fumbling at his bundle, aſked if that was a blank bond and conveyance which he had brought along with him. The other, without lifting up his eyes, or deſiſting from his endeavours to looſe the knot, which by this time he had applied to his teeth, anſwered this queſtion in the negative, obſerving that the papers in his hand were the ſecurity which he propoſed to give for the money.

This reply converted the looks of the inquirer into a ſtare of infinite ſtolidity, accompanied with the word, Anan! which he pronounced in a tone of fear and aſtoniſhment. The other, alarmed at this note, caſt his eyes towards the ſuppoſed lender, and was in a moment infected by his aſpect. All the exultation of hope that ſparkled in their eyes was now ſucceeded by diſappointment and diſmay; and while they gazed ruefully at each other, their features were gradually elongated, like the tranſient curls of a middle-row periwig.

This emphatic ſilence was, however, broke by the laſt comer, who, in a faultering accent, deſired the other to recollect the contents of his letter. "Of your letter!" cried the firſt, putting into his hand the advertiſement he had received from Pickle; which he had no ſooner peruſed, than he produced his own for the ſatisfaction of the other party: So that another gloomy pauſe enſued, at the end of which, each uttered a profound ſigh, or rather groan, and riſing up, ſneaked off without further communication; he who ſeemed to be the moſt afflicted of the two, taking his departure, with an exclamation of "Humbugged egad!"

Such were the amuſements of our hero, though they did not engroſs his whole time, ſome part of which was

was dedicated to nocturnal riots and revels, among a ſet of young noblemen, who had denounced war againſt temperance, economy, and common ſenſe, and were indeed the devoted ſons of tumult, waſte, and prodigality. Not that Peregrine reliſhed thoſe ſcenes, which were a ſucceſſion of abſurd extravagance, devoid of all true ſpirit, taſte, or enjoyment: But his vanity prompted him to mingle with thoſe who were intituled the choice ſpirits of the age; and his diſpoſition was ſo pliable, as to adapt itſelf eaſily to the meaſures of his company, where he had not influence enough to act in the capacity of a director. Their rendezvous was at a certain tavern, which might be properly ſtyled the Temple of Exceſs, where they left the choice of their fare to the diſcretion of the landlord, that they might ſave themſelves the pains of exerciſing their own reaſon; and, in order to avoid the trouble of adjuſting the bill, ordered the waiter to declare how much every individual muſt pay, without ſpecifying the articles of the charge. This proportion generally amounted to two guineas per head for each dinner and ſupper, and frequently exceeded that ſum; of which the landlord durſt not abate, without running the riſk of having his noſe ſlit for his moderation.

But this was puny expence compared with that which they often incurred, by the damage done to the furniture and ſervants, in the madneſs of their intoxication, as well as the loſs they ſuſtained at hazard, an amuſement to which all of them had recourſe in the progreſs of their debauches. This elegant diverſion was introduced, encouraged, and promoted by a crew of rapacious ſharpers, who had made themſelves neceſſary companions to this hopeful generation, by the talents of pimping and buffoonery. Though they were univerſally known, even by thoſe they preyed upon, to have no other means of earning their livelihood, than the moſt infamous and fraudulent practices, they were careſſed and courted by theſe infatuated dupes, when a man of honour, who would not join in their exceſſes, would have been treated with the utmoſt indignity and contempt.

Though Peregrine, in his heart, deteſted thoſe abandoned courſes, and was a profeſſed enemy to the whole ſociety of gameſters, whom he conſidered, and always

treated, as the foes of human kind, he was inſenſibly accuſtomed to licentious riot, and even led imperceptibly into play by thoſe cormorants, who are no leſs dangerous in the art of cheating, than by their conſummate ſkill in working upon the paſſions of unwary youth. They are, for the moſt part, naturally cool, phlegmatic, and crafty, and, by a long habit of diſſimulation, have gained an abſolute dominion over the haſty paſſions of the heart; ſo that they engage with manifeſt advantage over the impatience and impetuoſity of a warm undeſigning temper, like that of our young gentleman, who, when he was heated with wine, miſled by example, invited on one hand, and defied on the other, forgot all his maxims of caution and ſobriety, and plunging into the reigning folly of the place, had frequent occaſions to moralize in the morning upon the loſs of the preceding night.

Theſe penitential reflections were attended with many laudable reſolutions of profiting by the experience which he had ſo dearly purchaſed; but he was one of thoſe philoſophers who always put off, till another day, the commencement of their reformation.

CHAPTER LXXXVI.

Peregrine receives a letter from Hatchway, in conſequence of which he repairs to the garriſon, and performs the laſt offices to his aunt. He is viſited by Mr. Gauntlet, who invites him to his marriage.

In this circle of amuſements our hero's time was parcelled out, and few young gentlemen of the age enjoyed life with greater reliſh, notwithſtanding thoſe intervening checks of reaſon, which ſerved only to whet his appetite for a repetition of the pleaſures ſhe ſo prudently condemned; when he received the following letter, by which he was determined to viſit his eſtate in the country.

" Cousin Pickle,

" I hope you are in a better trim than your aunt, who hath been faſt moored to her bed theſe ſeven weeks by ſeveral feet of under-water lodging in her hold and hol-

whereby I doubt her planks are rotted, ſo as ſhe
ıt chooſe but fall to pieces in a ſhort time. I have
all in my power to keep her tight and eaſy, and free
ſudden ſqualls that might overſtrain her. And here
been the doctors, who have ſkuttled her lower deck,
let out ſix gallons of water. For my own part, I
er how the devil it came there; for you know as
it was a liquor ſhe never took in. But as for thoſe
rs the doctors, they are like unſkilful carpenters,
in mending one leak make a couple; and ſo ſhe fills
apace. But the worſt ſign of all is this here, ſhe
: let a drop of Nantz go betwixt the combings of
eeth, and has quite loſt the rudder of her under-
ing, whereby ſhe yaws woundily in her ſpeech, pa-
ng about ſome foreign part called the New Geereu-
, and wiſhing herſelf in a ſafe birth in the river
dun. The parſon, I muſt ſay, ſtrives to keep her
y, concerning the navigation of her ſoul, and talks
ſenſibly of charity and the poor, whereof ſhe hath
legacy of two hundred pounds in her will. And
has been Mr. Gamaliel and your brother my lord,
nding entrance at the gate, in order to ſee her; but
ıld not ſuffer them to come aboard, and pointed my
reroes, which made them ſheer off. Your ſiſter
Clover keeps cloſe watch upon her kinſwoman,
ıut ever turning in, and a kind hearted young wo-
it is. I ſhould be glad to ſee you at the garriſon,
: wind of your inclination ſits that way; and may-
it may be a comfort to your aunt, to behold you
ſide of her, when her anchor is apeak. So no
at preſent, but reſts

Your friend
And humble ſervant to command,
JOHN HATCHWAY."

ext morning, after the receipt of this epiſtle, Pere-
, in order to manifeſt his regard to his aunt, as well
s friendſhip for honeſt Jack, ſet out on horſeback for
habitation, attended by Pipes, who longed to ſee his
neſſmate; but, before he had reached the garriſon,
Hatchway had given up the ghoſt, in the threeſcore
fifth year of her age. The widower ſeemed to bear

his loſs with reſignation, and behaved very decently upon the occaſion, though he did not undergo thoſe dangerous tranſports of ſorrow, which ſome tender-hearted huſbands have felt at the departure of their wives. The lieutenant was naturally a philoſopher, and ſo well diſpoſed to acquieſce in the diſpenſations of providence, that in this, as well as in every other emergency of his life, he firmly believed, that every thing which happened was for the beſt.

Peregrine's taſk, therefore, was not ſo great in comforting him, as in conſoling his own ſiſter, who, with great poignancy and ſincerity of grief, lamented the death of the only relation with whom ſhe had maintained any intimacy of correſpondence; for her mother was as implacable as ever, in her enmity againſt her and Peregrine, and rather more determined in her rancour; that which was originally a ſudden tranſport of indignation, being by this time ſettled into a confirmed inveteracy of hate. As for Gam, who was now dignified by the country people with the appellation of the young Squire, he ſtill acted in the capacity of miniſter to the caprice and vengeance of his mother, taking all opportunities of diſturbing Julia's peace, ſlandering her reputation, and committing outrages againſt the tenants and domeſtics of her huſband, who was a man of a quiet and timorous diſpoſition.

But the chief amuſement of young Pickle, in his later years, was the chaſe, in which he acquired ſome renown by his intrepidity and remarkable figure, which improved every day in deformity; inſomuch, as to ſuggeſt a ludicrous ſcheme of revenge to a gentleman in the neighbourhood. Having been affronted by the inſolence of Crookback, he clothed a large baboon that was in his poſſeſſion, in a dreſs that reſembled the hunting equipage of Gam; and ordering the animal to be ſet aſtride, and tied upon the back of his keeneſt hunter, turned them out one day after the hounds. The horſe in a little time outſtripping all the reſt in the field, the rider was miſtaken for Gam by the whole company, who ſaluted him as he paſſed with a hollow, obſerving, that the ſquire had his uſual good luck, in being better mounted than his neighbours. Pickle afterwards appearing in his own perſon, created great aſtoniſhment in the ſpectators, one of

hom aſked if he had ſplit himſelf in twain, and pointed t his repreſentative, who was by this time almoſt up th the hounds: Upon which the identical Gam went purſuit of the impoſtor. When he overtook him, he is ſo much enraged at the counterfeit, that he attacked : baboon whip in hand, and, in all probability, would ve ſacrificed him to his reſentment, had not he been :vented by the other fox-hunters. They interpoſed, in ler to make up the difference betwixt two brothers of : ſport, and were equally ſurpriſed and diverted when :y diſtinguiſhed the quality of Crookback's antagoniſt, iich they reſcued from his rage, and reconveyed to its ıſter.

Peregrine, at the requeſt of his friend Jack, took arge of his aunt's funeral, to which his parents were rited, though they did not think proper to appear, or y the leaſt regard to his ſolicitations, when he deſired rmiſſion to wait upon them in perſon. Nevertheleſs, l Gamaliel, at the inſtigation of his wife, afterwards tained an order from Doctor's Commons, obliging atchway to produce the will of his wife, on the ſuppoſi- ın that ſhe had bequeathed to him ſome part of the oney, which (he knew) was at her own diſpoſal. But ɔm this ſtep he reaped no other ſatisfaction than that of ıding himſelf altogether neglected by the teſtatrix, who ıd left all her effects to her huſband, except one thou- ınd pounds, with her jewels, to Julia's daughter, the :nefaction mentioned in the lieutenant's letter, and ſome ıconſiderable legacies to her favourite domeſtics.

A few days after the interment of this good lady, our hero as agreeably ſurpriſed with a viſit from his friend Godfrey, ho had come to England in conſequence of that pro- ıotion which he owed to his intereſt, though the ſoldier imſelf placed it to the credit of a certain courtier who ad formerly promiſed to befriend him, and now finding is advancement unowned, very modeſtly arrogated the erit of it to himſelf. He communicated his good for- une to Pickle, who complimented him upon it as an :vent of which he had no precognition; and at the ſame ime told him, that, in conſequence of his preferment, is couſin at Windſor had conſented to his being imme- diately united in the bands of wedlock with his lovely

Sophy; that the wedding day was already fixed; and that nothing would be wanting to his happineſs, if Peregrine would honour the nuptials with his preſence.

Our hero accepted the invitation with great eagerneſs when he learned that Emilia would be there in quality of bride's maid; and now repeated what he had formerly written to his friend, namely, that he was not only willing, but extremely impatient to atone for his mad behaviour to that young lady, by laying himſelf and his whole fortune at her feet. Godfrey thanked him for his honourable intention, and promiſed to uſe his influence and that of Sophy, in his behalf, though he ſeemed dubious of their ſucceſs, on account of his ſiſter's delicacy which could not pardon the leaſt ſhadow of diſreſpect. He owned, indeed, he was not certain that ſhe would appear in the ſame company with Pickle; but as ſhe made no ſtipulations on that ſcore, he would interpret her ſilence in the moſt favourable manner, and keep her in ignorance of his deſign, until ſhe ſhould find it too late to retract with any decency. The hope of ſeeing and converſing with Emilia, and perhaps of being reconciled to her, after having ſuffered ſo much and ſo long from her diſpleaſure, raiſed a tumult of ideas in his breaſt, and produced a ſtrange inquietude of joy and perturbation. Gauntlet having ſtaid with him a few days, and ſignified the time appointed for his ſpouſals, took his leave, in order to prepare for the occaſion; while Perigrine with his friend Hatchway, made a tour among his acquaintance in the country, with a view of ſounding their inclinations touching a project which he had lately conceived, of offering himſelf as a candidate for a certain borough in the neighbourhood, at the enſuing election for members of parliament.

This ſcheme, which was ſuggeſted to him by one of his quality patrons, would have ſucceeded according to his wiſh, had the election taken place immediately; but, before that happened, his intereſt was overbalanced by ſome ſmall accidents that will be recorded in the ſequel. In the mean time he repaired to Windſor on the eve of his friend's marriage, and underſtood from Godfrey that it was with the utmoſt difficulty he and Sophy could prevail upon his ſiſter to be preſent at the wedding, when

s informed that her lover was invited; and that her
t had not been obtained until they had promiſed,
part of Peregrine, that he ſhould not renew the
ic, nor even ſpeak to her in the ſtyle of a former
ntance.

young gentleman was nettled at this preliminary,
ch, however, he ſaid he would adhere; and ſo
d he think himſelf fortified with pride and reſent-
hat he reſolved to behave towards her with ſuch in-
ice, as would, he hoped, mortify her vanity, and
puniſh her for the implacability of her diſpoſition.
with theſe ſentiments, he was next day introdu-
Godfrey to the bride, who received him with her
eetneſs of temper and affability; and Emilia being
, he ſaluted her with a diſtant bow, which ſhe
ledged with a cold courteſy, and an aſpect of ice.
this deportment confirmed his diſpleaſure, her
undermined his reſolution; he thought her charms
ly improved ſince their laſt parting, and a thou-
nd images recurring to his imagination, he felt his
ſoul diſſolving into tenderneſs and love.

der to baniſh thoſe dangerous ideas, he endea-
to enter into a gay converſation with Sophy, on
ject of the approaching ceremony; but his tongue
ted its office awkwardly, his eyes were attracted
s Emilia, as if they had been ſubject to the power
nation; in ſpite of all his efforts, a deep ſigh
from his boſom, and his whole appearance indi-
nxiety and confuſion.

bridegroom, perceiving his condition, abridged the
nd having conducted his companion to his own
s, expreſſed his concern at having been the inno-
caſion of his uneaſineſs, by expoſing him to the
f Emilia, which he perceived had given him pain.
ine, who had by this time recollected the dictates
pride, aſſured him, that he was very much miſ-
in the cauſe of his diſorder, which was no other
ſudden qualm, to which he had been for ſome
bject; and to ſhow him how philoſophically he could
e diſdain of Emilia, which, with all deference to
onduct, he could not help thinking a little too
, he deſired, as the bridegroom had made prepara-

tion for a private ball in the evening, that he would provide him with an agreeable partner; in which caſe he would exhibit undoubted proofs of the tranquillity of his heart. "I was in hopes (anſwered Godfrey) of being able, with the aſſiſtance of Sophy, to make up matters between you and my ſiſter, and for that reaſon kept her unengaged to any other gentleman for the night; but ſince ſhe was ſo peeviſhly obſtinate, I ſhall take care to accommodate you with a very handſome young lady, whoſe partner will not be ſorry to exchange her for Emilia."

The thoughts of having an opportunity to coquette with another woman, under the eye of this implacable miſtreſs, ſupported his ſpirits during the ceremony, which put Gauntlet in poſſeſſion of his heart's deſire; and, by means of this cordial, he found himſelf ſo undiſturbed at dinner, though he ſat oppoſite to his fair enemy, that he was able to paſs ſome occaſional jokes upon the new-married couple, with ſome appearance of mirth and good humour. Nor did Emily any otherwiſe ſeem affected by his preſence, than by excepting him from the participation of thoſe genial regards which ſhe diſtributed to the reſt of the company. This eaſineſs of behaviour on her ſide reinforced his reſolution, by giving him pretence to call her ſenſibility in queſtion; for he could not conceive how any woman of acute feelings could ſit unmoved in preſence of a man with whom ſhe had ſuch recent and intimate connection; not conſidering that ſhe had much more reaſon to condemn his affectation of unconcern, and that her external deportment might, like his own, be an effort of pride and reſentment.

This conteſt, in point of diſſimulation, continued till night, when the company was paired for dancing, and Peregrine began the ball by walking a minuet with the bride; then he took out the young lady to whom he was recommended by Gauntlet, being very well pleaſed to ſee that her perſon was ſuch as might have inſpired even Emily herſelf with jealouſy, though, at the ſame time, he perceived his miſtreſs coupled with a gay young officer, whom (with all due deference to his own qualifications) he conſidered as no deſpicable rival. However, he himſelf firſt began hoſtilities, by becoming all of a ſudden particular with his partner, whom he forthwith af-

ſailed with flattering compliments, that ſoon introduced the ſubject of love, upon which he expatiated with great art and elocution, uſing not only the faculty of ſpeech, but alſo the language of the eyes, in which he was a perfect connoiſſeur.

This behaviour ſoon manifeſted itſelf to the whole aſſembly, the greateſt part of whom believed that he was in good earneſt captivated by the charms of his partner; while Emilia, penetrating into his deſign, turned his own artillery upon himſelf, by ſeeming to liſten with pleaſure to the addreſſes of his rival, who was no novice in the art of making love: She even affected uncommon vivacity, and giggled aloud at every whiſper which he conveyed into her ear, inſomuch that ſhe, in her turn, afforded ſpeculation to the company, who imagined the young ſoldier had made a conqueſt of the bridegroom's ſiſter.

Pickle himſelf began to cheriſh the ſame opinion, which gradually invaded his good humour, and at length filled his boſom with rage. He ſtrove to ſuppreſs his indignation, and called every conſideration of vanity and revenge to his aid: He endeavoured to wean his eyes from the fatal object that diſturbed him, but they would not obey his direction and command; he wiſhed himſelf deprived of all ſenſation, when he heard her laugh and ſaw her ſmile upon the officer; and, in the courſe of country dancing, when he was obliged to join hands with her, the touch thrilled through all his nerves, and kindled a flame within him which he could not contain. In a word, his endeavours to conceal the ſituation of his thoughts were ſo violent, that his conſtitution could not endure the ſhock; the ſweat ran down his forehead in a ſtream, the colour vaniſhed from his cheeks, his knees began to totter, and his eye-ſight to fail; ſo that he muſt have fallen at his full length upon the floor, had not he retired very abruptly into another room, where he threw himſelf upon a couch, and fainted.

In this condition he was found by his friend, who ſeeing him withdraw with ſuch ſymptoms of diſorder, followed him thither; and, when he recovered the uſe of his faculties, preſſed him to make uſe of a bed in that houſe, rather than expoſe himſelf in the night air, by

going home to his own lodgings; but not being able to prevail upon him to accept the offer, he wrapped him up in a cloak, and, conducting him to the inn where he lodged, helped him to undreſs and go to bed, where he was immediately ſeized with a violent fit of the ague. Godfrey behaved with great tenderneſs, and would have actually bore him company all night, notwithſtanding the circumſtances of his own ſituation, had not his friend inſiſted upon his returning to the company, and making his apology to his partner for his ſudden departure.

This was a ſtep abſolutely neceſſary towards maintaining the quiet of the aſſembly, which he found in great conſternation, occaſioned by his abſence; for ſome of the ladies, ſeeing the bridegroom follow the ſtranger in his retreat, the meaning of which they did not comprehend, began to be afraid of a quarrel. Emilia, upon pretence of that ſuppoſition, was ſo much alarmed, that ſhe could not ſtand, and was fain to have recourſe to a ſmelling bottle.

The bride, who underſtood the whole myſtery, was the only perſon that acted with deliberation and compoſure; ſhe imputed Emilia's diſorder to the right cauſe, which was no other than concern for the condition of her lover, and aſſured the ladies there was nothing extraordinary in Mr. Pickle's going off, he being ſubject to fainting fits, by which he was often overtaken without any previous notice. The arrival of Gauntlet confirmed the truth of this declaration: He made an apology to the company in the name of his friend, who, he told them, was ſuddenly taken ill; and they returned to their diverſion of dancing, with this variation: Emilia was ſo diſordered and fatigued, that ſhe begged to be excuſed from continuing the exerciſe; and Peregrine's partner being diſengaged, was paired with the young officer, for whom ſhe was originally deſigned.

Meanwhile, the bride withdrew into another apartment with her ſiſter, and expoſtulated with her upon her cruelty to Mr. Pickle, aſſuring her, from Godfrey's information, that he had undergone a ſevere fit on her account, which, in all likelihood, would have a dangerous effect upon his conſtitution. Though Emily was inflexible in her anſwers to the kind remonſtrances of the gen-

tle Sophy, her heart was melting with the impreſſions of pity and love; and finding herſelf unable to perform the duty of her function, in putting the bride to bed, ſhe retired to her own chamber, and in ſecret ſympathized with the diſtemper of her lover.

In the morning, as early as decency would permit him to leave the arms of his dear wife, Captain Gauntlet made a viſit to Peregrine, who had paſſed a very tedious and uneaſy night, having been ſubject to ſhort intervals of delirium, during which Pipes had found it very difficult to keep him faſt belayed. He owned indeed to Godfrey, that his imagination had been haunted by the ideas of Emilia and her officer, which tormented him to an unſpeakable degree of anguiſh and diſtraction; and that he would rather ſuffer death than a repetition of ſuch excruciating reflections. He was, however, comforted by his friend, who aſſured him, that his ſiſter's inclinations would in time prevail over all the endeavours of reſentment and pride, illuſtrating this aſſeveration by an account of the manner in which ſhe was affected by the knowledge of his diſorder, and adviſing him to implore the mediation of Sophy, in a letter which ſhe ſhould communicate to Emilia.

This was an opportunity which our hero thought too favourable to be neglected; calling for paper, he ſat up in his bed, and, in the firſt tranſports of his emotion, wrote the following petition to Godfrey's amiable wife:

"Dear Madam,

"The affliction of a contrite heart can never appeal to your benevolence in vain, and therefore I preſume to approach you in this ſeaſon of delight, with the language of ſorrow, requeſting that you will eſpouſe the cauſe of an unhappy lover, who mourns with unutterable anguiſh over his ruined hope, and intercede for my pardon with that divine creature, whom, in the intemperance and exceſs of paſſion, I have ſo mortally offended. Good heaven! is my guilt inexpiable? Am I excluded from all hope of remiſſion? Am I devoted to miſery and deſpair? I have offered all the atonement which the moſt perfect and ſincere penitence could ſuggeſt, and ſhe rejects my humility and repentance. If her reſentment would pur-

ſue me to the grave, let her ſignify her pleaſure; and may I be branded with the name of villain, and remembered with infamy and deteſtation to all poſterity, if I heſitate one moment in ſacrificing a life which is odious to Emilia. Ah! Madam, while I thus pour forth the effuſions of my grief and diſtraction, I look around the apartment in which I lie, and every well-known object that ſalutes my view, recals to my remembrance that fond, that happy day, on which the fair, the good, the tender-hearted Sophy became my advocate, though I was a ſtranger to her acquaintance, and effected a tranſporting reconciliation between me and that ſame enchanting beauty, that is now ſo implacably incenſed. If ſhe is not ſatisfied with the pangs of remorſe and diſappointment, the tranſports of madneſs I have undergone, let her preſcribe what farther penance ſhe thinks I ought to endure, and when I decline her ſentence, let me be the object of her eternal diſdain.

"I commit myſelf, dear Madam! dear Sophy! dear partner of my friend! to your kind interpoſition. I know you will manage my cauſe, as a concern on which my happineſs entirely depends; and I hope every thing from your compaſſion and beneficence, while I fear every thing from her rigour and barbarity. Yes! I call it barbarity, a ſavageneſs of delicacy altogether inconſiſtent with the tenderneſs of human nature; and may the moſt abject contempt be my portion, if I live under its ſcourge! But I begin to rave. I conjure you by your own humanity and ſweetneſs of diſpoſition, I conjure you by your love for the man whom heaven hath decreed your protector, to employ your influence with that angel of wrath, in behalf of

Your obliged and
Obedient ſervant,
P. PICKLE."

This epiſtle was immediately tranſmitted by Godfry to his wife, who peruſed it with marks of the moſt humane ſympathy; and, carrying it into her ſiſter's chamber, "Here is ſomething (ſaid ſhe, preſenting the paper) which I muſt recommend to your ſerious attention." Emilia, who immediately gueſſed the meaning of this ad-

dreſs, abſolutely refuſed to look upon it, or even to hear it read, till her brother, entering her apartment, reprimanded her ſharply for her obſtinacy and pride, accuſed her of folly and diſſimulation, and entered ſo warmly into the intereſts of his friend, that ſhe thought him unkind in his remonſtrances, and, burſting into a flood of tears, reproached him with partiality and want of affection. Godfrey, who entertained the moſt perfect love and veneration for his ſiſter, aſked pardon for having given offence, and kiſſing the drops from her fair eyes, begged ſhe would, for his ſake, liſten to the declaration of his friend.

Thus ſolicited, ſhe could not refuſe to hear the letter, which, when he had repeated, ſhe lamented her own fate in being the occaſion of ſo much uneaſineſs, deſired her brother to aſſure Mr. Pickle that ſhe was not a voluntary enemy to his peace; on the contrary, ſhe wiſhed him all happineſs, though ſhe hopped he would not blame her for conſulting her own, in avoiding any future explanation or connection with a perſon whoſe correſpondence ſhe found herſelf under a neceſſity to renounce.

In vain did the new-married couple exhauſt their eloquence in attempting to prove, that the reparation which our hero had offered was adequate to the injury ſhe had ſuſtained; that, in reconciling herſelf to a penitent lover, who ſubſcribed to her own terms of ſubmiſſion, her honour would be acquitted by the moſt ſcrupulous and ſevere judges of decorum; and that her inflexibility would be juſtly aſcribed to the pride and inſenſibility of her heart. She turned a deaf ear to all their arguments, exhortations, and entreaties, and threatened to leave the houſe immediately, if they would not promiſe to drop that ſubject of diſcourſe.

Godfrey, very much chagrined at the bad ſucceſs of his endeavours, returned to his friend, and made as favourable a report of the affair, as the nature of his converſation with Emilia would permit; but as he could not avoid mentioning her reſolution in the cloſe, Peregrine was obliged to drink again the bitter draught of diſappointment, which put his paſſions into ſuch a ſtate of agitation, as produced a ſhort ecſtaſy of deſpair, in which he acted a thouſand extravagancies. This paroxyſm, how-

ever, ſoon ſubſided into a ſettled reſerve of gloomy reſentment, which he in ſecret indulged, detaching himſelf as ſoon as poſſible from the company of the ſoldier, on pretence of retiring to reſt.

While he lay ruminating upon the circumſtances of his preſent ſituation, his friend Pipes, who knew the cauſe of his anxiety, and firmly believed that Emilia loved his maſter in her heart, howſoever ſhe might attempt to diſguiſe her ſentiments; I ſay, Thomas was taken with a conceit which he thought would ſet every thing to rights, and therefore put it in execution without farther delay. Laying aſide his hat, he ran directly to the houſe of Sophy's father, and, affecting an air of ſurpriſe and conſternation, to which he had never before been ſubject, thundered at the door with ſuch an alarming knock, as in a moment brought the whole family into the hall. When he was admitted, he began to gape, ſtare, and pant at the ſame time, and made no reply, when Godfrey aſked what was the matter, till Mrs. Gauntlet expreſſed her apprehenſions about his maſter. When Pickle's name was mentioned, he ſeemed to make an effort to ſpeak, and, in a bellowing tone, pronounced, "Brought himſelf up, ſplit my topſails!" So ſaying, he pointed to his own neck, and roſe upon his tiptoes, by way of explaining the meaning of his words.

Godfrey, without ſtaying to aſk another queſtion, ruſhed out, and flew towards the inn, with the utmoſt horror and concern; while Sophy, who did not rightly underſtand the language of the meſſenger, addreſſing herſelf to him a ſecond time, ſaid, with great earneſtneſs, "I hope no accident has happened to Mr. Pickle?" "No accident at all (replied Tom), he has only hanged himſelf for love." Theſe words had ſcarce proceeded from his mouth, when Emilia, who ſtood liſtening at the parlour door, ſhrieked aloud, and dropped down ſenſeleſs upon the floor; while her ſiſter, who was almoſt equally ſhocked at the intelligence, had recourſe to the aſſiſtance of her maid, by whom ſhe was ſupported from falling.

Pipes hearing Emily's voice, congratulated himſelf upon the ſucceſs of his ſtratagem. He ſprung to her aſſiſtance, and, lifting her up into an eaſy chair, ſtood by her,

until he ſaw her recover from her ſwoon, and heard her call upon his maſter's name, with all the frenzy of deſpairing love. Then he bent his courſe back to the inn, overjoyed at the opportunity of telling Peregrine what a confeſſion he had extorted from his miſtreſs, and extremely vain of this proof of his own ſagacity.

In the mean time Godfrey arriving at the houſe in which he ſuppoſed this fatal cataſtrophe had happened, ran up ſtairs to Peregrine's chamber, without ſtaying to make any inquiry below; and, finding the door locked, burſt it open with one ſtroke of his foot. But what was his amazment, when, upon entrance, our hero, ſtarting up from the bed, ſaluted him with a boiſtrous exclamation of "Zounds! who's there?" He was ſtruck dumb with aſtoniſhment, which alſo rivetted him to the place where he ſtood, ſcarce crediting the teſtimony of his own ſenſes, till Peregrine, with an air of diſcontent, which denoted him diſpleaſed with his intruſion, diſpelled his apprehenſion by a ſecond addreſs, ſaying, "I ſee you conſider me as a friend, by your uſing me without ceremony."

The ſoldier, thus convinced of the falſehood of the information he had received, began to imagine, that Pickle had projected the plan which was executed by his ſervant; and looking upon it as a piece of unjuſtifiable fineſſe, which might be attended with very melancholy conſequences to his ſiſter or wife, he anſwered, in a ſupercilious tone, that Mr. Pickle muſt blame himſelf for the interruption of his repoſe, which was entirely owing to the ſorry jeſt he had ſet on foot.

Pickle, who was the child of paſſion, and more than half mad with impatience before this viſit, hearing himſelf treated in ſuch a cavalier manner, advanced cloſe up to Godfrey's breaſt, and aſſuming a ſtern, or rather frantic countenance, "Hark ye, Sir (ſaid he), you are miſtaken if you think I jeſt; I am in down right earneſt, I aſſure you." Gauntlet, who was not a man to be browbeaten, ſeeing himſelf thus bearded by a perſon of whoſe conduct he had, he thought, reaſon to complain, put on his military look of defiance, and erecting his cheſt, replied with an exalted voice, "Mr. Pickle, whether you was in jeſt or earneſt, you muſt give me leave to tell you,

that the ſcheme was childiſh, unſeaſonable, and unkind; not to give it an harſher term." "Death, Sir (cried our adventurer), you trifle with my diſquiet; if there is any meaning in your inſinuation, explain yourſelf, and then I ſhall know what anſwer it will befit me to give." "I came with very different ſentiments (reſumed the ſoldier), but ſince you urge me to expoſtulation, and behave with ſuch unprovoked loftineſs of diſpleaſure, I will without circumlocution, tax you with having committed an outrage upon the peace of my family, in ſending your fellow to alarm us with ſuch an abrupt account of your having done violence upon yourſelf." Peregrine, confounded at this imputation, ſtood ſilent, with a moſt ſavage aſpect of ſurpriſe, eager to know the circumſtance to which his accuſer alluded, and incenſed to find it beyond the ſphere of his comprehenſion.

While theſe two irritated friends ſtood fronting each other with mutual indignation in their eyes and attitudes, they were joined by Pipes, who, without taking the leaſt notice of the ſituation in which he found them, told his maſter, that he might up with the top-gallant maſts of his heart, and out with his rejoicing pendants; for as to Mrs. Emily, he had clapped her helm a-weather, the veſſel wore, and now ſhe was upon the other tack, ſtanding right into the harbour of his goodwill.

Peregrine, who was not yet a connoiſſeur in the terms of his lacquey, commanded him, upon pain of his diſpleaſure, to be more explicit in his intelligence; and by dint of divers queſtions, obtained a perfect knowledge of the ſcheme which he had put in execution for his ſervice. This information perplexed him not a little; he would have chaſtiſed his ſervant upon the ſpot, for his temerity, had he not plainly perceived, that the fellow's intention was to promote his eaſe and ſatisfaction; and, on the other hand, he knew not how to acquit himſelf of the ſuſpicion which he ſaw Godfrey entertain of his being the projector of the plan, without condeſcending to an explanation, which his preſent diſpoſition could not brook. After ſome pauſe, however, turning to Pipes with a ſevere frown, "Raſcal! (ſaid he) this is the ſecond time I have ſuffered in the opinion of that lady, by your ignorance and preſumption; if ever you intermed-

dle in my affairs for the future, without expreſs order and direction, by all that's ſacred! I will put you to death without mercy. Away, and let my horſe be ſaddled this inſtant."

Pipes having withdrawn, in order to perform this piece of duty, our young gentleman, addreſſing himſelf again to the ſoldier, and laying his hand upon his breaſt, ſaid, with a ſolemnity of regard, "Captain Gauntlet, upon my honour, I am altogether innocent of that ſhallow device which you impute to my invention; and I do'nt think you do juſtice either to my intellects or honour, in ſuppoſing me capable of ſuch inſolent abſurdity. As for your ſiſter, I have once in my life affronted her in the madneſs and impetuoſity of deſire; but I have made ſuch acknowledgments, and offered ſuch atonement, as few women of her ſphere would have refuſed; and before God! I am determined to endure every torment of diſappointment and deſpair, rather than proſtrate myſelf again to the cruelty of her unjuſtifiable pride." So ſaying, he ſtalked ſuddenly down ſtairs, and took horſe immediately, his ſpirits being ſupported by reſentment, which prompted him to vow within himſelf, that he would ſeek conſolation for the diſdain of Emilia, in the poſſeſſion of the firſt willing wench he ſhould meet upon the road.

While he ſet out for the garriſon with theſe ſentiments, Gauntlet, in a ſuſpenſe between anger, ſhame, and concern, returned to the houſe of his father-in-law, where he found his ſiſter ſtill violently agitated from the news of Peregrine's death; the myſtery of which he forthwith unravelled, recounting at the ſame time the particulars of the converſation which had happened at the inn, and deſcribing the demeanour of Pickle with ſome expreſſions of aſperity, which were neither agreeable to Emilia, nor approved by the gentle Sophy, who tenderly chid him, for allowing Peregrine to depart in terms of miſunderſtanding.

CHAPTER LXXXVII.

Peregrine ſets out for the garriſon, and meets with a nymph of the road, whom he takes into keeping, and metamorphoſes into a fine lady.

In the mean time, our hero jogged along in a profound reverie, which was diſturbed by a beggar-woman and her daughter, who ſolicited him for alms, as he paſſed them on the road. The girl was about the age of ſixteen, and, notwithſtanding the wretched equipage in which ſhe appeared, exhibited to his view a ſet of agreeable features, enlivened with the complexion of health and cheerfulneſs. The reſolution I have already mentioned was ſtill warm in his imagination; and he looked upon this young mendicant as a very proper object for the performance of his vow. He therefore entered into a conference with the mother, and for a ſmall ſum of money purchaſed her property in the wench, who did not require much courtſhip and entreaty, before ſhe conſented to accompany him to any place that he ſhould appoint for her habitation.

This contract being ſettled to his ſatisfaction, he ordered Pipes to ſeat his acquiſition behind him upon the crupper, and, alighting at the firſt public houſe which they found upon the road, he wrote a letter to Hatchway, deſiring him to receive this hedge inamorata, and direct her to be cleaned and clothed in a decent manner, with all expedition, ſo that ſhe ſhould be touchable upon his arrival, which (on that account) he would defer for the ſpace of one day. This billet, together with the girl, he committed to the charge of Pipes, after having laid ſtrong injunctions upon him to abſtain from all attempts upon her chaſtity, and ordered him to make the beſt of his way to the garriſon, while he himſelf croſſed the country to a market town, where he propoſed to ſpend the night.

Tom, thus cautioned, proceeded with his charge, and, being naturally taciturn, opened not his lips, until he had performed the beſt half of his journey. But Thomas, notwithſtanding his irony appearance, was in reality compoſed of fleſh and blood. His deſire being titillated by the contact of a buxom wench, whoſe right arm embraced his middle as he rode, his thoughts began to mutiny

againſt his maſter, and he found it almoſt impoſſible to withſtand the temptation of making love.

Nevertheleſs, he wreſtled with theſe rebellious ſuggeſtions with all the reaſon that Heaven had enabled him to exert; and that being totally overcome, his victorious paſſion ſuddenly broke out in this addreſs:—"'Sblood! I believe maſter thinks I have no more ſtuff in my body than a dried haddock, to turn me adrift in the dark with ſuch a ſpanker. D'ye think he don't, my dear?" To this queſtion his fellow-traveller replied, "Swanker anan!" And the lover reſumed his ſuit, ſaying, "Oons! how you tickle my timber! Something ſhoots from your arm, through my ſtowage, to the very keel-ſtone. Ha'nt you got quick-ſilver in your hand?" "Quick-ſilver! (ſaid the lady) Damn the ſilver that has croſſed my hand this month. D'ye think, if I had ſilver, I ſhouldn't buy me a ſmock?" "Adſooks! you baggage (cried the lover) you ſhouldn't want a ſmock nor a petticoat neither, if you could have a kindneſs for a true-hearted ſailor, as ſound and ſtrong as a nine inch cable, that would keep all clear above board, and every thing ſnug under the hatches." "Curſe your gum (ſaid the charmer), what's your gay balls and your hatchets to me?" "Do but let us bring to a little (anſwered the woer, whoſe appetite was by this time whetted to a moſt ravenous degree), and I'll teach you to box the compaſs, my dear. Ah! you ſtrapper, what a jolly bitch you are!" "Bitch! (exclaimed this modern dulcinea, incenſed at the opprobrious term) ſuch a bitch as your mother, you dog. Damn you, I've a good mind to box your jaws inſtead of your come-piſs. I'll let you know as how I am meat for your maſter, you ſaucy blackguard. You are worſe than a dog, you old flinty-faced flea-bitten ſcrub: A dog wears his own coat, but you wear your maſter's."

Such a torrent of diſgraceful epithets from a perſon who had no clothes at all, converted the gallant's love into choler, and he threatened to diſmount and ſeize her to a tree, when ſhe ſhould have a taſte of his cat o'-nine-tails athwart her quarters; but, inſtead of being intimidated by his menaces, ſhe ſet him at defiance, and held forth with ſuch a flow of eloquence, as would have entitled her to a conſiderable ſhare of reputation, even a-

mong the nymphs of Billingſgate; for this young lady, over and above a natural genius for altercation, had her talents cultivated among the venerable ſociety of weeders, podders, and hoppers, with whom ſhe had aſſociated from her tender years. No wonder then, that ſhe ſoon obtained a complete victory over Pipes, who (as the reader may have obſerved) was very little addicted to the exerciſe of ſpeech: Indeed he was utterly diſconcerted by her volubility of tongue; and being altogether unfurniſhed with anſwers to the diſtinct periods of her diſcourſe, very wiſely choſe to ſave himſelf the expence of breath and argument, by giving her a full ſwing of cable, ſo that ſhe might bring herſelf up; while he rode onwards, in ſilent compoſure, without taking any more notice of his fair fellow traveller, than if ſhe had been his maſter's cloak-bag.

In ſpite of all the diſpatch he could make, it was late before he arrived at the garriſon, where he delivered the letter and the lady to the lieutenant, who no ſooner underſtood the intention of his friend, than he ordered all the tubs in the houſe to be carried into the hall, and filled with water. Tom having provided himſelf with ſwabs and bruſhes, diveſted the fair ſtranger of her variegated drapery, which was immediately committed to the flames, and performed upon her ſoft and ſleek perſon the ceremony of ſcrubbing, as it is practiſed on board of the king's ſhips of war. Yet the nymph herſelf did not ſubmit to this purification without repining. She curſed the director, who was upon the ſpot, with many abuſive alluſions to his wooden leg; and as for Pipes the operator, ſhe employed her talons ſo effectually upon his face, that the blood ran over his noſe in ſundry ſtreams; and next morning, when thoſe rivulets were dry, his countenance reſembled the rough bark of a plumb-tree, plaiſtered with gum. Nevertheleſs, he did his duty with great perſeverance, cut off her hair cloſe to the ſcalp, handled his bruſhes with dexterity, applied his ſwabs of different magnitude and texture, as the caſe required; and, laſtly, rinſed the whole body with a dozen pails of cold water, diſcharged upon her head.

Theſe ablutions being executed, he dried her with towels, accommodated her with a clean ſhift, and, acting

the part of a valet-de-chambre, clothed her from head to foot, in clean and decent apparel which had belonged to Mrs. Hatchway; by which means her appearance was altered ſo much for the better, that when Peregrine arrived next day, he could ſcarce believe his own eyes. He was, for that reaſon, extremely well pleaſed with his purchaſe, and now reſolved to indulge a whim, which ſeized him at the very inſtant of his arrival.

He had (as I believe the reader will readily allow) made conſiderable progreſs in the ſtudy of character, from the higheſt rank to the moſt humble ſtation of life, and found it diverſified in the ſame manner, through every degree of ſubordination and precedency: Nay, he moreover obſerved, that the converſation of thoſe who are dignified with the appellation of polite company, is neither more edifying nor entertaining than that which is met with among the lower claſſes of mankind; and that the only eſſential difference, in point of demeanour, is the form of an education, which the meaneſt capacity can acquire, without much ſtudy or application. Poſſeſſed of this notion, he determined to take the young medicant under his own tutorage and inſtruction. In conſequence of which, he hoped he ſhould, in a few weeks, be able to produce her in company, as an accompliſhed young lady of uncommon wit, and an excellent underſtanding.

This extravagant plan he forthwith began to execute with great eagerneſs and induſtry; and his endeavours ſucceeded even beyond his expectation. The obſtacle, in ſurmounting of which he found the greateſt difficulty, was an inveterate habit of ſwearing, which had been indulged from her infancy, and confirmed by the example of thoſe among whom ſhe had lived. However, ſhe had the rudiments of good ſenſe from nature, which taught her to liſten to wholeſome advice, and was ſo docile as to comprehend and retain the leſſons which her governor recommended to her attention; inſomuch, that he ventured, in a few days, to preſent her at table, among a ſet of country ſquires, to whom ſhe was introduced as niece to the lieutenant. In that capacity ſhe ſat with becoming eaſineſs of mien (for ſhe was as void of the *mauvaiſe honte* as any ducheſs in the land), bowed very graciouſly to the compliments of the gentlemen; and though ſhe ſaid little.

or nothing, becauſe ſhe was previouſly cautioned on that ſcore, ſhe more than once gave way to laughter, and her mirth happened to be pretty well timed. In a word, ſhe attracted the applauſe and admiration of the gueſts, who, after ſhe was withdrawn, complimented Mr. Hatchway upon the beauty, breeding, and good humour of his kinſwoman.

But what contributed more than any other circumſtance to her ſpeedy improvement, was ſome ſmall inſight into the Primer, which ſhe had acquired at a day-ſchool, during the life of her father, who was a day-labourer in the country. Upon this foundation did Peregrine build a moſt elegant ſuperſtructure; he culled out choice ſentences from Shakſpeare, Otway, and Pope, and taught her to repeat them with an emphaſis and theatrical cadence: He then inſtructed her in the names and epithets of the moſt celebrated players, which he directed her to pronounce occaſionally, with an air of careleſs familiarity; and, perceiving that her voice was naturally clear, he enriched it with remnants of opera tunes, to be hummed during a pauſe in converſation, which is generally ſupplied with a circulation of a pinch of ſnuff. By means of this cultivation, ſhe became a wonderful proficient in the polite graces of the age; ſhe, with great facility, comprehended the ſcheme of whiſt, though cribbage was her favourite game, with which ſhe had amuſed herſelf in her vacant hours, from her firſt entrance into the profeſſion of hopping; and brag ſoon grew familiar to her practice and conception.

Thus prepared, ſhe was expoſed to the company of her own ſex, being firſt of all viſited by the parſon's daughter, who could not avoid ſhowing that civility to Mr. Hatchway's niece, after ſhe had made her public appearance at church. Mrs. Clover, who had a great ſhare of penetration, could not help entertaining ſome doubts about this ſame relation, whoſe name ſhe had never heard the uncle mention, during the whole term of her reſidence at the garriſon: But as the young lady was treated in that character, ſhe would not refuſe her acqaintance; and after having ſeen her at the caſtle, actually invited Miſs Hatchway to her houſe. In ſhort, ſhe made a progreſs through almoſt all the families in the neighbourhood;

and by dint of her quotations (which, by the bye, were not always judiciouſly uſed), ſhe paſſed for a ſprightly young lady, of uncommon learning and taſte.

Peregrine having, in this manner, initiated her in the beau monde of the country, conducted her to London, where ſhe was provided with private lodgings and a female attendant; and put her immediately under the tuition of his valet-de-chambre, who had orders to inſtruct her in dancing and the French language. He attended her to plays and concerts three or four times a-week; and when our hero thought her ſufficiently accuſtomed to the ſight of great company, he ſquired her in perſon to a public aſſembly, and danced with her among all the gay ladies of faſhion: Not but that there was ſtill an evident air of ruſticity and awkwardneſs in her demeanour, which was interpreted into an agreeable wildneſs of ſpirit, ſuperior to the forms of common breeding. He afterwards found means to make her acquainted with ſome diſtinguiſhed patterns of her own ſex, by whom ſhe was admitted into the moſt elegant parties, and continued to make good her pretenſions to gentility, with great circumſpection. But one evening, being at cards with a certain lady whom ſhe detected in the very fact of unfair conveyance, ſhe taxed her roundly with the fraud, and brought upon herſelf ſuch a torrent of ſarcaſtic reproof, as overbore all her maxims of caution, and burſt open the floodgates of her own natural repartee, twanged off with the appellation of b—— and w——, which ſhe repeated with great vehemence, in an attitude of manual defiance, to the terror of her antagoniſt, and the aſtoniſhment of all preſent: Nay, to ſuch an unguarded pitch was ſhe provoked, that ſtarting up, ſhe ſnapt her fingers, in teſtimony of diſdain, and, as ſhe quitted the room, applied her hand to that part which was the laſt of her that diſappeared, inviting the company to kiſs it, by one of its coarſeſt denominations.

Peregrine was a little diſconcerted at this overſight in her behaviour, which, by the demon of intelligence, was in a moment conveyed to all the private companies in town: So that ſhe was abſolutely excluded from all polite communication, and Peregrine, for the preſent, diſgraced among the modeſt part of his female acquaintance, many of whom

not only forbade him their houſes, on account of the impudent inſult he had committed upon their honour, as well as underſtanding, in palming a common trull upon them, as a young lady of birth and education; but alſo aſperſed his family, by affirming that ſhe was actually his own couſin-german, whom he had precipitately raiſed from the moſt abject ſtate of humility and contempt. In revenge for this calumny, our young gentleman explained the whole myſtery of her promotion, together with the motives that induced him to bring her into the faſhionable world; and repeated among his companions the extravagant encomiums which had been beſtowed upon her by the moſt diſcerning matrons of the age.

Meanwhile, the infanta herſelf being rebuked by her benefactor for this inſtance of miſbehaviour, promiſed faithfully to keep a ſtricter guard for the future over her conduct, and applied herſelf with great aſſiduity to the ſtudies, in which ſhe was aſſiſted by the Swiſs, who gradually loſt the freedom of his heart, while ſhe was profiting by his inſtruction. In other words, ſhe made a conqueſt of her preceptor, who yielding to the inſtigations of the fleſh, choſe a proper opportunity to declare his paſſion, which was powerfully recommended by his perſonal qualifications; and his intentions being honourable, ſhe liſtened to his propoſals of eſpouſing her in private. In conſequence of this agreement, they made an elopement together; and being buckled at the Fleet, conſummated their nuptials in private lodgings, by the Seven Dials, from which the huſband next morning ſent a letter to our hero, begging forgiveneſs for the clandeſtine ſtep he had taken, which he ſolemnly proteſted was not owing to any abatement in his inviolable regard for his maſter, whom he ſhould always honour and eſteem to his lateſt breath, but entirely to the irreſiſtible charms of the young lady, to whom he was now ſo happy as to be joined in the ſilken bonds of marriage.

Peregrine, though at firſt offended at his valet's preſumption, was, upon ſecond thoughts, reconciled to the event by which he was delivered from an encumbrance; for by this time he had performed his frolic, and began to be tired of his acquiſition. He reflected upon the former fidelity of the Swiſs, which had been manifeſted in a long

courſe of ſervice and attachment; and thinking it would be cruelly ſevere to abandon him to poverty and diſtreſs for one venial treſpaſs, he reſolved to pardon what he had done, and enable him in ſome ſhape to provide for the family which he had entailed upon himſelf.

With theſe ſentiments, he ſent a favourable anſwer to the delinquent, deſiring to ſee him as ſoon as his paſſion ſhould permit him to leave the arms of his ſpouſe, for an hour or two; and Hadgi, in obedience to this intimation, repaired immediately to the lodgings of his maſter, before whom he appeared with a moſt penitential aſpect. Peregrine, though he could ſcarce help laughing at his rueful length of face, reprimanded him ſharply for his diſreſpect and ingratitude, in taking that by ſtealth which he might have had for aſking. The culprit aſſured him, that next to the vengeance of God, his maſter's diſpleaſure was that which, of all evils, he dreaded to incur; but that love had diſtracted his brain in ſuch a manner, as to baniſh every other conſideration but that of gratifying his deſire; and he owned, that he ſhould not have been able to preſerve his fidelity and duty to his own father, had they interfered with the intereſt of his paſſion. He then appealed to his maſter's own heart for the remiſſion of his guilt, alluding to certain circumſtances of our hero's conduct, which evinced the deſperate effects of love. In ſhort, he made ſuch an apology as extorted a ſmile from his offended judge, who not only forgave his tranſgreſſion, but alſo promiſed to put him in ſome fair way of earning a comfortable ſubſiſtence.

The Swiſs was ſo much affected with this inſtance of generoſity, that he fell upon his knees, and kiſſed his hand, praying to Heaven, with great fervour, to make him worthy of ſuch goodneſs and condeſcenſion. His ſcheme, he ſaid, was to open a coffeehouſe and tavern in ſome creditable part of the town, in hopes of being favoured with the cuſtom of a numerous acquaintance he had made among upper ſervants and reputable tradeſmen, not doubting that his wife would be an ornament to his bar, and a careful manager of his affairs. Peregrine approved of the plan, towards the execution of which he made him and his wife a preſent of five hundred pounds, together with a

promiſe of erecting a weekly club among his friends, for the reputation and advantage of the houſe.

Hadgi was ſo tranſported with his good fortune, that he ran to Pipes, who was in the room, and having hugged him with great cordiality, and made his obedience to his maſter, hied him home to his bride, to communicate his happineſs, cutting capers, and talking to himſelf all the way.

CHAPTER LXXXVIII.

He is viſited by Pallet; contracts an intimacy with a Newmarket nobleman; and is by the knowing-ones taken in.

THIS affair being ſettled, and our adventurer, for the preſent, free of all female connections, he returned to his former courſe of faſt living, among the bucks of the town, and performed innumerable exploits among whores, bullies, rooks, conſtables, and juſtices of the peace.

In the midſt of theſe occupations, he was one morning viſited by his old fellow traveller Pallet, whoſe appearance gave him equal ſurpriſe and concern. Though the weather was ſevere, he was clothed in the thin ſummer dreſs which he had wore at Paris, and was now not only thread bare, but in ſome parts actually patched; his ſtockings, by a repetition of that practice known among economiſts by the term of coaxing, hung like pudding bags about his ankles; his ſhirt, though new waſhed, was of the ſaffron hue, and in divers places appeared through the crannies of his breeches; he had exchanged his own hair for a ſmoke-dried tie-periwig, which all the flour in his drudging-box had not been able to whiten; his eyes were ſunk, his jaws lengthened beyond their uſual extenſion; and he ſeemed twenty years older than he looked when he and our hero parted at Rotterdam.

In ſpite of all theſe evidences of decay, he accoſted him with a meagre affectation of content and good humour, ſtruggled piteouſly to appear gay and unconcerned, profeſſed his joy at ſeeing him in England, excuſed himſelf for having delayed ſo long to come and preſent his re-

ſpects; alleging that, ſince his return, he had been a mere ſlave to the ſatisfaction of ſome perſons of quality and taſte, who had inſiſted upon his finiſhing ſome pieces with the utmoſt expedition.

Peregrine received him with that compaſſion and complaiſance which was natural to his diſpoſition; inquired about the health of Mrs. Pallet and his family, and aſked if his friend the doctor was in town. The painter ſeemed to have reſumed his reſentment againſt that gentleman, of whom he ſpoke in contemptuous terms. The doctor (ſaid he) is ſo much overſhadowed with preſumption and ſelf-conceit, that his merit has no relief. It does not riſe. There is no keeping in the picture, my dear Sir. All the ſame as if I were to repreſent the moon under a cloud; there will be nothing but a deep maſs of ſhade, with a little tiny ſpeck of light in the middle, which would only ſerve to make, as it were, the darkneſs viſible: You underſtand me. Had he taken my advice, it might have been better for him; but he is bigotted to his own opinion. You muſt know, Mr. Pickle, upon our return to England, I counſelled him to compoſe a little ſmart clever ode upon my Cleopatra. As Gad ſhall judge me, I thought it would have been of ſome ſervice, in helping him out of obſcurity; for you know, as Sir Richard obſerves,

> Soon will that die, which adds thy fame to mine;
> Let me then live, join'd to a work of thine.

By the bye, there is a moſt picturеſque contraſt in theſe lines, of *thy* and *me*, *living* and *dying*, and *thine* and *mine*. Ah! a pize upon it! Dick, after all, was the man. Ecod! he rounded it off. But, to return to this unhappy young man, would you believe it, he toſſed up his noſe at my friendly propoſal, and gabbled ſomething in Greek, which is not worth repeating. The caſe was this, my dear Sir, he was out of humour at the neglect of the world. He thought the poets of the age were jealous of his genius, and ſtrove to cruſh it accordingly, while the reſt of mankind wanted taſte ſufficient to diſcern it. For my own part, I profeſs myſelf one of theſe; and as the Clown in Billy Shakſpeare ſays of the courtier's oath, had I ſworn by the doctor's genius, that the pancakes were naught, they

might have been for all that very good, yet ſhouldn't I have been foreſworn. Let that be as it will, he retired from town in great dudgeon, and ſet up his reſt near a hill in Derbyſhire, with two tops, reſembling Parnaſſus, and a well at the bottom, which he had chriſtened Hyp o-the-Green. Egad! if he ſtays in that habitation, 'tis my opinion he'll ſoon grow green with the hip indeed. He'll be glad of an opportunity to return to the fleſh-pots of Egypt, and pay his court to the ſlighted queen Cleopatra. Ha! well remembered, by this light you ſhall know, my good Sir, that this fame Egyptian princeſs has been courted by ſo many gallants of taſte, that, as I hope to live, I found myſelf in ſome ſort of dilemma, becauſe in parting with her to one, I ſhould have diſobliged all his rivals. Now a man would not chooſe to give offence to his friends, at leaſt I lay it down as a maxim, to avoid the ſmalleſt appearance of ingratitude. Perhaps I may be in the wrong. But every man has his way. For this reaſon, I propoſed to all the candidates, that a lottery or raffle ſhould be ſet on foot, by which every individual would have an equal chance for her good graces, and the prize be left to the deciſion of fortune. The ſcheme was mightily reliſhed, and the terms being ſuch a trifle as half a guinea, the whole town crowded into my houſe, in order to ſubſcribe. But there I was their humble ſervant. Gentlemen, you muſt have a little patience till my own particular friends are ſerved. Among that number, I do myſelf the honour to conſider Mr. Pickle. Here is a copy of the propoſals; and, if the liſt ſhould be adorned with his name, I hope, notwithſtanding his merited ſucceſs among the young ladies, he will for once be ſhunned by that little vixen called Miſs Fortune! he, he, he!"

So ſaying, he bowed with a thouſand apiſh conges, and preſented his paper to Peregrine, who, ſeeing the number of ſubſcribers was limited to one hundred, ſaid he thought him too moderate in his expectations, as he did not doubt that his picture would be a cheap purchaſe at five hundred, inſtead of fifty pounds, at which the price was fixed. To this unexpected remark Pallet anſwered, that among the connoiſſeurs he would not pretend to appraiſe his picture; but that, in valuing his works, he was obliged to have an eye to the Gothic ignorance of the age in which he lived.

Our adventurer ſaw at once into the nature of this raffle, which was no other than a begging ſhift to diſpoſe of a paltry piece, that he could not otherwiſe have ſold for twenty ſhillings. However, far from ſhocking the poor man in diſtreſs, by dropping the leaſt hint of his conjecture, he deſired to be favoured with ſix chances, if the circumſtances of his plan would indulge him ſo far; and the painter, after ſome heſitation, condeſcended to comply with his requeſt, out of pure friendſhip and veneration; though he obſerved, that, in ſo doing, he muſt exclude ſome of his moſt intimate companions. Having received the money, he gave Pickle his addreſs, deſiring he would, with his convenience, viſit the princeſs, who, he was ſure, would diſplay her moſt engaging attractions, in order to captivate his fancy; and took his leave extremely well pleaſed with the ſucceſs of his application.

Though Peregrine was tempted with the curioſity of ſeeing this portrait, which he imagined muſt contain ſome analogy to the ridiculous oddity of the painter, he would not expoſe himſelf to the diſagreeable alternative of applauding the performance, contrary to the dictates of conſcience and common ſenſe, or of condemning it, to the unſpeakable mortification of the miſerable author; and therefore never dreamt of returning the painter's viſit: Nor did he ever hear of the lottery's being drawn.

About this time he was invited to ſpend a few weeks at the country ſeat of a certain nobleman, with whom he had contracted an acquaintance, in the courſe of his debauches, which we have already deſcribed. His lordſhip being remarkable for his ſkill and ſucceſs in horſe-racing, his houſe was continually filled with the connoiſſeurs and admirers of that ſport, upon which the whole converſation turned, inſomuch that Peregrine gradually imbibed ſome knowledge in horſe-fleſh, and the diverſions of the courſe; for the whole occupation of the day, excluſive of eating and drinking, conſiſted in viewing, managing, and exerciſing his lordſhip's ſtud.

Our hero looked upon theſe amuſements with an eye of taſte, as well as curioſity; he contemplated the animal as a beautiful and elegant part of the creation, and reliſhed the ſurpriſing exertion of its ſpeed with a refined and claſſical delight. In a little time he became perſonally

acquainted with every horſe in the ſtable, and intereſted himſelf in the reputation of each; while he alſo gratified his appetite for knowledge, in obſerving the methods of preparing their bodies, and training them to the race. His landlord ſaw and encouraged his eagerneſs, from which he promiſed himſelf ſome advantage; he formed ſeveral private matches for his entertainment, and flattered his diſcernment, by permitting him to be ſucceſsful in the firſt betts he made. Thus was he artfully decoyed into a ſpirit of keenneſs and adventure, and diſpoſed to depend upon his own judgment, in oppoſition to that of people who had made horſe-racing the ſole ſtudy of their lives. He accompanied my lord to Newmarket, and entering at once into the genius of the place, was marked as fair game, by all the knowing ones there aſſembled, many of whom found means to *take him in*, in ſpite of all the cautions and admonitions of his lordſhip, who wanted to reſerve him for his own uſe.

It is almoſt impoſſible for any man, let him be never ſo fearful or phlegmatic, to be an unconcerned ſpectator in this buſy ſcene. The demon of play hovers in the air, like a peſtilential vapour, tainting the minds of all preſent with infallible infection, which communicates from one perſon to another, like the circulation of a general panic. Peregrine was ſeized with this epidemic diſtemper to a violent degree; and, after having loſt a few looſe hundreds, in his progreſs through the various rookeries of the place, entered into partnerſhip with his noble friend in a grand match, upon the iſſue of which he ventured no leſs than three thouſand pounds. Indeed he would not have riſked ſuch a conſiderable ſum, had not his own confidence been reinforced by the opinion and concurrence of his lordſhip, who hazarded an equal bett upon the ſame event. Theſe two aſſociates engaged themſelves in the penalty of ſix thouſand pounds, to run one chaiſe and four againſt another, three times round the courſe; and our adventurer had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing his antagoniſt diſtanced in the firſt and ſecond heat; but, all of a ſudden, one of the horſes of his machine was knocked up, by which accident the victory was raviſhed almoſt from his very graſp, and he was obliged to endure the damage and the ſcorn.

He was deeply affected with this misfortune, which he nputed to his own extravagance and temerity; but diſ-overed no external ſigns of affliction, becauſe his illuſ-ious partner bore his loſs with the moſt philoſophic re-gnation, conſoling himſelf, as well as Pickle, with the ope of making it up on ſome other occaſion. Never-eleſs, our young gentleman could not help admiring, nd even envying his equanimity, not knowing that his rdſhip had managed matters ſo as to be a gainer by the iſfortune; which to retrieve, Peregrine purchaſed ſe-eral horſes, at the recommendation of his friend; and, nſtead of returning to London, made a tour with him o all the celebrated races in England, at which, after ſe-eral viciſſitudes of fortune, he made ſhift, before the end f the ſeaſon, to treble his loſs.

But his hopes ſeemed to increaſe with his ill luck. In he beginning of winter he came to town, fully perſuaded hat fortune muſt neceſſarily change, and that next ſea-on he ſhould reap the happy fruits of his experience. In his confidence, he ſeemed to drown all ideas of prudence nd economy. His former expence was mere parſimony, compared with that which he now incurred: He ſubſcribed to the opera, and half a dozen concerts at different parts of the town; was a benefactor to ſeveral hoſpitals, pur-chaſed a collection of valuable pictures, took an houſe, and furniſhed it in a moſt magnificent taſte, laid in a large ſtock of French wines, and gave extravagant entertain-ments to his quality friends, who, in return, loaded him with compliments, and inſiſted upon his making uſe of their intereſt and good will.

CHAPTER LXXXIX.

He is taken into the protection of a great man; ſets up for a member of parliament; is diſappointed in his expectation, and finds himſelf egre-gioufly outwitted.

AMONG theſe profeſſed patrons, the greateſt part of whom Peregrine ſaw through, there was one great perſonage, who ſeemed to ſupport with dignity the ſphere in which fortune had placed him. His behaviour to Pickle was not

to borrow ten thouſand pounds to make up the ſum that is requiſite to redeem the mortgage. Now, certain I am, that, when his deſign comes to be known, he will be ſolicited on all hands by people deſirous of lending money upon ſuch undoubted ſecurity; and 'tis odds but he has already promiſed the preference to ſome particular acquaintance. However, as I know he has your intereſt very much at heart, I will (if you pleaſe) ſound his lordſhip upon the ſubject, and in a day or two give you notice of my ſucceſs."

Peregrine, raviſhed with the proſpect of ſettling this affair ſo much to his ſatisfaction, thanked the ſteward for his friendly hint and undertaking, which he aſſured him ſhould be acknowledged by a more ſolid proof of his gratitude, provided the buſineſs could be brought to bear; and next day he was viſited by this kind manager, with the happy news of his lordſhip's having conſented to borrow ten thouſand pounds of his ſtock, upon mortgage, at the intereſt of five per cent. This information he received as an inſtance of the ſingular eſteem of his noble patron; and the papers being immediately drawn and executed, the money was depoſited in the hands of the mortgager, who, in the hearing of the lender, laid ſtrong injunctions on his ſteward, to pay the intereſt punctually at quarter-day.

The beſt part of our hero's fortune being thus happily depoſited, and the agent gratified with a preſent of fifty pieces, he began to put his retrenching ſcheme in execution; all his ſervants (Pipes excepted) were diſcharged, his chariot and running-horſes diſpoſed of, his houſekeeping broke up, and his furniture ſold by auction: Nay, the heat of his diſpoſition was as remarkable in this, as any other tranſaction in his life; for every ſtep of his ſaving project was taken with ſuch eagerneſs, and even precipitation, that moſt of his companions thought he was either ruined or mad. But he anſwered all their expoſtulations with a ſtring of prudent apophthegms, ſuch as, "The ſhorteſt follies are the beſt;" "Better to retrench upon conviction, than compulſion;" and divers other wiſe maxims, ſeemingly the reſult of experience and philoſophic reflection. To ſuch a degree of enthuſiaſm did his preſent economy prevail, that he was actually ſeized with

the deſire of amaſſing: And as he every day received propoſals from thoſe brokers whom he had employed, about the diſpoſal of his caſh, he at length ventured fifteen hundred pounds upon bottomry, being tempted by the exceſſive premium.

But it muſt be obſerved, for the honour of our adventurer, that this reformation did not at all interfere with the good qualities of his heart: He was ſtill as friendly and benevolent as ever, though his liberality was more ſubject to the reſtraint of reaſon; and he might have juſtly pleaded, in vindication of his generoſity, that he retrenched the ſuperfluities in his own way of living, in order to preſerve the power of aſſiſting his fellow-creatures in diſtreſs. Numberleſs were the objects to which he extended his charity in private. Indeed, he exerted this virtue in ſecret, not only on account of avoiding the charge of oſtentation, but alſo becauſe he was aſhamed of being detected in ſuch an awkward unfaſhionable practice, by the cenſorious obſervers of this humane generation. In this particular, he ſeemed to confound the ideas of virtue and vice; for he did good, as other people do evil, by ſtealth; and was ſo capricious in point of behaviour, that frequently, in public, he wagged his tongue in ſatirical animadverſions upon that poverty which his hand had in private relieved. Yet, far from ſhunning the acquaintance, or diſcouraging the ſolicitation of thoſe who, he thought, wanted his aſſiſtance, he was always acceſſible, open, and complaiſant to them, even when the haughtineſs of his temper kept his ſuperiors at a diſtance; and often ſaved a modeſt man the anguiſh and confuſion of declaring himſelf, by penetrating into his neceſſity, and anticipating his requeſt, in a frank offer of his purſe and friendſhip.

Not that he practiſed this beneficence to all the needy of his acquaintance without diſtinction; there is always a ſet of idle profligate fellows, who, having ſquandered away their own fortunes, and conquered all ſenſe of honour and ſhame, maintain themſelves by borrowing from thoſe who have not yet finiſhed the ſame career, and want reſolution to reſiſt their importunate demands. To theſe he was always inflexible; though he could not abſolutely detach himſelf from their company, becauſe, by

dint of effrontery, and ſuch of their original connections as they have been able to retain, they find admiſſion to all places of faſhionable reſort.

Several unſucceſsful attacks had been made upon his pocket by beggars of this claſs. One of the moſt artful of them, having one day joined him in the Mall, and made the uſual obſervation on the weather, damned all the fogs of London, and began a diſſertation on the difference of air, preferring that of the country in which he was born to any climate under the ſun. "Was you ever in Glouceſterſhire?" (ſaid he to Peregrine) who replying in the negative, he thus went on: "I have got a houſe there, where I ſhould be glad to ſee you. Let us go down together during the Eaſter holidays; I can promiſe you good country fare and wholeſome exerciſe; for I have every thing within myſelf, and as good a pack of fox-hounds as any in the three kingdoms. I ſha'n't pretend to expatiate upon the elegance of the houſe, which to be ſure, is an old building; and theſe, you know, are generally cold, and not very convenient. But, curſe the houſe; the dirty acres about it are the thing; and a damn'd fine parcel they are, to be ſure. If my old grandmother was dead—ſhe can't live another ſeaſon, for ſhe's turned of fourſcore, and quite wore out: Nay, as for that matter, I believe I have got a letter in my pocket, giving an account of her being deſpaired of by the doctors. Let me ſee—No, d—n it, I left it at home, in the pocket of another coat."

Pickle, who, from the beginning of this harangue, ſaw its tendency, ſeemed to yield the moſt ſerious attention to what he ſaid; breaking in upon it, every now and then, with the interjections, Hum! Ha! The deuce! and ſeveral civil queſtions, from which the other conceived happy omens of ſucceſs; till perceiving they had advanced as far as the paſſage into St. James's, the miſchievous youth interrupted him all at once, ſaying, "I ſee you are for the end of the walk; this is my way." With theſe words he took his leave of the ſaunterer, who would have delayed his retreat, by calling to him aloud, that he had not yet deſcribed the ſituation of his caſtle. But Peregrine, without ſtopping, anſwered in the ſame tone, "Another time will do as well;" and in a

ment diſappeared, leaving the projector very much mortified with his diſappointment; for his intention was to cloſe the deſcription with a demand of twenty pieces, to be repaid out of the firſt remittance he ſhould receive from his eſtate.

It would have been well for our hero, had he always acted with the ſame circumſpection: But he had his unguarded moments, in which he fell a prey to the unſuſpecting integrity of his own heart. There was a perſon among the number of his acquaintances, whoſe converſation he particularly reliſhed, becauſe it was frank, agreeable, and fraught with many ſenſible obſervations upon the craft and treachery of mankind. This gentleman had made a ſhift to diſcuſs a very genteel fortune, though it was ſpent with taſte and reputation, and now he was reduced to his ſhifts for the maintenance of his family, which conſiſted of a wife and child. Not that he was deſtitute of the neceſſaries of life, being comfortably ſupplied by the bounty of his friends; but this was a proviſion not at all ſuited to his inclination; and he had endeavoured, by divers unſucceſsful ſchemes, to retrieve his former independency.

Peregrine happened one evening to be ſitting alone in a coffeehouſe, where he overheard a converſation between this ſchemer and another gentleman, touching an affair that engaged his attention. The ſtranger had been left truſtee for fifteen hundred pounds bequeathed to the other's daughter by an aunt, and was ſtrongly ſolicited to pay the money to the child's father, who aſſured him, he had then an opportunity to lay it out in ſuch a manner as would greatly conduce to the advantage of his family. The truſtee reminded him of the nature of his charge, which made him accountable for the money until the child ſhould have attained the age of eighteen; but at the ſame time gave him to underſtand, that, if he could procure ſuch ſecurity as would indemnify him from the conſequences, he would forthwith pay the legacy into his hands. To this propoſal the father replied, that it was not to be ſuppoſed he would riſk the fortune of his only child upon any idle ſcheme or precarious iſſue; and therefore he thought it reaſonable, that he ſhould have the uſe of it in the mean time; and that, as to ſecurity,

he was loth to trouble any of his friends about an affair which might be compromiſed without their interpoſition; obſerving, that he would not look upon his condeſcenſion as a favour, if obtained by a ſecurity, on which he could borrow the ſame ſum from any uſurer in town.

After much importunity on one ſide, and evaſion on the other, the moneyed gentleman told him, that, though he would not ſurrender the ſum depoſited in his hands, for the uſe of his daughter, he would lend him what he ſhould have occaſion for, in the mean time; and if, upon her being of age, he ſhould be able to obtain her concurrence, the money ſhould be placed to her account, provided he could find any perſon of credit, who would join with him in a bond, for the aſſurance of the lender. This proviſo was an obſtruction which the other would not have been able to ſurmount, without great difficulty, had not his cauſe been eſpouſed by our hero, who thought it was a pity a man of honour and underſtanding ſhould ſuffer in his principal concerns, on ſuch a paltry conſideration. He therefore, preſuming on his acquaintance, interpoſed in the converſation as a friend, who intereſted himſelf in the affair; and, being fully informed of the particulars, offered himſelf as a ſecurity for the lender.

This gentleman being a ſtranger to Peregrine, was next day made acquainted with his funds; and, without farther ſcruple, accommodated his friend with one thouſand pounds, for which he took their bond payable in ſix months, though he proteſted that the money ſhould never be demanded, until the infant ſhould be of age, unleſs ſome accident ſhould happen which he could not then foreſee. Pickle believed this declaration ſincere, becauſe he could have no intereſt in diſſembling; but what he chiefly depended upon, for his own ſecurity, was the integrity and confidence of the borrower, who aſſured him, that, happen what would, he ſhould be able to ſtand between him and all danger; the nature of his plan being ſuch, as would infallibly treble the ſum in a very few months.

In a little time after this tranſaction, writs being iſſued out for electing a new parliament, our adventurer by the advice of his patron, went into the country, in order to

canvaſs for a borough, and lined his pockets with a competent ſhare of bank-notes for the occaſion. But, in this project, he unfortunately happened to interfere with the intereſt of a great family in the oppoſition, who, for a long ſeries of years, had made members for that place; and were now ſo much offended at the intruſion of our young gentleman, that they threatened to ſpend ten thouſand pounds in fruſtrating his deſign. This menace was no other than an incitement to Peregrine, who confided ſo much in his own influence and addreſs, that he verily believed he ſhould be able to baffle his grace, even in his own territories. By that victory he hoped to eſtabliſh his reputation and intereſt with the miniſter, who, through the recommendation of his noble friend, countenanced his cauſe, and would have been very well pleaſed to ſee one of his greateſt enemies ſuffer ſuch a diſgraceful overthrow, which would have, moreover, in a great meaſure, ſhaken his credit with his faction.

Our hero, intoxicated with the ideas of pride and ambition, put all his talents to the teſt, in the execution of this project. He ſpared no expence in treating the electors; but finding himſelf rivalled in this reſpect by his competitor, who was powerfully ſupported, he had recourſe to thoſe qualifications in which he thought himſelf ſuperior. He made balls for the ladies, viſited the matrons of the corporation, adapted himſelf to their various humours with ſurpriſing facility, drank with thoſe who loved a cheriſhing cup in private, made love to the amorous, prayed with the religious, goſſipped with thoſe who delighted in ſcandal, and with great ſagacity contrived agreeable preſents to them all. This was the moſt effectual method of engaging ſuch electors as were under the influence of their wives. As for the reſt, he aſſailed them in their own way, ſetting whole hogſheads of beer and wine abroach, for the benefit of all comers; and into thoſe ſordid hearts that liquor would not open, he found means to convey himſelf by the help of a golden key.

While he thus exerted himſelf, his antagoniſt was not idle; his age and infirmities would not permit him to enter perſonally into their parties; but his ſtewards and adherents beſtirred themſelves with great induſtry and

perſeverance. The market for votes ran ſo high, tha Pickle's ready money was exhauſted before the day o election; and he was obliged to write to his patron an account of the dilemma to which he was reduced; entreating him to take ſuch ſpeedy meaſures as would enable him to finiſh the buſineſs which he had ſo happily begun.

This nobleman communicated the circumſtances of the caſe to the miniſter, and in a day or two our candidate found credit with the receiver-general of the county, who lent him twelve hundred pounds on his perſonal note, payable on demand. By means of this new ſupply he managed matters ſo ſucceſsfully, that an evident majority of votes was ſecured in his intereſt, and nothing could have obſtructed his election, had not the noble peer who ſet up his competitor, in order to avoid the ſhame and mortification of being foiled in his own borough, offered to compromiſe the affair with his honour, by giving up two members in another place, provided the oppoſition ſhould ceaſe in his own corporation. This propoſal was greedily embraced. On the eve of the election, Peregrine received an intimation from his patron, deſiring him to quit his pretenſions, on pain of his and the miniſter's diſpleaſure; and promiſing that he ſhould be elected for another place.

No other diſappointment in life could have given him ſuch chagrin as he felt at the receipt of this tantalizing order, by which the cup of ſucceſs was ſnatched from his lip, and all the vanity of his ambitious hope humbled in the duſt. He curſed the whole chain of his court connections, inveighed with great animoſity againſt the raſcally ſcheme of politics to which he was ſacrificed; and in concluſion ſwore he would not give up the fruits of his own addreſs for the pleaſure of any miniſter upon earth. This laudable reſolution, however, was rendered ineffectual by his friend the receiver-general, who was bearer of the meſſage, and (after having, in vain, endeavoured to perſuade him to ſubmiſſion) fairly arreſted him upon the ſpot for the money he had advanced; this expedient being performed by virtue of a writ which he had been adviſed to take out, in caſe the young man ſhould prove refractory.

The reader, who by this time muſt be pretty well acquainted with the diſpoſition of our hero, may eaſily conceive how he reliſhed this adventure. At firſt, all the faculties of his ſoul were ſwallowed up in aſtoniſhment and indignation; and ſome minutes elapſed before his nerves would obey the impulſe of his rage, which manifeſted itſelf in ſuch an application to the temples of the plaintiff, as laid him ſprawling on the floor. This aſſault, which was committed in a tavern, whither he had been purpoſely decoyed, attracted the regard of the bailiff and his followers, who, to the number of four, ruſhed upon him at once, in order to overpower him; but his wrath inſpired him with ſuch additional ſtrength and agility, that he diſengaged himſelf from them in a trice, and, ſeizing a poker, which was the firſt weapon that preſented itſelf to his hand, exerciſed it upon their ſkulls with incredible dexterity and execution. The officer himſelf, who had been the firſt that preſumed to lay violent hands upon him, felt the firſt effects of his fury in a blow upon the jaws, in conſequence of which he loſt three of his teeth, and fell athwart the body of the receiver, with which he formed the figure of a St. Andrew's croſs: One of his myrmidons, ſeeing the fate of his chief, would not venture to attack the victor in front, but, wheeling to one ſide, made an attempt upon him in flank, and was received obliquely by our hero's left hand and foot, ſo maſterly diſpoſed to the right ſide of his leg, and the left ſide of his neck, that he bolted head foremoſt into the chimney, where his chin was encountered by the grate, which in a moment ſeared him to the bone. The reſt of the detachment did not think proper to maintain the diſpute, but, evacuating the room with great expedition, locked the door on the outſide, and bellowed aloud to the receiver's ſervants, beſeeching them to come to the aſſiſtance of their maſter, who was in danger of his life.

Meanwhile, this gentleman having recollected himſelf, demanded a parley; which having with difficulty obtained of our incenſed candidate, in conſequence of the moſt ſubmiſſive application, he complained grievouſly of the young gentleman's intemperance and heat of diſpoſition, and very calmly repreſented the danger of his raſhneſs and indiſcretion. He told him, that nothing could be

more outrageous or idle, than the reſiſtance he had made againſt the laws of his country, becauſe he would find it impracticable to withſtand the whole executive power of the country, which he could eaſily raiſe to apprehend and ſecure him; that, over and above the diſgrace that would accrue to him from this imprudent conduct, he would knock his own intereſt on the head, by diſobliging his friends in the adminiſtration, who were, to his knowledge, at preſent very well diſpoſed to do him ſervice; that, for his own part, what he had done was by the expreſs order of his ſuperiors, and not out of any deſire of diſtreſſing him; and that, far from being his enemy, notwithſtanding the ſhocking inſult he had ſuſtained, he was ready to withdraw the writ, provided he would liſten to any reaſonable terms of accommodation.

Peregrine, who was not more prone to anger than open to conviction, being appeaſed by his condeſcenſion, moved by his arguments, and chid by his own reflection for what he had done in the precipitation of his wrath, began to give ear to his remonſtrances; and the bailiffs being ordered to withdraw, they entered into a conference, the reſult of which was our adventurer's immediate departure for London; ſo that next day his competitor was unanimouſly choſen, becauſe nobody appeared to oppoſe his election.

The diſcontented Pickle, on his arrival in town, went directly to the houſe of his patron, to whom, in the anguiſh of his diſappointment, he bitterly complained of the treatment he had received, by which, beſides the diſgrace of his overthrow, he was no leſs than two thouſand pounds out of pocket, excluſive of the debt for which he ſtood engaged to the receiver. His lordſhip, who was prepared for this expoſtulation, on his knowledge of the young man's impetuous temper, anſwered all the articles of his charge with great deliberation, giving him to underſtand the motives that induced the miniſter to quit his intereſt in that borough; and ſoothing him with aſſurances that his loſs would be amply rewarded by his honour, to whom he was next day introduced by this nobleman, in the warmeſt ſtyle of recommendation. The miniſter, who was a pattern of complaiſance, received him with the moſt engaging affability; thanked him very kindly for his en-

deavours to ſupport and ſtrengthen the intereſt of the adminiſtration; and faithfully promiſed to lay hold on the firſt opportunity to expreſs the ſenſe he had of his zeal and attachment; deſiring to ſee him often at his levee, that, in the multiplicity of buſineſs, he might not be in danger of forgetting his ſervices and deſert.

CHAPTER XC.

Peregrine commences miniſter's dependent; meets by accident with Mrs. Gauntlet; and deſcends gradually in the condition of life.

THIS reception, favourable as it was, did not pleaſe Peregrine, who had too much diſcernment to be cajoled with general promiſes, at a time when he thought himſelf entitled to the moſt particular aſſurance. He accordingly ſignified his diſguſt to his introductor, giving him to underſtand, that he had laid his account with being choſen repreſentative of one of thoſe boroughs for which he had been ſacrificed. His lordſhip agreed to the reaſonableneſs of his expectation, obſerving, however, that he could not ſuppoſe the miniſter would enter upon buſineſs with him on his firſt viſit; and that it would be time enough at his next audience to communicate his demand.

Notwithſtanding this remonſtrance, our hero continued to indulge his ſuſpicion and chagrin, and even made a point of it with his patron, that his lordſhip ſhould next day make application in his behalf, leſt the two ſeats ſhould be filled up, on pretence of his inclinations being unknown. Thus importuned, my lord went to his principal, and returned with an anſwer, importing that his honour was extremely ſorry that Mr. Pickle had not ſignified his requeſt before the boroughs in queſtion were promiſed to two gentlemen whom he could not now diſappoint, with any regard to his own credit or intereſt; but as ſeveral perſons who would be choſen were, to his certain knowledge, very aged and infirm, he did not doubt that there would be plenty of vacant ſeats in a very ſhort time, and then the young gentleman might depend upon his friendſhip.

Peregrine was ſo much irritated at this intimatic in the firſt tranſports of his anger, he forgot the he owed his friend, and in his preſence inveighed the miniſter, as a perſon devoid of gratitude and c proteſting, that, if ever an opportunity ſhould offe he would ſpend the whole remains of his fortune poſing his meaſures. The nobleman having giv time to exhauſt the impetuoſity of his paſſion, i him very calmly for his diſreſpectful expreſſions, were equally injurious and indiſcreet; aſſured hi this project of revenge, if ever put in execution, wc dound to his own prejudice and confuſion; and him to cultivate and improve, with patience and a the footing he had already obtained in the miniſter graces.

Our hero, convinced of the truth, though not ſ with the occaſion of his admonitions, took his lea fit of ſullen diſcontent, and began to ruminate up ſhattered poſture of his affairs. All that now re of the ample fortune he had inherited was the had depoſited in his lordſhip's hands, together w teen hundred pounds he had ventured on bottomr the garriſon, which he had left for the uſe and acc dation of the lieutenant; and, on the per contra his account, he was debtor for the ſupply he had r from the receiver-general, and the money for wl was bound in behalf of his friend; ſo that he foun ſelf, for the firſt time of his life, very much emba in his circumſtances: For, of the firſt half year's i of his ten thouſand, which was punctually paid, l but fourſcore pounds in bank, without any proſpe farther ſupply, till the other term, which was at t tance of four long months. He ſeriouſly reflected the uncertainty of human affairs; the ſhip with l teen hundred pounds might be loſt, the gentlem whom he was ſecurity might miſcarry in this, as v in his former projects, and the miniſter might on through policy or diſpleaſure, expoſe him to the me his dependent, who was in poſſeſſion of his notes.

Theſe ſuggeſtions did not at all contribute to th of our adventurer's mind, already ruffled by his diſap ment. He curſed his own folly and extravagan

which he was reduced to ſuch an uncomfortable ſituation. He compared his own conduct with that of ſome young gentlemen of his acquaintance, who, while he was ſquandering away the beſt part of his inheritance, had improved their fortunes, ſtrengthened their intereſt, and increaſed their reputation. He was abandoned by his gaiety and good humour, his countenance gradually contracted itſelf into a repreſentation of ſeverity and care, he dropped all his amuſements and the companions of his pleaſure, and turned his whole attention to the miniſter, at whoſe levee he never failed to appear.

While he thus laboured in the wheel of dependence, with all that mortification which a youth of his pride and ſenſibility may be ſuppoſed to feel from ſuch a diſagreeable neceſſity, he one day heard himſelf called by name, as he croſſed the park; and turning, perceived the wife of Captain Gauntlet, with another lady. He no ſooner recogniſed the kind Sophy, than he accoſted her with his wonted civility of friendſhip; but his former ſprightly air was metamorphoſed into ſuch auſterity, or rather dejection of feature, that ſhe could ſcarce believe her own eyes; and, in her aſtoniſhment, "Is it poſſible (ſaid ſhe), that the gay Mr. Pickle ſhould be ſo much altered in ſuch a ſhort ſpace of time!" He made no other reply to this exclamation, but by a languid ſmile; and aſked how long ſhe had been in town? obſerving, that he would have paid his compliments to her at her own lodgings, had he been favoured with the leaſt intimation of her arrival. After having thanked him for his politeneſs, ſhe told him, it was not owing to any abatement of her friendſhip and eſteem for him, that ſhe had omitted to give him that notice; but his abrupt departure from Windſor, and the manner in which he quitted Mr. Gauntlet, had given her juſt grounds to believe that they had incurred his diſpleaſure; which ſuſpicion was reinforced by his long ſilence and neglect from that period to the preſent time. She obſerved it was ſtill farther confirmed, by his forbearing to inquire for Emilia and her brother: "Judge then (ſaid ſhe), if I had any reaſon to believe that you would be pleaſed to hear that I was in town. However, I will not detain you at preſent, becauſe you ſeem to be engaged about ſome particular buſineſs; but, if you will favour

me with your company at breakfaſt to-morrow, I ſhall be much pleaſed, and honoured to boot, by the viſit." So ſaying, ſhe gave him a direction to her lodgings; and he took his leave, with a faithful promiſe of ſeeing her at the appointed time.

He was very much affected with this advance of Sophy, which he conſidered as an inſtance of her uncommon ſweetneſs of temper; he felt ſtrange longings of returning friendſhip towards Godfrey; and the remembrance of Emilia melted his heart, already ſoftened with grief and mortification. Next day, he did not neglect his engagement, and had the pleaſure of enjoying a long converſation with this ſenſible young lady, who gave him to underſtand that her huſband was with his regiment; and preſented to him a fine boy, the firſt fruits of their love, whom they had chriſtened by the name of Peregrine, in memory of the friendſhip which had ſubſiſted between Godfrey and our youth.

This proof of their regard, notwithſtanding the interruption in their correſpondence, made a deep impreſſion upon the mind of our adventurer, who having made the warmeſt acknowledgments for this undeſerved mark of reſpect, took the child in his arms, and almoſt devoured him with kiſſes, proteſting before God, that he ſhould always conſider him with the tenderneſs of a parent. This was the higheſt compliment he could pay to the gentle Sophy, who again kindly chid him for his diſdainful and precipitate retreat, immediately after her marriage; and expreſſed an earneſt deſire of ſeeing him and the captain reconciled. He aſſured her, nothing could give him greater ſatisfaction than ſuch an event, to which he would contribute all that lay in his power, though he could not help looking upon himſelf as injured by Captain Gauntlet's behaviour, which denoted a ſuſpicion of his honour, as well as contempt for his underſtanding. The lady undertook for the conceſſion of her huſband, who (ſhe told him) had been extremely ſorry for his own heat, after Mr. Pickle's departure, and would have followed him to the garriſon, in order to ſolicit his forgiveneſs, had he not been reſtrained by certain punctilios, occaſioned by ſome acrimonious expreſſions that dropt from Peregrine at the inn.

having cleared up this miſunderſtanding, ſhe pro-
o give an account of Emilia, whoſe behaviour, at
ſure, plainly indicated a continuance of affection
irſt lover; and deſired, that he would give her full
:o bring that matter alſo to an accommodation:
I am not more certain of my own exiſtence (ſaid
n that you are ſtill in poſſeſſion of my ſiſter's
At this declaration, the tear ſtarted in his eye:
ſhook his head, and declined her good offices,
that the young lady might be much more happy
:r he ſhould be able to make her.
Gauntlet, confounded at theſe expreſſions, and
y the deſponding manner in which they were de-
begged to know if any new obſtacle was raiſed,
late change in his ſentiments or ſituation: And
rder to avoid a painful explanation, told her, that
ong deſpaired of being able to vanquiſh Emilia's
:nt, and for that reaſon quitted the purſuit, which
l never renew, howſoever his heart might ſuffer
reſolution; though he took Heaven to witneſs,
love, eſteem, and admiration of her, were not
aſt impaired: But the true motive of his laying
deſign, was the conſciouſneſs of his decayed for-
hich, by adding to the ſenſibility of his pride, in-
the horror of another repulſe. She expreſſed her
for this determination, both on his own account,
ehalf of Emilia, whoſe happineſs (in her opinion)
d upon his conſtancy and affection; and ſhe would
eſtioned him more minutely about the ſtate of
rs, had not he diſcouraged the inquiry, by ſeeking
duce another ſubject of converſation.
mutual proteſtations of friendſhip and regard,
iſed to viſit her often, during her reſidence in
and took his leave in a ſtrange perplexity of mind,
ed by the images of love, intruding upon the re-
nces of carking care. He had ſome time ago
i thoſe extravagant companions with whom he
ted in the heyday of his fortune, and begun to
with a graver and more ſober ſpecies of acquaint-
but he now found himſelf diſabled from cultivat-
ſociety of theſe alſo, who were men of ample
and liberal diſpoſitions; in conſequence of which,

their parties were too expenſive for the conſumptive ſtate of his finances; ſo that he was obliged to deſcend to another degree, and mingle with a ſet of old bachelors and younger brothers, who ſubſiſted on ſlender annuities, or what is called a bare competency in the public funds. This aſſociation was compoſed of ſecond-hand politicians and minor critics, who in the forenoon ſaunter in the Mall, or lounge at ſhows of pictures, appear in the drawing-room once or twice a week, dine at an ordinary, decide diſputes in a coffeehouſe, with an air of ſuperior intelligence, frequent the pit of the play-houſe, and once in a month ſpend an evening with ſome noted actor, whoſe remarkable ſayings they repeat for the entertainment of their ordinary friends.

After all, he found ſomething comfortable enough in the company of theſe gentlemen, who never intereſted his paſſions to any violence of tranſport, nor teazed him with impertinent curioſity about his private affairs: For though many of them had maintained a very long, cloſe, and friendly correſpondence with each other, they never dreamt of inquiring into particular concerns; and if one of the two who were moſt intimately connected, had been aſked how the other made a ſhift to live? he would have anſwered with great truth, "Really, that is more than I know." Notwithſtanding this phlegmatic indifference, which is of the true Engliſh production, they were all inoffenſive, good-natured people, who loved a joke and a ſong, delighted in telling a merry ſtory, and prided themſelves in the art of catering, eſpecially in the articles of fiſh, veniſon, and wild-fowl.

Our young gentleman was not received among them on the footing of a common member, who makes intereſt for his admiſſion; he was courted as a perſon of ſuperior genius and importance, and his compliance looked upon as an honour to their ſociety. This their idea of his pre-eminence was ſupported by his converſation, which, while it was more liberal and learned than that to which they had been accuſtomed, was tinctured with an aſſuming air, ſo agreeably diffuſed, that, inſtead of producing averſion, it commanded reſpect. They not only appealed to him, in all doubts relating to foreign parts, to which one and all of them were ſtrangers, but

alſo conſulted his knowledge in hiſtory and divinity, which were frequently the topics of their debates; and, in poetry of all kinds, he decided with ſuch magiſterial authority, as even weighed againſt the opinions of the players themſelves. The variety of characters he had ſeen and obſerved, and the high ſpheres of life in which he had ſo lately moved, furniſhed him with a thouſand entertaining anecdotes. When he became a little familiarized to his diſappointments, ſo that his natural vivacity began to revive, he flaſhed among them in ſuch a number of bright ſallies, as ſtruck them with admiration, and conſtituted himſelf a claſſic in wit; inſomuch that they began to retail his remnants, and even invited ſome particular friends to come and hear him hold forth. One of the players, who had for many years ſtrutted about the taverns in the neighbourhood of Covent Garden as the Grand Turk of wit and humour, began to find his admirers melt away; and a certain petulant phyſician, who had ſhone at almoſt all the port clubs in that end of the town, was actually obliged to import his talents into the city, where he has now happily taken root.

Nor was this ſucceſs to be wondered at, if we conſider that, over and above his natural genius and education, our adventurer ſtill had the opportunity of knowing every thing which happened among the great, by means of his friend Cadwallader, with whom he ſtill maintained his former intimacy, though it was now chequered with many occaſional tifts, owing to the ſarcaſtic remonſtrances of the miſanthrope, who diſapproved of thoſe ſchemes which miſcarried with Peregrine, and now took unſeaſonable methods of valuing himſelf upon his own foreſight: Nay, he was between whiles like a raven croaking preſages of more ill luck from the deceit of the miniſter, the diſſimulation of his patron, the folly of the projector, for whom he was bound, the uncertainty of the ſeas, and the villany of thoſe with whom he had intruſted his caſh, for Crabtree ſaw and conſidered every thing through a perſpective of ſpleen, that always reflected the worſt ſide of human nature.

For theſe reaſons our young gentleman began to be diſguſted, at certain intervals, with the character of this old man, whom he now thought a moroſe cynic, not ſo

much incenſed againſt the follies and vices of mankind, as delighted with the diſtreſs of his fellow-creatures. Thus he put the moſt unfavourable conſtruction on the principles of his friend, becauſe he found himſelf juſtly fallen under the laſh of his animadverſion.

Thus ſelf-accuſation very often diſſolves the cloſeſt friendſhip: A man, conſcious of his own indiſcretion, is implacably offended at the rectitude of his companion's conduct, which he conſiders as an inſult upon his failings, never to be forgiven, even though he has not taſted the bitterneſs of reproof, which no ſinner can commodiouſly digeſt. The friendſhip, therefore, ſubſiſting between Crabtree and Pickle, had of late ſuffered ſeveral ſymptomatic ſhocks, that ſeemed to prognoſticate a total diſſolution; a great deal of ſmart dialogue had paſſed in their private converſations, and the ſenior began to repent of having placed his confidence in ſuch an imprudent, headſtrong, ungovernable youth.

It was in ſuch paroxyms of diſpleaſure, that he propheſied misfortune to Peregrine, and even told him one morning, that he had dreamed of the ſhipwreck of the two Eaſt Indiamen, on board of which he had hazarded his money. But this was no other than a falſe viſion; for in a few weeks, one of them arrived at her moorings in the river, and he received a thouſand in lieu of eight hundred pounds which he had lent upon bond to one of the mates. At the ſame time he was informed, that the other ſhip, in which he was concerned, had, in all probability, loſt her paſſage for the ſeaſon, by being unable to weather the Cape. He was not at all concerned at that piece of news, knowing, that the longer he ſhould lie out of his money, he would have the more intereſt to receive; and finding his preſent difficulties removed by this ſupply, his heart began to dilate, and his countenance to reſume its former alacrity.

This ſtate of exultation, however, was ſoon interrupted by a ſmall accident, which he could not foreſee: He was viſited one morning by the perſon who had lent his friend a thouſand pounds on his ſecurity, and given to underſtand, that the borrower had abſconded, in conſequence of a diſappointment, by which he had loſt the whole ſum and all hopes of retrieving it; ſo that our he-

to was now liable for the debt, which he beſought him to diſcharge according to the bond, that he (the lender) might not ſuffer by his humanity. It may be eaſily conceived that Peregrine did not receive this intelligence in cold blood. He curſed his own imprudence in contracting ſuch engagements with an adventurer, whom he did not ſufficiently know. He exclaimed againſt the treachery of the projector; and having for ſome time indulged his reſentment in threats and imprecations, inquired into the nature of the ſcheme which had miſcarried.

The lender, who had informed himſelf of the whole affair, gratified his curioſity in this particular, by telling him that the fugitive had been cajoled by a certain knight of the poſt, who undertook to manage the thouſand pounds in ſuch a manner as would, in a very little time, make him perfectly independent; and thus he delineated the plan: "One half of the ſum (ſaid he) ſhall be laid out in jewels, which I will pawn to certain perſons of credit and fortune, who lend money upon ſuch pledges at an exorbitant intereſt. The other ſhall be kept for relieving them, ſo that they may be again depoſited with a ſecond ſet of thoſe honourable uſurers; and when they ſhall have been circulated in this manner through a variety of hands, we will extort money from each of the pawnbrokers, by threatening them with a public proſecution, for exacting illegal intereſt; and I know that they will bleed freely, rather than be expoſed to the infamy attending ſuch an accuſation." The ſcheme was feaſible, and though not very honourable, made ſuch an impreſſion upon the needy borrower, that he aſſented to the propoſal; and, by our hero's credit, the money was raiſed. The jewels were accordingly purchaſed, pawned, relieved, and repledged by the agent, who undertook to manage the whole affair; and ſo judiciouſly was the project executed, that he could have eaſily proved each lender guilty of the charge. Having thus far ſucceſsfully tranſacted the buſineſs, this faithful agent viſited them ſeverally on his own account, to give them intimation, that his employer intended to ſue them on the ſtatute of uſury; upon which, every one for himſelf bribed the informer to withdraw his evidence, by which alone he could be convicted; and having received theſe gratifications, he had thought proper to retreat into

France with the whole booty, including the original thouſand that put them in motion. In conſequence of this decampment, the borrower had withdrawn himſelf; ſo that the lender was obliged to have recourſe to his ſecurity.

This was a very mortifying account to our young gentleman, who in vain reminded the narrator of his promiſe, importing, that he would not demand the money, until he ſhould be called to an account by his ward; and obſerved, that, long before that period, the fugitive might appear and diſcharge the debt. But the other was deaf to theſe remonſtrances; alleging, that his promiſe was proviſional, on the ſuppoſition that the borrower would deal candidly and fairly; that he had forfeited all title to his friendſhip and truſt, by the ſcandalous ſcheme in which he had embarked; and that his treacherous flight from his ſecurity was no proof of his honeſty and intended return; but, on the contrary, a warning, by which he (the lender) was taught to take care of himſelf. He therefore inſiſted upon his being indemniſied immediately, on pain of letting the law take its courſe; and Peregrine was actually obliged to part with the whole ſum he had ſo lately received. But this payment was not made without extreme reluctance, indignation, and denunciation of eternal war againſt the abſconder, and the rigid creditor, betwixt whom he ſuſpected ſome colluſion.

CHAPTER XCI.

Cadwallader acts the part of a comforter to his friend; and in his turn is conſoled by Peregrine, who begins to find himſelf a moſt egregious dupe.

THIS new misfortune, which he juſtly charged to the account of his own folly, recalled his chagrin; and though he endeavoured with all his might to conceal the affair from the knowledge of Cadwallader, that prying obſerver perceived his countenance overcaſt. The projector's ſudden diſappearance alarming his ſuſpicion, he managed his inquiries with ſo much art, that in a few days he made himſelf acquainted with every particular of the tranſaction, and reſolved to gratify his ſpleen at the expence of

he impatient dupe. With this view, he took an opportunity to accoſt him with a very ſerious air, ſaying a friend of his had immediate occaſion for a thouſand pounds, and as Peregrine had the exact ſum lying by him, he would take it as a great favour, if he would part with it for a few months on undoubted ſecurity. Had Pickle known the true motive of this demand, he would in all likelihood have made a very diſagreeable anſwer; but Crabtree had wrapt himſelf up ſo ſecurely in the diſſimulation of his features, that the youth could not poſſibly penetrate into his intention; and in the moſt galling ſuſpenſe replied, that the money was otherwiſe engaged. The miſanthrope, not contented with this irritation, aſſumed the prerogative of a friend, and queſtioned him ſo minutely about the diſpoſal of the caſh, that, after numberleſs evaſions, which coſt him a world of torture to invent, he could contain his vexation no longer, but exclaimed in a rage, "Damn your impertinence! 'tis gone to the devil, and that's enough!" "Thereafter, as it may be (ſaid this tormenter, with a moſt provoking indifference of aſpect), I ſhould be glad to know upon what footing; for I ſuppoſe you have ſome expectation of advantage from that quarter." "'Sdeath! Sir (cried the impatient youth), if I had any expectation from hell, I would make intereſt with you; for I believe, from my ſoul, you are one of its moſt favoured miniſters upon earth." With theſe words, he flung out of the room, leaving Cadwallader very well ſatisfied with the chaſtiſement he had beſtowed.

Peregrine having cooled himſelf with a ſolitary walk in the park, during which the violence of his choler gradually evaporated, and his reflection was called to a ſerious deliberation upon the poſture of his affairs; he reſolved to redouble his diligence and importunity with his patron and the miniſter, in order to obtain ſome ſinecure, which would indemnify him for the damage he had ſuſtained on their account. He accordingly went to his lordſhip and ſignified his demand, after having told him, that he had ſuffered ſeveral freſh loſſes, which rendered an immediate proviſion of that ſort neceſſary to his credit and ſubſiſtence.

His noble friend commended him for the regard he manifeſted for his own intereſt, which he conſidered as a

ſrauded of three hundred pounds, the greateſt part of which I owe to tradeſmen, whom I have promiſed to pay this very quarter. Pox upon her! I would ſhe were an horned beaſt, that the diſtemper might lay hold on her. The beldame has the impudence too (after ſhe has brought me into this dilemma) to ſolicit my aſſiſtance to ſtock the farm anew! Before God, I have a good mind to ſend her an halter, and perhaps I might purchaſe another for myſelf, but that I would not furniſh food for laughter to knaves and coxcombs."

Peregrine having peruſed the billet, and liſtened to this ejaculation, replied with great compoſure, that he was aſhamed to ſee a man of his years and pretenſions to philoſophy ſo ruffled by a trifle. "What ſignify all the boaſted hardſhips you have overcome (ſaid he), and the ſhrewd obſervations you pretend to have made on human nature? Where is that ſtoical indifference you affirm you have attained, if ſuch a paltry diſappointment can diſturb you in this manner? What is the loſs of three hundred pounds, compared with the misfortunes which I myſelf have undergone within theſe two years? Yet you will take upon you to act the cenſor, and inveigh againſt the impatience and impetuoſity of youth, as if you yourſelf had gained an abſolute conqueſt over all the paſſions of the heart. You was ſo kind as to inſult me t'other day in my affliction, by reproaching me with indiſcretion and miſconduct; ſuppoſe I were now to retort the imputation, and aſk how a man of your profound ſagacity could leave your fortune at the diſcretion of ignorant peaſants? How could you be ſo blind as not to foreſee the neceſſity of repairs, together with the danger of bankruptcy, murrain, or thin crop? Why did you not convert your land into ready money, and (as you have no connections in life) purchaſe an annuity, on which you might have lived at your eaſe, without any fear of the conſequence?—Can't you, from the whole budget of your philoſophy, cull one apophthegm to conſole you for this trivial miſchance?

"Rot your rapidity?—(ſaid the cynic, half choked with gall)—if the cancer or the pox were in your throat, I ſhould not be thus tormented with your tongue; and yet a magpye ſhall ſpeak infinitely more to the purpoſe.

Don't you know, Mr. Wiſeacre, that my caſe does not fall within the province of philoſophy? Had I been curtailed of all my members, racked by the gout and gravel, deprived of liberty, robbed of an only child, or viſited with the death of a dear friend like you, philoſophy might have contributed to my conſolation: but will philoſophy pay my debts, or free me from the burden of obligation to a ſet of fellows whom I deſpiſe?—Speak—pronounce—demonſtrate—or may heaven cloſe your mouth for ever!"

"Theſe are the comfortable fruits of your miſanthropy (anſwered the youth), your laudable ſcheme of detaching yourſelf from the bonds of ſociety, and of moving in a ſuperior ſphere of your own. Had not you been ſo peculiarly ſage, and intent upon laughing at mankind, you could never have been diſconcerted by ſuch a pitiful inconvenience; any friend would have accommodated you with the ſum in queſtion. But now the world may retort the laugh; for you ſtand upon ſuch an agreeable footing with your acquaintance, that nothing could pleaſe them better than an account of your having given diſappointment the ſlip, by the help of a nooſe properly applied. This I mention by way of hint, upon which I would have you chew the cud of reflection; and, ſhould it come to that iſſue, I will uſe my whole intereſt with the coroner to bring in his verdict *Lunacy*, that your carcaſe may have Chriſtian burial."

So ſaying, he withdrew, very well ſatisfied with the revenge he had taken, which operated ſo violently upon Crabtree, that, if it had not been for the ſole conſideration mentioned above, he would, in all probability, have had recourſe to the remedy propoſed. But his unwillingneſs to oblige and entertain his fellow-creatures hindered him from practiſing that expedient, till, by courſe of poſt, he was happily undeceived with regard to the ſituation of his affairs; and that information had ſuch an effect upon him, that he not only forgave our hero for the ſtratagem, which he immediately aſcribed to the right author, but alſo made him a tender of his purſe; ſo that matters for the preſent were brought to an amicable accommodation.

Meanwhile Peregrine never ſlaked in his attendance

ther in gratifying his demand, or oppoſing his revenge; but he knew that the ſale of the mortgage could not be effected without an inquiry, to which he did not wiſh to be expoſed. He therefore employed all his intereſt in procuring the ſolicited audience. This being granted, Peregrine, with great warmth and elocution, expatiated upon the injury his fortune had ſuffered in the affair of the borough, for which he had ſtood candidate; he took notice of the diſappointment he had ſuſtained in the other election, reminded him of the promiſes with which he had been amuſed, and, in concluſion, deſired to know what he had to expect from his favour.

The miniſter having patiently heard him to an end, replied with a moſt gracious aſpect, that he was very well informed of his merit and attachment, and very much diſpoſed to convince him of the regard which he paid to both; that till of late he did not know the nature of his expectations, neither had he the power of creating poſts for thoſe whom he was inclined to ſerve; but if Mr. Pickle would chalk out any feaſible method by which he could manifeſt his ſentiments of friendſhip, he ſhould not be backward in executing the plan.

Peregrine, laying hold on this declaration, mentioned ſeveral places which he knew to be vacant: But the old evaſion was ſtill uſed; one of them was not in his department of buſineſs, another had been promiſed to the third ſon of a certain earl before the death of the laſt poſſeſſor, and a third was encumbered with a penſion that ate up a good half of the appointments. In ſhort, ſuch obſtructions were ſtarted to all his propoſals as he could not poſſibly ſurmount, though he plainly perceived they were no other than ſpecious pretexts to cover the mortifying ſide of a refuſal. Exaſperated, therefore, at this lack of ſincerity and gratitude, "I can eaſily foreſee (ſaid he), that ſuch difficulties will never be wanting, when I have any thing to aſk; and for that reaſon will ſave myſelf the trouble of any farther application." So ſaying, he withdrew in a very abrupt manner, breathing defiance and revenge. But his patron, who did not think proper to drive him to extremities, found means to perſuade his honour to do ſomething for the pacification of the young man's choler; and that ſame evening our adventurer re-

ceived a meſſage from his lordſhip, deſiring to ſee him immediately.

In conſequence of this intimation, Pickle went to his houſe, and appeared before him with a very cloudy aſpect, which ſignified to whom it might concern, that his temper was at preſent too much galled to endure reproof; and therefore the ſagacious peer forbore taking him to taſk for his behaviour during the audience he had obtained; but gave him to underſtand, that the miniſter, in conſideration of his ſervices, had ſent him a bank note of three hundred pounds, with a promiſe of the like ſum yearly, until he could be otherwiſe provided for. This declaration in ſome meaſure appeaſed the youth, who condeſcended to accept the preſent; and, next levee day, made his acknowledgment to the donor, who favoured him with a ſmile of infinite complacency, which entirely diſſipated all the remains of his reſentment; for, as he could not poſſibly divine the true cauſe of his being temporized with, he looked upon this condeſcenſion as an undoubted proof of Sir Steady's ſincerity, and firmly believed that he would ſettle him in ſome place with the firſt opportunity, rather than continue to pay this penſion out of his own pocket. In all probability, his prediction would have been verified, had not an unforeſeen accident in a moment overwhelmed the bark of his intereſt at court.

Meanwhile, this ſhort gleam of good fortune recalled the ideas of pride and ambition which he had formerly cheriſhed. His countenance was again lifted up, his good humour retrieved, and his mien re-exalted. Indeed, he began to be conſidered as a riſing man by his fellow dependents, who ſaw the particular notice with which he was favoured at the public levee; and ſome of them, for that reaſon were at pains to court his good graces. He no longer ſhunned his former intimates, with whom a good part of his fortune had been ſpent, but made up to them in all places of public reſort, with the ſame eaſe and familiarity as he had been uſed to expreſs, and even reimbarked in ſome of their exceſſes, upon the ſtrength of his ſanguine expectation. Cadwallader and he renewed their conſultations in the court of ridicule; and divers exploits were

value. Peregrine, in ſpite of his chagrin, could not help owning within himſelf, that there was a good deal of reaſon in this refuſal. After having given looſe to his indignation, in the moſt violent invectives againſt the defunct, he took his leave of the complaiſant heir, and had immediate recourſe to the advice of counſel, who aſſured him that he had an excellent plea, and was accordingly retained in the cauſe.

All theſe meaſures were taken in the firſt vigour of his exertion, during which his ſpirits were ſo fluſtered with the diverſity of paſſions produced by his miſchance, that he miſtook for equanimity that which was no other than intoxication; and two whole days elapſed, before he attained a due ſenſe of his misfortune. Then indeed he underwent a woeful ſelf-examination; every circumſtance of the inquiry added freſh pangs to his reflection; and the reſult of the whole was a diſcovery, that his fortune was totally conſumed, and himſelf reduced to a ſtate of the moſt deplorable dependence. This ſuggeſtion alone might (in the anguiſh of his deſpondency) have driven him to ſome deſperate courſe, had it not been in ſome meaſure qualified by the confidence of his lawyers, and the aſſurance of the miniſter, which (ſlender as the world hath generally found them) were the only bulwarks between miſery and him.

The mind is naturally pliable, and, provided it has the leaſt hope to lean upon, adapts itſelf wonderfully to the emergencies of fortune, eſpecially when the imagination is gay and luxuriant. This was the caſe with our adventurer; inſtead of indulging the melancholy ideas which his loſs inſpired, he had recourſe to the flattering deluſions of hope, ſoothing himſelf with unſubſtantial plans of future greatneſs, and endeavouring to cover what was paſt with the veil of oblivion.

After ſome heſitation, he reſolved to make Crabtree acquainted with his misfortune, that once for all he might paſs the ordeal of his ſatire, without ſubjecting himſelf to a long ſeries of ſarcaſtic hints and doubtful alluſions, which he could not endure. He accordingly took the firſt opportunity of telling him, that he was abſolutely ruined by the perfidy of his patron, and deſired that he would not aggravate his affliction by thoſe cynical remarks

which were peculiar to men of his miſanthropical diſpoſition. Cadwallader liſtened to this declaration with internal ſurpriſe, which, however, produced no alteration in his countenance; and, after ſome pauſe, obſerved, that our hero had no reaſon to look for any new obſervation from him upon this event, which he had long foreſeen, and daily expected; and exhorted him, with an ironical ſneer, to conſole himſelf with the promiſe of the miniſter, who would doubtleſs diſcharge the debts of his deceaſed boſom-friend.

CHAPTER XCIII.

Peregrine commits himſelf to the public, and is admitted member of a college of authors.

THE bitterneſs of this explanation being paſſed, our young gentleman began to revolve within himſelf ſchemes for making up the deficiencies of his yearly income, which was now ſo grievouſly reduced, and determined to profit, in ſome ſhape or other, by thoſe talents which he owed to nature and education. He had, in his affluence, heard of ſeveral authors, who, without any pretenſions to genius, or human literature, earned a very genteel ſubſiſtence, by undertaking work for bookſellers, in which reputation was not at all concerned. One (for example) profeſſed all manner of tranſlation, at ſo much per ſheet, and actually kept five or ſix amanuenſes continually employed, like ſo many clerks in a counting-houſe; by which means he was enabled to live at his eaſe, and enjoy his friend and his bottle, ambitious of no other character than that of an honeſt man, and a good neighbour. Another projected a variety of plans for new dictionaries, which were executed under his eye by day-labourers; and the province of a third was hiſtory and voyages, collected or abridged by underſtrappers of the ſame claſs.

Mr. Pickle, in his compariſons, paid ſuch deference to his own capacity, as baniſhed all doubts of his being able to excel any of thoſe undertakers, in their different branches of profeſſion, if ever he ſhould be driven to that experiment;—but his ambition prompted him to make his in-

tereſt and glory coincide, by attempting ſome performance which ſhould do him honour with the public, and at the ſame time eſtabliſh his importance among the copy-purchaſers in town. With this view he worſhipped the muſe; and, conſcious of the little regard which is, in this age, paid to every ſpecies of poetic compoſition, in which neither ſatire nor obſcenity occurs, he produced an imitation of Juvenal, and laſhed ſome conſpicuous characters, with equal truth, ſpirit, and ſeverity. Though his name did not appear in the title-page of this production, he managed matters ſo, as that the work was univerſally imputed to the true author, who was not altogether diſappointed in his expectations of ſucceſs; for the impreſſion was immediately ſold off, and the piece became the ſubject of converſation in all aſſemblies of taſte.

This happy exordium not only attracted the addreſſes of the bookſellers, who made intereſt for his acquaintance, but alſo rouſed the notice of a ſociety of authors, who ſtyled themſelves The College, from which he was honoured with a deputation, offering to enrol him a member by unanimous conſent. The perſon employed for this purpoſe being a bard who had formerly taſted of our hero's bounty, uſed all his eloquence to perſuade him to comply with the advances of their fraternity, which he deſcribed in ſuch a manner as inflamed the curioſity of Pickle, who diſmiſſed the ambaſſador, with an acknowledgment of the great honour they conferred upon him, and a faithful promiſe of endeavouring to merit the continuance of their approbation.

He was afterwards, by the ſame miniſter, inſtructed in the ceremonies of the college; and, in conſequence of his information, compoſed an ode, to be publicly recited on the evening of his introduction. He underſtood that this conſtitution was no other than a body of authors, incorporated by mutual conſent, for their joint advantage and ſatisfaction, oppoſed to another aſſembly of the ſame kind, their avowed enemies and detractors. No wonder, then, that they ſought to ſtrengthen themſelves with ſuch a valuable acquiſition as our hero was like to prove. The college conſiſted of authors only, and theſe of all degrees in point of reputation, from the fabricator of a ſong ſet to muſic, and ſung at Marybone, to the dramatic bard

who had appeared in buſkins upon the ſtage; nay, one of the members had actually finiſhed eight books of an epic poem, for the publication of which, he was, at that time, ſoliciting ſubſcriptions.

It cannot be ſuppoſed that ſuch a congregation of the ſons of Apollo would ſit a whole evening with order and decorum, unleſs they were under the check of ſome eſtabliſhed authority; and this inconvenience having been foreſeen, they had elected a preſident, veſted with full power to ſilence any member or members that ſhould attempt to diſturb the harmony and ſubordination of the whole. The ſage, who at this time poſſeſſed the chair, was a perſon in years, whoſe countenance was a lively portraiture of that rancorous diſcontent which follows repeated damnation. He had been extremely unfortunate in his theatrical productions, and was (to uſe the words of a profane wag, who aſſiſted at the condemnation of his laſt play) by this time *damned beyond redemption.* Nevertheleſs, he ſtill tarried about the ſkirts of Parnaſſus, tranſlating ſome of the claſſics, and writing miſcellanies; and, by dint of an invincible aſſurance, ſupercilious inſolence, the moſt undaunted virulence of tongue, and ſome knowledge of life, he made ſhift to acquire and maintain the character of a man of learning and wit, in the opinion of people who had neither; that is, thirty-nine in forty of thoſe with whom he aſſociated himſelf. He was even looked upon in this light by ſome few of the college; though the major part of thoſe who favoured his election, were ſuch as dreaded his malice, reſpected his experience and ſeniority, or hated his competitor, who was the epic poet.

The chief end of this ſociety (as I have already hinted) was to aſſiſt and ſupport each other in their productions, which they mutually recommended to ſale, with all their art and influence, not only in private converſation, but alſo in occaſional epigrams, criticiſms, and advertiſements inſerted in the public papers. This ſcience, which is known by the vulgar appellation of *puffing*, they carried to ſuch a pitch of fineſſe, that an author very often wrote an abuſive anſwer to his own performance, in order to inflame the curioſity of the town, by which it had been overlooked. Notwithſtanding this general unanimity in the

college, a private animoſity had long ſubſiſted between the two rivals I have mentioned, on account of precedence, to which both laid claim, though, by a majority of votes, it had been decided in favour of the preſent chairman. The grudge indeed never proceeded to any degree of outrage or defiance, but manifeſted itſelf at every meeting, in attempts to eclipſe each other in ſmart ſayings and pregnant repartee; ſo that there was always a delicate meſs of this kind of wit ſerved up in the front of the evening, for the entertainment and example of the junior members, who never failed to divide upon this occaſion, declaring themſelves for one or other of the combatants, whom they encouraged by their looks, geſtures, and applauſe, according to the circumſtances of the diſpute.

This honourable conſiſtory was held in the beſt room of an ale-houſe, which afforded wine, punch, or beer, ſuitable to the purſe or inclination of every individual, who ſeparately paid for his own choice;—and here was our hero introduced in the midſt of twenty ſtrangers, who, by their looks and equipage, formed a very picturesque variety. He was received with a moſt gracious ſolemnity, and placed upon the right hand of the preſident, who, having commanded ſilence, recited aloud his introductory ode, which met with univerſal approbation. Then was tendered to him the cuſtomary oath, obliging him to conſult the honour and advantage of the ſociety as far as it ſhould lie in his power, in every ſtation of life; and this being taken, his temples were bound with a wreath of laurel, which was kept ſacred for ſuch inauguration.

When theſe rites were performed with all due ceremony, the new member caſt his eyes around the place, and took a more accurate ſurvey of his brethren; among whom he obſerved a ſtrange collection of periwigs, with regard to the colour, faſhions, and dimenſions, which were ſuch as he had never ſeen before. Thoſe who ſat on each ſide, neareſt the preſident, were generally diſtinguiſhed by venerable tyes, the foretops of which exhibited a ſurpriſing diverſity; ſome of them roſe ſlanting backwards, like the glacis of a fortification; ſome were elevated in two diſtinct eminencies, like the hills Helicon and Parnaſſus; and others were curled and reflected, as the horns

of Jupiter Ammon. Next to theſe, the majors took place, many of which were mere ſuccedanea, made by the application of an occaſional roſe to the tail of a lank bob; and in the lower form appeared maſſes of hair, which would admit of no deſcription.

Their clothes were tolerably well ſuited to the furniture of their heads, the apparel of the upper bench being decent and clean, while that of the ſecond claſs was threadbare and ſoiled; and, at the lower end of the room, he perceived divers efforts made to conceal their rent breeches and dirty linen: Nay, he could diſtinguiſh by their countenances the different kinds of poetry in which they exerciſed the muſe: He ſaw Tragedy conſpicuous in a grave ſolemnity of regard, Satire louring in a frown of envy and diſcontent, Elegy whining in a funeral aſpect, Paſtoral dozing in a moſt inſipid languor of face, Ode-writing delineated in a diſtracted ſtare, and Epigram ſquinting with a pert ſneer.—Perhaps our hero, refined too much in his penetration, when he affirmed, that, over and above theſe diſcoveries, he could plainly perceive the ſtate of every one's finances, and would have undertaken to have gueſſed each particular ſum, without varying three farthings from the truth.

The converſation, inſtead of becoming general, began to fall into parties; and the epic poet had actually attracted the attention of a private committee, when the chairman interpoſed, calling aloud, "No cabals, no conſpiracies, gentlemen." His rival thinking it incumbent upon him to make ſome reply to this rebuke, anſwered, "We have no ſecrets; he that hath ears, let him hear." This was ſpoke as an intimation to the company, whoſe looks were inſtantly whetted with the expectation of their ordinary meal; but the preſident ſeemed to decline the conteſt; for, without putting on his fighting face, he calmly replied, that he had ſeen Mr. Metaphor tip the wink, and whiſper to one of his confederates, and thence judged, that there was ſomething myſterious on the carpet.

The epic poet, believing his antagoniſt creſtfallen, reſolved to take the advantage of his dejection, that he might enhance his own character in the opinion of the ſtranger; and, with that view, aſked, with an air of exultation, if a man might not be allowed to have a con-

vulſion in his eye, without being ſuſpected of a conſpiracy. The preſident, perceiving his drift, and piqued at his preſumption, "To be ſure (ſaid he) a man of a weak head may be very well ſuppoſed to have convulſions in his eyes." This repartee produced a laugh of triumph among the chairman's adherents; one of whom obſerved, that his rival had got a ſmart rap on the pate. "Yes (replied the bard), in that reſpect Mr. Chairman has the advantage of me. Had my head been fortified with a horn-work, I ſhould not have been ſo ſenſible of the ſtroke." This retort, which carried a ſevere alluſion to the preſident's wife, lighted up the countenances of the aggreſſor's friends, which had begun to be a little obumbrated; and had a contrary effect upon the other faction, till their chief, collecting all his capacity, returned the ſalute, by obſerving, that there was no occaſion for an horn-work, when the covered way was not worth defending.

Such a repriſal upon Mr. Metaphor's yoke-fellow, who was by no means remarkable for her beauty, could not fail to operate upon the hearers; and as for the bard himſelf, he was evidently ruffled by the reflection; to which, however, he, without heſitation, replied, "Egad! 'tis my opinion, that, if your covered way was laid open, few people would venture to give the aſſault." "Not unleſs their batteries were more effectual than the fire of your wit," (ſaid the preſident.) "As for that matter (cried the other with precipitation), they would have no occaſion to batter in breach; they would find the angle of the *lapucelle* baſtion demoliſhed to their hands: He, he!" "But I believe it would ſurpaſs your underſtanding (reſumed the chairman), to fill up the *foſſe*." "That, I own, is impracticable (replied the bard), there I ſhould meet with an *hiatus maxime deflendus!*"

The preſident, exaſperated at this inſinuation, in preſence of the new member, exclaimed with indignation in his looks, "And yet, if a body of pioneers were ſet at work upon your ſkull, they would find rubbiſh enough to choke up all the common ſewers in town." Here a groan was uttered by the admirers of the epic poet, who, taking a pinch of ſnuff with great compoſure, "When a man grows ſcurrilous (ſaid he), I take it for an undoubted proof of his overthrow." "If that be the caſe (cried the

other), you yourſelf muſt be the vanquiſhed party; for you was the firſt that was driven to perſonal abuſe." "I appeal (anſwered the bard) to thoſe who can diſtinguiſh. Gentlemen, your judgment?"

This reference produced an univerſal clamour, and the whole college was involved in confuſion. Every man entered into diſpute with his neighbour, on the merits of this cauſe. The chairman interpoſed his authority in vain; the noiſe grew louder and louder; the diſputants waxed warm; the epithets of *blockhead*, *fool*, and *ſcoundrel*, were bandied about. Peregrine enjoyed the uproar, and, leaping upon the table, ſounded the charge to battle, which was immediately commenced in ten different duels. The lights were extinguiſhed; the combatants threſhed one another without diſtinction; the miſchievous Pickle diſtributed ſundry random blows in the dark; and the people below, being alarmed with the ſound of application, the overturning of chairs, and the outcries of thoſe who were engaged, came up ſtairs in a body with lights to reconnoitre, and, if poſſible, quell this hideous tumult.

Objects were no ſooner rendered viſible, than the field of battle exhibited ſtrange groupes of the ſtanding and the fallen. Each of Mr. Metaphor's eyes was ſurrounded with a circle of a livid hue; and the preſident's noſe diſtilled a quantity of clotted blood. One of the tragic authors, finding himſelf aſſaulted in the dark, had, by way of a poinard, employed upon his adverſary's throat a knife which lay upon the table, for the convenience of cutting cheeſe; but, by the bleſſing of God, the edge of it was not keen enough to enter the ſkin, which it had only ſcratched in divers places. A ſatiriſt had almoſt bit off the ear of a lyric bard. Shirts and neckcloths were torn to rags; and there was ſuch a woeful wreck of periwigs on the floor, that no examination could adjuſt the property of the owners, the greateſt part of whom were obliged to uſe handkerchiefs by way of night cap.

The fray, however, ceaſed at the approach of thoſe who interpoſed; part of the combatants being tired of an exerciſe in which they had received nothing but hard blows; part of them being intimidated by the remonſtrances of the landlord and his company, who threatened to call the watch; and a very few being aſhamed of the ſcandalous

diſpute in which they were detected. But though the battle was ended, it was impoſſible, for that evening, to reſtore harmony and good order to the ſociety, which broke up, after the preſident had pronounced a ſhort and confuſed apology to our adventurer, for the indecent uproar which had unfortunately happened on the firſt night of his admiſſion.

Indeed, Peregrine deliberated with himſelf, whether or not his reputation would allow him to appear again among this venerable fraternity: But, as he knew ſome of them to be men of real genius, how ridiculous ſoever their carriage might be modified, and was of that laughing diſpoſition, which is always ſeeking food for mirth, as Horace obſerves of Philippus,

Riſus undique quærit;

he reſolved to frequent the college, notwithſtanding this accident, which happened at his inauguration; being thereto, moreover, induced by his deſire of knowing the private hiſtory of the ſtage, with which he ſuppoſed ſome of the members perfectly well acquainted. He was alſo viſited, before the next meeting, by his introductor, who aſſured him, that ſuch a tumult had never happened ſince the firſt inſtitution of the aſſembly, till that very night; and promiſed, that, for the future, he ſhould have no cauſe to be ſcandalized at their behaviour.

Perſuaded by theſe motives and aſſurances, he truſted himſelf once more in the midſt of their community, and every thing proceeded with great decorum; all diſpute and altercation was avoided, and the college applied itſelf ſeriouſly to the purpoſes of its meeting, namely, to hear the grievances of individuals, and aſſiſt them with ſalutary advice. The firſt perſon that craved redreſs, was a noiſy North Briton, who complained (in a ſtrange dialect), that he had, in the beginning of the ſeaſon, preſented a comedy to the manager of a certain theatre, who, after it had lain ſix weeks in his hands, returned it to the author, affirming there was neither ſenſe nor Engliſh in the performance.

The preſident (who, by the bye, had reviſed the piece), thinking his own reputation concerned, declared in preſence of the whole ſociety, that with regard to ſenſe, he

uld not undertake to vindicate the production; but, in nt of language, no fault could be juſtly laid to its rge: "The caſe, however, is very plain (ſaid he), the nager never gave himſelf the trouble to peruſe the play, formed a judgment of it from the converſation of the hor, never dreaming that it had undergone the reviſal an Engliſh writer; be that as it will, you are infinitely iged to him for having diſpatched you ſo ſoon, and I ll have the better opinion of him for it ſo long as I ; for I have known otherguiſe authors than you (that in point of intereſt and fame), kept in continual at-dance and dependence during the beſt part of their s, and, after all, diſappointed in the expectation of ng their performances exhibited on the ſtage."

CHAPTER XCIV.

Further proceedings of the College.

HIS affair was no ſooner diſcuſſed, than another gen-aan exhibited a complaint, ſignifying, that he had un-aken to tranſlate into Engliſh a certain celebrated au-r, who had been cruelly mangled by former attempts; that, ſoon as his deſign took air, the proprietors of e miſerable tranſlations had endeavoured to prejudice work, by induſtrious inſinuations, contrary to truth fair dealing, importing, that he did not under-d one word of the language which he pretended to late. This being a caſe that nearly concerned the teſt part of the audience, it was taken into ſerious beration: Some obſerved, that it was not only a ma-us effort againſt the plaintiff, but alſo a ſpiteful ad-iſement to the public, tending to promote an inquiry the abilities of all other tranſlators, few of whom (it well known) were ſo qualified as to ſtand the teſt of examination. Others ſaid, that over and above this ideration, which ought to have its due weight with college, there was a neceſſity for concerting meaſures umble the preſumption of bookſellers, who had, from immemorial, taken all opportunities to oppreſs and

enſlave their authors; not only by limiting men of genius to the wages of journeymen tailors, without even allowing them one ſabbath in the week, but alſo in taking ſuch advantages of their neceſſities as were inconſiſtent with juſtice and humanity. "For example (ſaid one of the members), after I myſelf had acquired a little reputation with the town, I was careſſed by one of thoſe tyrants, who profeſſed a friendſhip for me, and even ſupplied me with money, according to the exigencies of my ſituation; ſo that I looked upon him as the mirror of diſintereſted benevolence; and had he known my diſpoſition, and treated me accordingly, I ſhould have writ for him upon his own terms. After I had uſed his friendſhip in this manner for ſome time, I happened to have occaſion for a ſmall ſum of money, and with great confidence made another application to my good friend; when all of a ſudden he put a ſtop to his generoſity, refuſed to accommodate me in the moſt abrupt and mortifying ſtyle; and though I was at that time pretty far advanced in a work for his benefit, which was a ſufficient ſecurity for what I owed him, he roundly aſked, how I propoſed to pay the money which I had already borrowed? Thus was I uſed like a young whore juſt come upon the town, whom the bawd allows to run into her debt, that ſhe may have it in her power to oppreſs her at pleaſure; and if the ſufferer complains, ſhe is treated like the moſt ungrateful wretch upon earth; and that too with ſuch appearance of reaſon, as may eaſily miſlead an unconcerned ſpectator. "You unthankful drab! (ſhe will ſay) did'n't I take you into my houſe when you had'n't a ſhift to your back, a petticoat to your tail, nor a morſel of bread to put into your belly? Ha'n't I clothed you from head to foot like a gentlewoman, ſupported you with board, lodging, and all neceſſaries, till your own extravagance hath brought you into diſtreſs; and now you have the impudence, you naſty, ſtinking brimſtone bung-away! to ſay you are hardly dealt with, when I demand no more than my own?" Thus the whore and the author is equally oppreſſed, and even left without the melancholy privilege of complaining; ſo that they are fain to ſubſcribe to ſuch terms as their creditors ſhall pleaſe to impoſe."

This illuſtration operated ſo powerfully upon the conviction and reſentment of the whole college, that revenge was univerſally denounced againſt thoſe who had aggrieved the plantiff; and, after ſome debate, it was agreed, that he ſhould make a new tranſlation of ſome other ſaleable book, in oppoſition to a former verſion belonging to the delinquents, and print it in ſuch a ſmall ſize, as would enable him to underſell their property; and that this new tranſlation ſhould be recommended and introduced into the world with the whole art and influence of the ſociety.

This affair being ſettled to the ſatisfaction of all preſent, an author of ſome character ſtood up, and craved the advice and aſſiſtance of his fellows, in puniſhing a certain nobleman of great pretenſions to taſte, who, in conſequence of a production which this gentleman had uſhered into the world with univerſal applauſe, not only deſired but even eagerly courted his acquaintance. "He invited me to his houſe (ſaid he), where I was overwhelmed with civility and profeſſions of friendſhip. He inſiſted upon my treating him as an intimate, and calling upon him at all hours, without ceremony; he made me promiſe to breakfaſt with him at leaſt three times a week: In ſhort, I looked upon myſelf as very fortunate, in meeting with ſuch advances from a man of his intereſt and reputation, who had it in his power to befriend me effectually in my paſſage through life; and, that I might not give him any cauſe to think I neglected his friendſhip, I went to his houſe in two days, with a view of drinking chocolate, according to appointment: But he had been ſo much fatigued with dancing at an aſſembly over night, that his valet de chambre would not venture to wake him ſo early; and I left my compliments to his lordſhip, with a performance in manuſcript, which he had expreſſed a moſt eager deſire to peruſe. I repeated my viſit next morning, that his impatience to ſee me might not have ſome violent effect upon his conſtitution; and received a meſſage from his miniſter, ſignifying, that he had been highly entertained with the manuſcript I had left, a great part of which he had read, but was at preſent ſo buſy in contriving a proper dreſs for a private maſquerade, which would be given that ſame evening,

that he could not have the pleaſure of my company at breakfaſt. This was a feaſible excuſe, which I admitted accordingly, and in a day or two appeared again, when his lordſhip was particularly engaged. This might poſſibly be the caſe; and therefore I returned the fourth time, in hopes of finding him more at leiſure; but he had gone out about half an hour before my arrival, and left my performance with his valet de chambre, who aſſured me, that his lord had peruſed it with infinite pleaſure. Perhaps I might have retired very well ſatisfied with this declaration, had not I, in my paſſage through the hall, heard one of the footmen upon the top of the ſtair-caſe, pronounce with an audible voice, "Will your lordſhip pleaſe to be at home when he calls?" It is not to be ſuppoſed that I was pleaſed at this diſcovery, which I no ſooner made, than, turning to my conductor, "I find (ſaid I), his lordſhip is diſpoſed to be abroad to more people than me this morning." The fellow (though a valet de chambre) bluſhed at this obſervation; and I withdrew, not a little irritated at the peer's diſingenuity, and fully reſolved to ſpare him my viſits for the future. It was not long after this occaſion, that I happened to meet him in the park, and being naturally civil, I could not paſs him without a ſalutation of the hat, which he returned in the moſt diſtant manner, though we were both ſolitary, and not a ſoul within view; and when that very performance, which he had applauded ſo warmly, was lately publiſhed by ſubſcription, he did not beſpeak ſo much as one copy. I have often reflected with wonder upon this inconſiſtency in his conduct. I never courted his patronage, nor indeed thought of his name, until he made intereſt for my acquaintance; and if he was diſappointed in my converſation, why did he preſs me ſo much to further connection?"

"The caſe is very clear (cried the chairman, interrupting him), he is one of thoſe connoiſſeurs who ſet up for taſte, and value themſelves upon knowing all men of genius, whom they would be thought to aſſiſt in their productions. I will lay an even bet with any man, that his lordſhip, on the ſtrength of that ſlender interview, together with the opportunity of having ſeen your performance in manuſcript, has already hinted to every company in which he is converſant, that you ſolicited his aſſiſtance

in re-touching the piece, which you have now offered to the public, and that he was pleaſed to favour you with his advice, but found you obſtinately bigotted to your own opinion, in ſome points relating to thoſe very paſſages which have not met with the approbation of the town. As for his careſſes, there was nothing at all extraordinary in his behaviour. By that time you have lived to my age, you will not be ſurpriſed to ſee a courtier's promiſe and performance of a different complexion; not but that I would willingly act as an auxiliary in your reſentment."

The opinion of the preſident was ſtrengthened by the concurrence of all the members; and all other complaints and memorials being deferred till another ſitting, the college proceeded to an exerciſe of wit, which was generally performed once every fortnight, with a view to promote the expectoration of genius. The ſubject was occaſionally choſen by the chairman, who opened the game with ſome ſhrewd remark naturally ariſing from the converſation; and then the ball was toſſed about, from one corner of the room to the other, according to the motions of the ſpirit.

That the reader may have a juſt idea of this ſport, and of the abilities of thoſe who carried it on, I ſhall repeat the ſallies of this evening, according to the order and ſucceſſion in which they eſcaped. One of the members obſerving that Mr. Metaphor was abſent, was told by the perſon who ſat next to him, that the poet had foul weather at home, and could not ſtir abroad. "What! (ſaid the preſident interpoſing, with the ſignal upon his countenance) is he wind-bound in port?" "Wine-bound, I ſuppoſe," (cried another.) "Hooped with wine! a ſtrange metaphor!" (ſaid the third). "Not if he has got into a hogſhead," (anſwered the fourth). "The hogſhead will ſooner get into him (replied a fifth), it muſt be a tun or an ocean." "No wonder, then, if he ſhould be overwhelmed" (ſaid a ſixth). "If he ſhould (cried a ſeventh), he will caſt up when his gall breaks." "That muſt be very ſoon (roared an eighth), for it has been long ready to burſt." "No, no (obſerved a ninth), he'll ſtick faſt at the bottom, take my word for it; he has a *natural alacrity in ſinking*." "And yet (remarked a tenth),

I have ſeen him in the clouds." "Then was he cloudy, I ſuppoſe," (cried the eleventh), "So dark (replied the other, that his meaning could not be perceived." "For all that (ſaid the twelfth), he is eaſily ſeen through." "You talk (anſwered the thirteenth) as if his head was made of glaſs." "No, no (cried a fourteenth), his head is made of more durable ſtuff; it will bend before it breaks." "Yet I have ſeen it broken," (reſumed the preſident). "Did you perceive any wit come out at the hole?" (ſaid another). "His wit (replied the chairman) is too ſubtle to be perceived."

A third mouth was juſt opened, when the exerciſe was ſuddenly interrupted by the dreadful cry of fire, which iſſued from the kitchen, and involved the whole college in confuſion. Every man endeavouring to be the firſt in making his exit, the door and paſſage were blocked up; each individual was pummelled by the perſon that happened to be behind him. This communication produced noiſe and exclamation; clouds of ſmoke rolled upwards into the apartment, and terror ſat on every brow; when Peregrine, ſeeing no proſpect of retreating by the door, opened one of the windows, and fairly leaped into the ſtreet, where he found a crowd of people aſſembled to contribute their aſſiſtance in extinguiſhing the flames. Several members of the college followed his example, and happily accompliſhed their eſcape: The chairman himſelf, being unwilling to uſe the ſame expedient, ſtood trembling on the brink of deſcent, dubious of his own agility, and dreading the conſequence of ſuch a leap, when a chair happening to paſs, he laid hold on the opportunity, and, by an exertion of his muſcles, pitched upon the top of the carriage, which was immediately overturned in the kennel, to the grievous annoyance of the fare, which happened to be a certain effeminate beau, in full dreſs, on his way to a private aſſembly.

This phantom hearing the noiſe overhead, and feeling the ſhock of being overthrown at the ſame time, thought that ſome whole tenement had fallen upon the chair, and, in the terror of being cruſhed to pieces, uttered a ſcream, which the populace ſuppoſed to proceed from the mouth of a woman; and therefore went to his aſſiſtance, while the chairman, inſtead of miniſtering to his occaſions, no

ſooner recollected themſelves, than they ran in purſuit of their overthrower, who, being accuſtomed to eſcapes from bailiffs, dived into a dark alley, and vaniſhing in a trice, was not viſible to any living ſoul, until he appeared next day on Tower-hill.

The humane part of the mob, who beſtirred themſelves for the relief of the ſuppoſed lady, no ſooner perceived their miſtake in the appearance of the beau, who ſtared around him with horror and affright, than their compaſſion was changed into mirth, and they began to paſs a great many unſavoury jokes upon his misfortune, which they now diſcovered no inclination to alleviate; and he found himſelf very uncomfortably beſet, when Pickle, pitying his ſituation, interpoſed in his behalf, and prevailed upon the chairmen to carry him into the houſe of an apothecary in the neighbourhood, to whom his miſchance proved a very advantageous accident; for the fright operated ſo violently upon his nerves, that he was ſeized with a delirium, and lay a whole fortnight deprived of his ſenſes; during which period he was not neglected in point of medicines, food, and attendance, but royally regaled, as appeared by the contents of his landlord's bill.

Our adventurer having ſeen this unfortunate beau ſafely houſed, returned to the ſcene of the other calamity, which, as it was no other than a foul chimney, ſoon yielded to the endeavours of the family, and was happily overcome, without any other bad conſequence than that of alarming the neighbours, diſturbing the college, and diſordering the brain of a beau.

Eager to be acquainted with the particular conſtitutions of a ſociety which ſeemed to open upon him by degrees, Mr. Pickle did not fail to appear at the next meeting, when ſeveral petitions were laid before the board, in behalf of thoſe members who were confined in the priſons of the Fleet, Marſhalſea, and King's Bench. As thoſe unhappy authors expected nothing from their brethren but advice and good offices, which did not concern the purſe, the memorials were conſidered with great care and humanity; and, upon this occaſion, Peregrine had it in his power to manifeſt his importance to the community; for he happened to be acquainted with the creditor of one of the priſoners, and knew that gentleman's ſeverity was

owing to his reſentment at the behaviour of the debtor, who had lampooned him in print, becauſe he refuſed to comply with a freſh demand, after he had lent him money to the amount of a conſiderable ſum. Our young gentleman, therefore, underſtanding that the author was penitent, and diſpoſed to make a reaſonable ſubmiſſion, promiſed to employ his influence with the creditor towards an accommodation; and in a few days actually obtained his releaſe.

The ſocial duties being diſcharged, the converſation took a general turn, and ſeveral new productions were freely criticiſed; thoſe eſpecially which belonged to authors who were either unconnected with, or unknown to the college. Nor did the profeſſion of ſtage-playing eſcape the cognizance of the aſſembly; a deputation of the moſt judicious members being ſent weekly to each theatre, with a view of making remarks upon the performance of the actors. The cenſors for the preceding week were accordingly called upon to give in their report; and the play which they had reviewed was the *Revenge*.

"Mr. Q— (ſaid the ſecond cenſor) (take him all in all) is certainly the moſt complete and unblemiſhed performer that ever appeared on our ſtage, notwithſtanding the blind adoration which is paid to his rival. I went two nights ago, with an expreſs deſign to criticiſe his action: I could find no room for cenſure, but infinite ſubject for admiration and applauſe. In *Pierre* he is great, in *Othello* excellent, but in *Zanga* beyond all imitation. Over and above the diſtinctneſs of pronunciation, the dignity of attitude, and expreſſion of face, his geſtures are ſo juſt and ſignificant, that a man, though utterly bereft of the ſenſe of hearing, might, by ſeeing him only, underſtand the meaning of every word he ſpeaks! ſure nothing can be more exquiſite than his manner of telling Iſabella how Alonzo behaved, when he found the incendiary letter which he had dropt by the Moor's direction; and when, to crown his vengeance, he diſcovers himſelf to be the contriver of all the miſchief that had happened, he manifeſts a perfect maſter-piece of action, in pronouncing theſe four little monoſyllables, *Know then, 'twas——I.*"

Peregrine having eyed the critic ſome minutes, "I fancy (ſaid he), your praiſe muſt be ironical, becauſe, in

very two ſituations you mention, I think I have ſeen player out-herod Herod, or, in other words, exceed is other extravagances. The intention of the author hat the Moor ſhould communicate to his confidante a e of information contained in a few lines, which, btleſs, ought to be repeated with an air of eagerneſs ſatisfaction, not with the ridiculous grimace of a key, to which, methought, his action bore an inti- e reſemblance, in uttering this plain ſentence:

——— he took it up;
But ſcarce was it unfolded to his ſight,
When he, as if an arrow pierc'd his eye,
Started, and trembling dropt it on the ground.

pronouncing the firſt two words, this egregious actor ps down, and ſeems to take up ſomething from the e, then proceeding to repeat what follows, mimics the ner of unfolding a letter; when he mentions the fi- e of an arrow piercing the eye, he darts his fore fin- towards that organ, then recoils with great violence n the word *ſtarted* is expreſſed; and when he comes *rembling dropt it on the ground*, he throws all his limbs a tremulous motion, and ſhakes the imaginary paper n his hand. The latter part of the deſcription is car- l on with the ſame minute geſticulation, while he ſays,

Pale and aghaſt a while my victim ſtood,
Diſguis'd a ſigh or two, and puff'd them from him;
Then rubb'd his brow, and took it up again.

The player's countenance aſſumes a wild ſtare, he ſighs ce moſt piteouſly, as if he were on the point of ſuffo- ion, ſcrubs his forehead, and, bending his body, apes action of ſnatching an object from the floor. Nor is dexterity of dumb ſhow omitted, when he concludes imitation in theſe three lines:

At firſt, he look'd as if he meant to read it;
But, check'd by riſing fears, he cruſh'd it thus,
And thruſt it, like an adder, in his boſom.

re the judicious performer imitates the confuſion and ncern of Alonzo, ſeems to caſt his eyes upon ſome- ng, from which they are immediately withdrawn with ror and precipitation, then ſhutting his fiſt with a vio- t ſqueeze, as if he intended to make immediate appli-

cation to Iſabella's noſe, he rams it in his own boſom, with all the horror and agitation of a thief taken in the manner. Were the player debarred the uſe of ſpeech, and obliged to act to the eyes only of the audience, this mimicry might be a neceſſary conveyance of his meaning; but when he is at liberty to ſignify his ideas by language, nothing can be more trivial, forced, unnatural, and antic, than this ſuperfluous mummery. Not that I would exclude from the repreſentation the graces of action, without which the choiceſt ſentiments, clothed in the moſt exquiſite expreſſion, would appear unanimated and inſipid; but theſe are as different from this ridiculous burleſque, as is the demeanor of a Tully in the roſtrum, from the tricks of a Jack-pudding on a mountebank's ſtage: And, for the truth of what I allege, I appeal to the obſervation of any perſon who has conſidered the elegance of attitude and propriety of geſture, as they are univerſally acknowledged in the real characters of life. Indeed I have known a Gaſcon, whoſe limbs were as eloquent as his tongue: He never mentioned the word ſleep without reclining his head upon his hand; when he had occaſion to talk of an horſe, he always ſtarted up and trotted acroſs the room, except when he was ſo ſituated that he could not ſtir without incommoding the company, and in that caſe he contented himſelf with neighing aloud: If a dog happened to be the ſubject of his converſation, he wagged his tail, and grinned in a moſt ſignificant manner; and one day he expreſſed his deſire of going backwards with ſuch natural imitation of his purpoſe, that every body in the room firmly believed he had actually overſhot himſelf, and fortified their noſtrils accordingly. Yet no man ever looked upon this virtuoſo to be the ſtandard of propriety in point of ſpeaking and deportment. For my own part, I confeſs the player in queſtion would, by dint of theſe qualifications, make a very good figure in the character of Pantaloon's lacquey, in the entertainment of Perſeus and Andromeda, and perhaps might acquire ſome reputation, by turning the *Revenge* into a pantomime; in which caſe, I would adviſe him to come upon the ſtage, provided with an handful of flour, in order to beſmear his face when he pronounces *pale and aghaſt*, &c. and methinks he ought to illuſtrate the adder with an hideous

hiſs. But let us now come to the other ſituation, in which this modern Æſopus is ſuppoſed to diſtinguiſh himſelf ſo much, I mean that ſame eclairciſſement comprehended in *Know then, 'twas——I.* His manner, I own, may be altered ſince I was preſent at the repreſentation of that performance; but certain I am, when I beheld him in that critical conjuncture, his behaviour appeared to me ſo uncouth, that I really imagined he was viſited by ſome epileptic diſtemper; for he ſtood tottering and gaſping for the ſpace of two minutes, like a man ſuddenly ſtruck with the palſy; and, after various diſtortions and ſide ſhakings, as if he had got fleas in his doublet, heaved up from his lungs the letter *I*, like a huge anchor from foul ground."

This criticiſm was acceptable to the majority of the college, who had no great veneration for the player in queſtion; and his admirer, without making any reply, aſked in a whiſper, of the gentleman who ſat next to him, if Pickle had not offered ſome production to the ſtage, and met with a repulſe.

CHAPTER XCV.

The young gentleman is introduced to a virtuoſo of the firſt order, and commences Yelper.

HITHERTO Peregrine had profeſſed himſelf an author, without reaping the fruits of that occupation, except the little fame he had acquired by his late ſatire; but now he thought it high time to weigh *ſolid pudding againſt empty praiſe;* and therefore engaged with ſome bookſellers in a certain tranſlation, which he obliged himſelf to perform for the conſideration of two hundred pounds. The articles of agreement being drawn, he began his taſk with great eagerneſs, roſe early in the morning to his work, at which he laboured all day long, went abroad with the bats in the evening, and appeared in the coffee-houſe, where he amuſed himſelf with the newſpapers and converſation till nine o'clock; then he retired to his own apartment, and, after a ſlight repaſt, betook himſelf to

reſt, that he might be able to unrooſt with the cock. This ſudden change from his former way of life agreed ſo ill with his diſpoſition, that, for the firſt time, he was troubled with flatulencies and indigeſtion, which produced anxiety and dejection of ſpirits, and the nature of his ſituation began in ſome meaſure to diſcompoſe his brain; a diſcovery which he no ſooner made, than he had recourſe to the advice of a young phyſician, who was a member of the college of authors, at this time one of our hero's moſt intimate acquaintance.

The ſon of Æſculapius, having conſidered his caſe, imputed his diſorder to the right cauſe, namely, want of exerciſe; diſſuaded him from ſuch cloſe application to ſtudy, until he ſhould be gradually familiariſed to a ſedentary life; adviſed him to enjoy his friend and his bottle in moderation, and wean himſelf from his former cuſtoms by degrees; and, above all things, to riſe immediately after his firſt ſleep, and exerciſe himſelf in a morning's walk. In order to render this laſt part of the preſcription the more palatable, the doctor promiſed to attend him in theſe early excurſions, and even to introduce him to a certain perſonage of note, who gave a ſort of public breakfaſting to the minor virtuoſi of the age, and often employed his intereſt in behalf of thoſe who properly cultivated his countenance and approbation.

This propoſal was extremely acceptable to our young gentleman, who, beſides the advantage which might accrue to him from ſuch a valuable connection, foreſaw much entertainment and ſatisfaction in the diſcourſe of ſo many learned gueſts. The occaſions of his health and intereſt, moreover, coincided in another circumſtance; the miniſter's levee being kept betimes in the morning, ſo that he could perform his walk, yield his attendance, and breakfaſt at this philoſophical board, without encroaching a great deal upon his other avocations.

Meaſures being thus preconcerted, the phyſician conducted our adventurer to the houſe of this celebrated ſage, to whom he recommended him as a gentleman of genius and taſte, who craved the honour of his acquaintance; but he had previouſly ſmoothed the way to his introduction, by repreſenting Peregrine as a young fellow of great ambition, ſpirit, and addreſs, who could not fail to make

a figure in the world; that therefore he would be a creditable addition to the ſubordinates of ſuch a patron, and by his qualifications, intrepidity, and warmth of temper, turn out a conſummate herald of his fame. Upon theſe conſiderations, he met with a moſt engaging reception from the entertainer, who was a well-bred man, of ſome learning, generoſity, and taſte; but his foible was the deſire of being thought the inimitable pattern of all three.

It was with a view to acquire and ſupport this character, that his houſe was open to all thoſe who had any pretenſions to literature; conſequently he was ſurrounded by a ſtrange variety of pretenders; but none were diſcouraged, becauſe he knew that even the moſt inſignificant might, in ſome ſhape, conduce to the propagation of his praiſe. A babbler, though he cannot run upon the ſcent, may ſpring the game, and, by his yelping, help to fill up the cry: No wonder, then, that a youth of Pickle's accompliſhments was admitted and even invited into the pack. After having enjoyed a very ſhort private audience in the cloſet, our young gentleman was ſhown into another room, where half a dozen of his fellow adherents waited for their Mæcenas, who in a few minutes appeared, with a moſt gracious aſpect, received the compliments of the morning, and ſat down to breakfaſt, in the midſt of them, without any further ceremony.

The converſation at firſt turned upon the weather, which was inveſtigated in a very philoſophical manner by one of the company, who ſeemed to have conſulted all the barometers and thermometers that ever were invented, before he would venture to affirm that it was a chill morning. This ſubject being accurately diſcuſſed, the chief inquired about the news of the learned world; and his inclination was no ſooner expreſſed than every gueſt opened his mouth, in order to gratify his curioſity: But he that firſt captivated his attention, was a meagre ſhrivelled antiquary, who looked like an animated mummy, which had been ſcorched among the ſands of the deſart. He told the patron, that he had, by accident, met with a medal, which, though it was defaced by time, he would venture to pronounce a genuine antique, from the ringing and taſte of the metal, as well as from the colour and compoſition of the ruſt: So ſaying,

he produced a piece of copper coin, ſo conſumed and diſguiſed by age, that ſcarce a veſtige of the impreſſion was to be perceived. Nevertheleſs, this connoiſſeur pretended to diſtinguiſh a face in profile, from which he concluded that the piece was of the Upper Empire, and on the reverſe he endeavoured to point out the bulb of the ſpear, and part of the parazonium, which were the inſignia of the Roman Virtus, together with the fragment of one fold of the multicium in which ſhe was clothed. He likewiſe had diſcovered an angle of the letter N, and, at ſome diſtance, an entire I; from theſe circumſtances conjecturing, and indeed concluding, that the medal was ſtruck by Severus, in honour of the victory he obtained over his rival Niger, after he had forced the paſſes of mount Taurus. This criticiſm ſeemed very ſatisfactory to the entertainer, who having examined the coin by the help of his ſpectacles, plainly diſcerned the particulars which the owner had mentioned, and was pleaſed to term his account of the matter a very ingenious explanation.

The curioſity was circulated through the hands of all preſent, and every virtuoſo, in his turn, licked the copper, and rung it upon the hearth, declaring his aſſent to the judgment which had been pronounced. At length it fell under the inſpection of our young gentleman, who, though no antiquarian, was very well acquainted with the current coin of his own country, and no ſooner caſt his eyes upon the valuable antique, than he affirmed, without heſitation, that it was no other than the ruins of an Engliſh farthing, and that ſame ſpear, parazonium, and multicium, the remains of the emblems and drapery with which the figure of Britannia is delineated on our copper money.

This hardy aſſeveration ſeemed to diſconcert the patron, while it incenſed the medaliſt, who, grinning like an enraged baboon, "What d'ye tell me of a braſs farthing? (ſaid he) Did you ever know modern braſs of ſuch a reliſh. Do but taſte it, young gentleman; and ſure I am, if you have ever been converſant with ſubjects of this kind, you will find as wide a difference in the ſavour between this and an Engliſh farthing, as can poſſibly be perceived betwixt an onion and a turnip: Beſides, this medal has the true Corinthian ring; then the attitude is

upright, whereas that of Britannia is reclining; and how is it poſſible to miſtake a branch of palm for a parazonium?"

All the reſt of the company eſpouſed the virtuoſo's ſide of the queſtion, becauſe the reputation of each was concerned. The patron, finding himſelf in the ſame circumſtance, aſſumed a ſolemnity of feature, daſhed with a ſmall mixture of diſpleaſure, and told Peregrine, that, as he had not made that branch of literature his particular ſtudy, he was not ſurpriſed to ſee him miſtaken in his opinion. Pickle immediately underſtood the reproof. Though he was ſhocked at the vanity or infatuation of his entertainer and fellow-gueſts, aſked pardon for his preſumption, which was accordingly excuſed, in conſideration of his inexperience; and the Engliſh farthing dignified with the title of a true antique.

The next perſon that addreſſed himſelf to the chief, was a gentleman of a very mathematical turn, who valued himſelf upon the improvements he had made in ſeveral domeſtic machines, and now preſented the plan of a new contrivance for cutting cabbages, in ſuch a manner as would ſecure the ſtock againſt the rotting rain, and enable it to produce a plenteous after-crop of delicious ſprouts. In this important machine he had united the whole mechanic powers, with ſuch maſſy complication of iron and wood, that it could not have been moved without the aſſiſtance of a horſe, and a road made for the convenience of the draught. Theſe objections were ſo obvious, that they occurred at firſt ſight to the inſpector-general, who greatly commended the invention, which, he obſerved, might be applied to ſeveral other uſeful purpoſes, could it once be rendered a little more portable and commodious.

The inventor, who had not foreſeen theſe difficulties, was not prepared to ſurmount them; but he took the hint in good part, and promiſed to talk his abilities anew, in altering the conſtruction of his deſign. Not but that he underwent ſome ſevere irony from the reſt of the virtuoſi, who complimented him upon the momentous improvement he had made, by which a family might ſave a diſh of greens in a quarter, for ſo trifling an expence as that of purchaſing, working, and maintaining ſuch a ſtupendous machine; but no man was ever more ſarcaſtic in

his remarks upon this piece of mechaniſm than the naturaliſt, who next appealed to the patron's approbation for a curious diſquiſition he had made touching the procreation of muck flies, in which he had laid down a curious method of collecting, preſerving, and hatching the eggs of theſe inſects, even in the winter, by certain modifications of artificial heat. The nature of this diſcovery was no ſooner communicated, than Peregrine, unable to contain himſelf, was ſeized with a fit of laughter, which infected every perſon at the table, the landlord himſelf not excepted, who found it impoſſible to preſerve his wonted gravity of face.

Such unmannerly mirth did not fail to mortify the philoſopher, who, after ſome pauſe, during which indignation and diſdain were painted in his countenance, reprehended our young gentleman for his unphiloſophical behaviour, and undertook to prove, that the ſubject of his inquiry was of infinite conſequence to the progreſs and increaſe of natural knowledge: But he found no quarter from the vengeful engineer, who now retorted his ironical compliments, with great emphaſis, upon this hot-bed for the generation of vermin, and adviſed him to lay the whole proceſs before the Royal Society, which would, doubtleſs, preſent him with a medal, and give him a place among their memoirs, as a diſtinguiſhed promoter of the uſeful arts. If (ſaid he) you had employed your ſtudies in finding out ſome effectual method to deſtroy thoſe inſects which prejudiſe and annoy mankind, in all probability you muſt have been contented with the contemplation of the good you had done; but this curious expedient for multiplying maggots will ſurely entitle you to an honourable rank in the liſt of learned philoſophers." "I don't wonder (replied the naturaliſt) that you ſhould be ſo much averſe to the propagation of inſects, becauſe, in all likelihood, you are afraid that they will not leave you a cabbage to cut down with the ſame miraculous machine." "Sir (anſwered the mechanic, with great bitterneſs of voice and aſpect), if the cabbage be as light-headed as ſome muck-worm philoſophers, it will not be worth cutting down." "I never diſpute upon cabbage with the ſon of a cucumber," ſaid the fly-breeder, alluding to the pedigree of his antagoniſt; who, impatient

of the affront, ſtarted up with fury in his looks, exclaiming, "'Sdeath! meaning me, Sir?"

Here the patron, perceiving things drawing towards a rupture, interpoſed his authority, rebuking them for their intemperance, and recommending to them amity and concord againſt the Goths and Vandals of the age, who took all opportunities of ridiculing and diſcouraging the adherents of knowledge and philoſophy. After this exhortation, they had no pretence for carrying on the diſpute, which was dropt in all appearance, though the mechanic ſtill retained his reſentment; and after breakfaſt, when the company broke up, accoſted his adverſary in the ſtreet, deſiring to know how he durſt be ſo inſolent as to make that ſcurrilous reflection upon his family. The fly-fancier, thus queſtioned, accuſed the mathematician of having been the aggreſſor, in likening his head to a light cabbage; and here the altercation being renewed, the engineer proceeded to the illuſtration of his mechanics, tilting up his hand like a balance, thruſting it forward by way of lever, embracing the naturaliſt's noſe like a wedge betwixt two of his fingers, and turning it round, with the momentum of a ſcrew or peritrochium. Had they been obliged to decide the diſpute with equal arms, the aſſailant would have had great advantage over the other, who was very much his inferior in muſcular ſtrength; but the philoſopher being luckily provided with a cane, no ſooner diſengaged himſelf from this opprobrious application, than he handled his weapon with great dexterity about the head and ſhoulders of his antagoniſt, who finding this ſhower of blows very diſagreeable, was fain to betake himſelf to his heels for ſhelter, and was purſued by the angry victor, who chaced him from one end of the ſtreet to the other, affording unſpeakable ſatisfaction to the multitude, as well as to our hero and to his introductor, who were ſpectators of the whole ſcene.

Thus was our adventurer initiated into the ſociety of Yelpers, though he did not as yet fully underſtand the nature of his office, which was explained by the young phyſician, who chid him for his blunt behaviour in the caſe of the medal; and gave him to underſtand, that their patron's favour was neither to be gained nor preſerved by any man that would pretend to convict him of a miſ-

take: He therefore counſelled him to reſpect this foible, and cultivate the old gentleman with all the zeal and veneration, which a regard to his own character would permit him to pay. This taſk was the eaſier to one of our young gentleman's pliant diſpoſition, becauſe the virtuoſo's behaviour was abſolutely free from that inſolent ſelf-conceit, which he could not bear without diſguſt: The ſenior was, on the contrary, mild and beneficent; and Pickle was rather pleaſed than ſhocked at his weakneſs; becauſe it flattered his vanity with the ſuppoſition of his own ſuperior ſenſe.

Cautioned in this manner, Peregrine profited ſo much by his inſinuating qualifications, that, in a very little time, he was looked upon as one of the chief favourites of the patron, to whom he dedicated a ſmall occaſional poem; and every body believed he would reap the fruits of his attachment, among the firſt of the old gentleman's dependents.

CHAPTER XCVI.

Peregrine finding himſelf neglected by Sir Steady Steerwell, expoſtulates with him in a letter; in conſequence of which he is forbid his houſe, loſes his penſion, and incurs the charge of lunacy.

THIS proſpect of ſucceſs, together with his expectations from the miniſter, whom he did not neglect, helped to comfort him under the reverſe of fortune which he had undergone, and the uncertainty of the law-ſuit, which he ſtill maintained for the recovery of his ten thouſand pounds. The lawyers, indeed, continued to drain his pocket of money, while they filled his brain with unſubſtantial hope; and he was actually obliged to borrow money from his bookſeller, on the ſtrength of the tranſlation, in order to ſatisfy the demands of thoſe ravenous harpies, rather than lay the miſanthrope under any difficulties, or have recourſe to his friend Hatchway, who lived at the garriſon, entirely ignorant of his diſtreſs. This was not at all alleviated by the arrival of the Indiaman, in which he had ventured ſeven hundred pounds,

as we have already obſerved; for he was given to underſtand, that the borrower was left dangerouſly ill at Bombay when the ſhip ſailed, and that his chance for retrieving his money was extremely ſlender.

So ſituated, it is not to be ſuppoſed that he led a life of tranquillity, though he made a ſhift to ſtruggle with the remonſtrances of misfortune: Yet ſuch a guſh of affliction would ſometimes ruſh upon his thought, as overwhelmed all the ideas of his hope, and ſunk him to the very bottom of deſpondence. Every equipage that paſſed him in the ſtreet, every perſon of rank and fortune that occurred to his view, recalled the gay images of his former life, with ſuch mortifying reflection as ſtabbed him to the very ſoul. He lived, therefore, inceſſantly expoſed to all the pangs of envy and diſquiet. When I ſay envy, I do not mean that ſordid paſſion, in conſequence of which a man repines at his neighbour's ſucceſs, howſoever deſerved; but that ſelf-tormenting indignation which is inſpired by the proſperity of folly, ignorance, and vice. Without the intervening gleams of enjoyment, which he felt in the converſation of a few friends, he could not have ſupported his exiſtence; or, at leaſt, he muſt have ſuffered ſome violent diſcompoſure of the brain: But one is ſtill finding ſome circumſtance of alleviation, even in the worſt of conjunctures; and Pickle was ſo ingenious in theſe reſearches, that he maintained a good battle with diſappointment, till the revolution of the term at which he had received his penſion of three hundred pounds.

However, ſeeing the day elapſe, without touching his allowance, notwithſtanding his ſignificant method of preſenting himſelf at the miniſter's levee, when the year was expired, he wrote a letter to Sir Steady, reminding him of his ſituation and promiſe, and giving him to underſtand, that his occaſions were ſuch as compelled him to demand his ſalary for the enſuing year.

In the morning after this letter was conveyed, the author went to his honour's houſe, in expectation of being admitted by particular order; but was miſtaken in his hope, the miniſter not being viſible. He then made his appearance at the levee, in hopes of being cloſeted; but though he took all opportunities of watching Sir Steady's

eyes, he could not obtain one glance, and had the pleaſure of ſeeing him retire, without being favoured with the leaſt notice. Theſe circumſtances of wilful neglect were not over and above agreeable to our young hero, who, in the agonies of vexation and reſentment, went home, and compoſed a moſt acrimonious remonſtrance to his honour; in conſequence of which he was not only deprived of all pretenſions to a private audience, but expreſsly denied admittance on a public day, by Sir Steady's own order.

This prohibition, which announced his total ruin, filled him with rage, horror, and deſpair. He inſulted the porter who ſignified the miniſter's command, threatening to chaſtiſe him upon the ſpot for his preſumption, and vented the moſt virulent imprecations upon his maſter, to the aſtoniſhment of thoſe who chanced to enter during this conference. Having exhauſted himſelf in theſe vain exclamations, he returned to his lodgings in a moſt frantic condition, biting his lips ſo that the blood ran from his mouth, daſhing his head and fiſts againſt the ſides of his chimney, and weeping with the moſt bitter expreſſions of woe.

Pipes, whoſe perception had been juſt ſufficient to let him ſee that there was ſome difference between the preſent and former ſituation of his maſter, overhearing his tranſports, eſſayed to enter his apartment, with a view of adminiſtering conſolation; and finding the door locked on the inſide, deſired admittance, proteſting, that otherwiſe he would down with the bulk head in the turning of an handſpike. Peregrine ordered him to retire, on pain of his diſpleaſure, and ſwore, that if he ſhould offer to break open the door, he would inſtantly ſhoot him through the head. Tom, without paying the leaſt regard to this injunction, ſet himſelf at work immediately. His maſter, exaſperated at his want of reverence and reſpect, which in his preſent paroxyſm appeared with the moſt provoking aggravation, flew into his cloſet, and ſnatching up one of his piſtols already loaded, no ſooner ſaw his valet enter the apartment, in conſequence of having forced the lock, than he preſented it full at his face, and drew the trigger. Happily the priming flaſhed in the pan, without communicating with the charge; ſo that his furious

purpoſe did not take effect upon the countenance of honeſt Pipes, who, diſregardful of the attempt, though he knew the contents of the piece, aſked, without the leaſt alteration of feature, if it muſt be foul weather through the whole voyage.

Peregrine, mad as he was, repented of his miſchievous intent againſt ſuch a faithful adherent, in the very moment of execution; and had it proved fatal, according to the deſign, in all probability he would have applied another to his own head. There are certain conſiderations that ſtrike upon the mind with irreſiſtible force, even in the midſt of its diſtraction; the momentary recollection of ſome particular ſcene, occaſioned by the features of the devoted victim, hath often ſtruck the dagger from the aſſaſſin's hand. By ſuch an impulſe was Pipes protected from any repeated effort of his maſter's rage; the friendly cauſe of his preſent diſobedience flaſhed upon the conviction of Peregrine, when he beheld the rugged front of his valet, in which alſo ſtood diſcloſed his long and faithful ſervice, together with the recommendation of the deceaſed commodore.

Though his wrath was immediately ſuppreſſed, and his heart torn with remorſe for what he had done, his brows remained ſtill contracted; and darting a moſt ferocious regard at the intruder, "Villain! (ſaid he) how dare you treat me with ſuch diſreſpect?" "Why ſhouldn't I lend a hand for the preſervation of the ſhip (anſwered the unruffled Pipes), when there is more ſail than ballaſt aboard, and the pilot quits the helm in deſpair? What ſignifies one or two broken voyages, ſo long as our timbers are ſtrong, and our veſſel in good trim: If ſhe loſes upon one tack, mayhap ſhe may gain upon t'other; and I'll be damn'd, if one day or other we don't fetch up our lee-way: As for the matter of proviſion, you have ſtarted a pretty good ſtock of money into my hold, and you are welcome to hoiſt it up again when you wool?"

Here Tom was interrupted by the arrival of Mr. Crabtree, who ſeeing Peregrine with a piſtol in his hand, and ſuch wild diſorder in his looks, his head, hands, and mouth beſmeared with blood, and, moreover, ſmelling the gunpowder which had been burnt, actually believed he had either committed, or was bent upon murder, and

accordingly retreated down ſtairs with infinite diſpatch. All his ſpeed could not convey him without the reach of Pipes, who, overtaking him in his paſſage, carried him back into his maſter's apartment, obſerving by the way, that this was no time to ſheer off, when his conſort ſtood in need of his aſſiſtance.

There was ſomething ſo ruefully ſevere in the countenance of Cadwallader, thus compelled, that, at any other time, our hero would have laughed at his concern; but at preſent there was nothing riſible in his diſpoſition: He had, however, laid aſide his piſtol, and endeavoured, though in vain, to compoſe his internal diſturbance; for he could not utter one ſyllable to the miſanthrope, but ſtood ſtaring at him in ſilence, with a moſt delirious aſpect. This did not tend to diſpel the diſmay of his friend, who, after ſome recollection, "I wonder (ſaid he) that you have never killed your man before. Pray how may you have diſpoſed of the body?" Pickle having recovered the faculty of ſpeech, ordered his lacquey out of the room, and, in a moſt incoherent detail, made Crabtree acquainted with the perfidious conduct of the miniſter.

The confident was very glad to find his fears diſappointed; for he had really concluded, that ſome life was loſt. Perceiving the youth too much agitated to be treated by him in his uſual ſtyle, he owned that Sir Steady was a raſcal, and encouraged Pickle with the hope of being one day able to make repriſals upon him; in the mean time offered him money for his immediate occaſions, exhorted him to exert his own qualifications in rendering himſelf independent of ſuch miſcreants, and finally counſelled him to repreſent his wrongs to the nobleman whom he had formerly obliged, with a view of intereſting that peer in his behalf; or at leaſt of obtaining a ſatisfactory explanation from the miniſter, that he might take no premature meaſures of revenge.

Theſe admonitions were ſo much milder and more agreeable than our hero expected from the miſanthrope, that they had a very favourable effect upon his tranſports, which gradually ſubſided, until he became ſo tractable as to promiſe that he would conform to his advice; in conſequence of which, he next morning waited upon his lordſhip, who received him very politely, as uſual, and

with great patience heard his complaint, which, by the bye, he could not repeat without ſome haſty ebullitions of paſſionate reſentment. This peer, after having gently diſapproved of the letter of expoſtulation, which had produced ſuch unfortunate effects, kindly undertook to recommend his caſe to the miniſter, and actually performed his promiſe that ſame day, when Sir Steady informed him, to his utter aſtoniſhment, that the poor young gentleman was diſordered in his brain, ſo that he could not poſſibly be provided for in a place of importance, with any regard to the ſervice; and it could not be expected that he, (Sir Steady), would ſupport his extravagance from his own private purſe;—that he had indeed, at the ſolicitation of a nobleman deceaſed, made him a preſent of three hundred pounds, in conſideration of ſome loſs that he pretended to have ſuſtained in an election; but, ſince that time, had perceived in him ſuch indiſputable marks of lunacy, both by his diſtracted letters and perſonal behaviour, as obliged him to give order that he ſhould not be admitted into the houſe. To corroborate this aſſertion, the miniſter actually called in the evidence of his own porter, and one of the gentlemen of his houſehold, who had heard the execrations that eſcaped our youth, when he firſt found himſelf excluded. In ſhort, the nobleman was convinced, that Peregrine was certainly and *bona fide* mad as a March hare; and, by the help of this intimation, began to recollect ſome ſymptoms of diſtraction which appeared in his laſt viſit; he remembered a certain incoherence in his ſpeech, a violence of geſture and wildneſs of look, that now evidently denoted a diſturbed underſtanding; and he determined, for his own credit and ſecurity, to diſentangle himſelf from ſuch a dangerous acquaintance.

With this view, he, in imitation of Sir Steady, commanded his gate to be ſhut againſt our adventurer; ſo that, when he went to know the reſult of his lordſhip's conference with the miniſter, the door was flung in his face, and the janitor told him through an iron grate, that he needed not to give himſelf the trouble of calling again, for his lord deſired to be excuſed from ſeeing him. He ſpoke not a word in anſwer to this declaration, which he immediately imputed to the ill offices of the miniſter,

againſt whom he breathed defiance and revenge, in his way to the lodgings of Cadwallader;—who, being made acquainted with the manner of his reception, begged he would deſiſt from all ſchemes of vengeance, until he (Crabtree) ſhould be able to unriddle the myſtery of the whole, which he did not doubt of unveiling by means of his acquaintance with a family in which his lordſhip often ſpent the evening at whiſt.

It was not long before he had the deſired opportunity; the nobleman being under no injunctions or obligation to keep the affair ſecret, diſcovered the young gentleman's misfortune, by way of news, to the firſt company in which he happened to be; and Peregrine's name was not ſo obſcure in the faſhionable world, but that his diſorder became the general topic of converſation for a day; ſo that his friend ſoon partook of the intelligence, and found means to learn the particulars of the miniſter's information, as above related. Nay, he was in danger of becoming a proſelyte to Sir Steady's opinion, when he recalled and compared every circumſtance which he knew of Pickle's impatience and impetuoſity.

Indeed nothing more eaſily gains credit, than an imputation of madneſs fixed upon any perſon whatſoever; for when the ſuſpicion of the world is rouſed, and its obſervation once ſet at work, the wiſeſt, the cooleſt man upon earth, will, by ſome particulars in his behaviour, convict himſelf of the charge: Every ſingularity in his dreſs and manner (and ſuch are obſervable in every perſon) that before paſſed unheeded, now riſes up in judgment againſt him, with all the exaggeration of the obſerver's fancy; and the ſagacious examiner perceives diſtraction in every glance of the eye, turn of the finger, and motion of the head: When he ſpeaks, there is a ſtrange peculiarity in his argument and expreſſion; when he holds his tongue, his imagination teems with ſome extravagant reverie; his ſobriety of demeanor is no other than a lucid interval, and his paſſion mere delirium.

If people of the moſt ſedate and inſipid life and converſation are ſubject to ſuch criticiſms, no wonder that they ſhould take place upon a youth of Peregrine's fiery diſpoſition, which, on ſome occaſions, would have actually juſtified any remarks of this kind, which his greateſt

enemies could make. He was accordingly repreſented as one of thoſe enterpriſing bucks, who, after having ſpent their fortunes in riot and exceſs, are happily bereft of their underſtanding, and conſequently inſenſible of the want and diſgrace which they have entailed upon themſelves.

Cadwallader himſelf was ſo much affected with the report, that for ſome time he heſitated in his deliberations upon our hero, before he could prevail upon himſelf to communicate to him the information he had received, or to treat him in other reſpects as a man of ſound intellects. At length, however, he ventured to make Pickle acquainted with the particulars he had learned, imparting them with ſuch caution and circumlocution, as he thought neceſſary to prevent the young gentleman from tranſgreſſing all bounds of temper and moderation;—but, for once, he was agreeably deceived in his prognoſtic. Incenſed as our hero was at the conduct of the miniſter, he could not help laughing at the ridiculous aſperſion, which he told his friend, he would ſoon refute in a manner that ſhould not be very agreeable to his calumniator; obſerving, that it was a common practice with the ſtate pilot, thus to ſlander thoſe people to whom he lay under obligations which he had no mind to diſcharge. "True it is (ſaid Peregrine), he has ſucceeded more than once in contrivances of this kind, having actually reduced divers people of weak heads to ſuch extremity of deſpair, as hath iſſued in downright diſtraction, whereby he was rid of their importunities, and his judgment confirmed at the ſame time: But I have now (thank heaven) attained to ſuch a pitch of philoſophical reſolution, as will ſupport me againſt all his machinations; and I will forthwith exhibit the monſter to the public, in his true lineaments of craft, perfidy, and ingratitude."

This indeed was the plan with which Mr. Pickle had amuſed himſelf during the reſearches of Crabtree; and by this time it ſo effectually flattered his imagination, that he believed he ſhould be able to bring his adverſary (in ſpite of all his power) to his own terms of ſubmiſſion, by diſtinguiſhing himſelf in the liſt of thoſe who, at this period, wrote againſt the adminiſtration. Nor was this ſcheme ſo extravagant as it may ſeem to be, had not

overlooked one material circumſtance, which Cadwallader himſelf did not recollect, when he approved of this project.

While he thus meditated vengeance, the fame of his diſorder, in due courſe of circulation, reached the ears of that lady of quality, whoſe memoirs have already appeared in theſe adventures. The correſpondence with which ſhe had honoured our hero had been long broke off, for the reaſon already advanced, namely, his dread of being expoſed to her infatuating charms. He had been candid enough to make her acquainted with the cauſe of exiling himſelf from her preſence; and ſhe admitted the prudence of ſelf-reſtraint, although ſhe would [illegible] very well ſatisfied with the continuance [illegible] and converſation, which were not at [illegible] fire of any lady in the kingdom.—[illegible] interruption, ſhe ſtill retained a friend his character, and felt all the affliction at the news of his misfortunes and de She had ſeen him courted and cultivat of his proſperity; but ſhe knew, fro how all thoſe inſect-followers ſhrink a of diſtreſs.—Her compaſſion repreſent unhappy lunatic, deſtitute of all the dragging about the ruins of human n ing the ſpectacle of blaſted youth to t horrence of his fellow-creatures. A charitable conſiderations, ſhe found r what part of the town he lodged; a ſuperfluous ceremony, went in a hac door, which was opened by the ever fa[illegible]

Her ladyſhip immediately recollecte[illegible]ne features of his truſty follower, whom ſhe could not help loving in her heart, for his attachment and fidelity, which after ſhe had applauded with a moſt gracious commendation, ſhe kindly inquired after the ſtate of his maſter's health, and aſked if he was in a condition to be ſeen.

Tom, who could not ſuppoſe that the viſit of a fine lady would be unacceptable to a youth of Peregrine's complexion, made no verbal reply to the queſtion; but beckoning her ladyſhip with an arch ſignificance of feature, at which ſhe could not forbear ſmiling, walked

up ſtairs; and ſhe, in obedience to the ſignal, follow-
r guide into the apartment of our hero, whom ſhe
at a writing-table, in the very act of compoſing an
um upon his good friend Sir Steady. The nature
work had animated his countenance with an un-
on degree of vivacity; and being dreſſed in a neat
ille, his figure could not have appeared to more ad-
ge in the eye of a perſon who deſpiſed the tinſel of
effary ornament. She was extremely well pleaſed
her expectations ſo agreeably diſappointed; for, in-
of the ſqualid circumſtances and wretched looks at-
g indigence and diſtraction, every thing was decent
enteel; and the patient's aſpect ſuch as betokened
ſatisfaction. Hearing the ruſtling of ſilk in his
ed up his eyes from the paper, and ſeeing
was ſtruck with aſtoniſhment and awe, as
ted apparition of ſome ſupernatural being.
could recollect himſelf from his confuſion,
the blood into his cheeks, ſhe told him,
rength of old acquaintance, ſhe was come
though it was a long time ſince he had
l reaſon to believe, he had abſolutely forgot
ſuch a perſon as ſhe in being.—After hav-
moſt warm acknowledgments for this un-
ır, he aſſured her ladyſhip, that the ſubject
ch was not his fault, but rather his very
ne; and that, if it had been in his power
o eaſily as ſhe ſeemed to imagine, he ſhould
en her cauſe to tax him with want of duty

s of his ſituation, ſhe began to converſe
im ifferent ſubjects; and he acquitted himſelf
l in every particular, that ſhe no longer doubted his
been miſrepreſented by the malice of his enemies,
ndidly told him the cauſe and intent of her coming.
as not deficient in expreſſions of gratitude for this
e of her generoſity and friendſhip, which even
ears from his eyes. As to the imputation of mad-
he explained it ſo much to her ladyſhip's ſatiſ-
, that ſhe evidently perceived he had been barba-
dealt with, and that the charge was no other than
villanous aſperſion.

Notwithſtanding all his endeavours to conceal the true ſtate of his finances, it was impoſſible for him to give this detail, without diſcloſing ſome of the difficulties under which he laboured; and her ladyſhip's ſagacity divining the reſt, ſhe not only made him a tender of aſſiſtance, but, preſenting a bank-note for a conſiderable ſum, inſiſted upon his acceptance of it, as a trifling mark of her eſteem, and a ſpecimen of what ſhe was inclined to do in his behalf. But this mark of her benevolence he would by no means receive; aſſuring her, that, though his affairs were at preſent a little perplexed, he had never felt the leaſt circumſtance of diſtreſs, and begging that ſhe would not ſubject him to the burden of ſuch an unneceſſary obligation.

Being obliged to put up with this refuſal, ſhe proteſted ſhe would never forgive him, ſhould ſhe ever hear that he rejected her offer, when he ſtood in need of her aid; or if, in time to come, he ſhould not apply to her friendſhip, if ever he ſhould find himſelf incommoded in point of fortune: "An over-delicacy in this reſpect (ſaid ſhe) I ſhall look upon as a diſapprobation of my own conduct; becauſe I myſelf have been obliged to have recourſe to my friends in ſuch emergencies."

Theſe generous remonſtrances and marks of particular friendſhip could not fail to make a deep impreſſion upon the heart of our hero, which ſtill ſmarted from the former impulſe of her charms; he not only felt all thoſe tranſports which a man of honour and ſenſibility may be ſuppoſed to feel upon ſuch an occaſion, but the ſentiments of a more tender paſſion awaking in his breaſt, he could not help expreſſing himſelf in terms adapted to the emotions of his ſoul; and at length plainly told her, that, were he diſpoſed to be a beggar, he would aſk ſomething of infinitely more importance to his peace than the charitable aſſiſtance ſhe had proffered.

Her ladyſhip had too much penetration to miſtake his meaning; but, as ſhe did not chooſe to encourage his advances, pretended to interpret his intimation into a general compliment of gallantry, and, in a jocoſe manner, deſired he would not give her any reaſon to believe his lucid interval was paſt. "In faith, my lady (ſaid he), I perceive the fit coming on; and I don't ſee why I may

not uſe the privilege of my diſtemper, ſo far as to declare myſelf one of your moſt paſſionate admirers." "If you do (replied her ladyſhip), I ſhall not be fool enough to believe a madman, unleſs I were aſſured that your diſorder proceeded from your love; and that this was the caſe, I ſuppoſe you will find it difficult to prove." "Nay, Madam (cried the youth), I have in this drawer what will convince you of my having been mad on that ſtrain; and, ſince you doubt my pretenſion, you muſt give me leave to produce my teſtimonials." So ſaying, he opened a ſcrutore, and taking out a paper, preſented her with the following ſong, which he had written in her praiſe, immediately after he was made acquainted with the particulars of her ſtory:—

I.

While with fond rapture and amaze,
On thy tranſcendent charms I gaze,
My cautious ſoul eſſays in vain
Her peace and freedom to maintain;
Yet let that blooming form divine,
Where grace and harmony combine;
Thoſe eyes, like genial orbs that move,
Diſpenſing gladneſs, joy, and love,
In all their pomp aſſail my view,
Intent my boſom to ſubdue;
My breaſt, by wary maxims ſteel'd,
Not all thoſe charms ſhall force to yield.

II.

But, when invok'd to Beauty's aid,
I ſee th' enlighten'd ſoul diſplay'd;
That ſoul ſo ſenſibly ſedate
Amid the ſtorms of froward fate!
Thy genius active, ſtrong, and clear,
Thy wit ſublime, though not ſevere,
The ſocial ardour void of art,
That glows within thy candid heart;
My ſpirits, ſenſe, and ſtrength decay,
My reſolution dies away,
And, every faculty oppreſs'd,
Almighty love invades my breaſt!

Her ladyſhip having peruſed this production, "Were I inclined to be ſuſpicious (ſaid ſhe), I ſhould believe that I had no ſhare in producing this compoſition, which ſeems to have been inſpired by a much more amiable object. However, I will take your word for your intention, and thank you for the unmerited compliment, though I have met with it in ſuch an accidental manner.

Nevertheleſs, I muſt be ſo free as to tell you, it is now high time for you to contract that unbounded ſpirit of gallantry, which you have indulged ſo long, into a ſincere attachment for the fair Emilia, who, by all accounts, deſerves the whole of your attention and regard." His nerves thrilled at mention of that name, which he never heard pronounced without agitation. Rather than undergo the conſequence of a converſation upon this ſubject, he chooſe to drop the theme of love altogether, and induſtriouſly introduced ſome other topic of diſcourſe.

CHAPTER XCVII.

He writes againſt the miniſter, by whoſe inſtigation he is arreſted, and moves himſelf by *habeas corpus* into the Fleet.

My lady having prolonged her ſtay beyond the period of a common viſit, and repeated her proteſtations in the moſt frank and obliging manner, took her leave of our adventurer, who promiſed to pay his reſpects to her in a few days at her own houſe. Meanwhile, he reſumed his taſk; and having finiſhed a moſt ſevere remonſtrance againſt Sir Steady, not only with regard to his private ingratitude, but alſo to his mal-adminiſtration of public affairs, he ſent it to the author of a weekly paper, who had been long a profeſſed reformer in politics; and it appeared in a very few days, with a note of the publiſher, deſiring the favour of further correſpondence with the author.

The animadverſions contained in this ſmall eſſay were ſo ſpirited and judicious, and a great many new lights thrown upon the ſubject with ſuch perſpicuity, as attracted the notice of the public in an extraordinary manner, and helped to raiſe the character of the paper in which it was inſerted. The miniſter was not the laſt who examined the performance, which, in ſpite of all his boaſted temper, provoked him to ſuch a degree, that he ſet his emiſſaries at work, and by dint of corruption, procured a ſight of the manuſcript in Peregrine's own hand-writing; which he immediately recognized; but, for further con-

firmation of his opinion, he compared it with the two letters which he had received from our adventurer. Had he known the young gentleman's talents for declamation were ſo acute, perhaps he would never have given him cauſe to complain, but employed him in the vindication of his own meaſures; nay, he might ſtill have treated him like ſome other authors whom he had brought over from the oppoſition, had not the keenneſs of this firſt aſſault incenſed him to a deſire of revenge. He, therefore, no ſooner made this diſcovery, than he conveyed his directions to his dependent the receiver-general, who was poſſeſſed of Pickle's notes. Next day, while our author ſtood within a circle of his acquaintance, at a certain coffeehouſe, holding forth with great eloquence upon the diſeaſes of the ſtate, he was accoſted by a bailiff, who entering the room with five or ſix followers, told him aloud, that he had a writ againſt him for twelve hundred pounds, at the ſuit of Mr. Ravage Gleanum.

The whole company were aſtoniſhed at this addreſs, which did not fail to diſcompoſe the defendant himſelf, who (as it were inſtinctively), in the midſt of his confuſion, ſaluted the officer acroſs the head with his cane; in conſequence of which application, he was ſurrounded and diſarmed in an inſtant by the gang, who carried him off to the next tavern in the moſt opprobrious manner. Nor did one of the ſpectators interpoſe in his behalf, or viſit him in his confinement with the leaſt tender of advice or aſſiſtance; ſuch is the zeal of a coffeehouſe friendſhip.

This ſtroke was the more ſevere upon our hero, as it was altogether unexpected; for he had utterly forgot the debt for which he was arreſted. His preſent indignation was, however, chiefly kindled againſt the bailiff, who had done his office in ſuch a diſreſpectful manner; and the firſt uſe he made of his recollection in the houſe to which they conducted him, was to chaſtiſe him for the inſolence and indecency of his behaviour. This taſk he performed with his bare fiſts, every other weapon being previouſly conveyed out of his reach; and the delinquent underwent his diſcipline with ſurpriſing patience and reſignation, aſking pardon with great humility, and proteſting before God, that he had never willingly and wittingly

uſed any gentleman with ill manners, but had been commanded to arreſt our adventurer according to the expreſs direction of the creditor, on pain of forfeiting his place.

By this declaration Peregrine was appeaſed, and, out of a delirium of paſſion, waked to all the horrors of reflection. All the glory of his youth was now eclipſed, all the bloſſoms of his hope were blaſted, and he ſaw himſelf doomed to the miſeries of a jail, without the leaſt proſpect of enlargement, except in the iſſue of his lawſuit, of which he had, for ſome time paſt, grown leſs and leſs confident every day. What would become of the unfortunate, if the conſtitution of the mind did not permit them to bring one paſſion into the field againſt another? paſſions that operate in the human breaſt, like poiſons of a different nature, extinguiſhing each other's effect. Our hero's grief reigned in full deſpotiſm, until it was depoſed by revenge; during the predominancy of which, he conſidered every thing which had happened as a circumſtance conducive to its gratification: "If I muſt be priſoner for life (ſaid he to himſelf), if I muſt relinquiſh all my gay expectations, let me at leaſt have the ſatisfaction of clanking my chains ſo as to interrupt the repoſe of my adverſary; and let me ſearch in my own breaſt for that peace and contentment, which I have not been able to find in all the ſcenes of my ſucceſs. In being detached from the world, I ſhall be delivered from folly and ingratitude, as well as exempted from an expence, which I ſhould have found it very difficult, if not impracticable, to ſupport; I ſhall have little or no temptation to miſ-ſpend my time, and more undiſturbed opportunity to earn my ſubſiſtence, and proſecute my revenge. After all, a jail is the beſt tub to which a cynic philoſopher can retire."

In conſequence of theſe comfortable reflections, he ſent a letter to Mr. Crabtree, with an account of his misfortune, ſignifying his reſolution to move himſelf immediately into the Fleet, and deſiring that he would ſend him ſome underſtanding attorney of his acquaintance, who would direct him into the ſteps neceſſary to be taken for that purpoſe. The miſanthrope, upon the receipt of this intimation, went in perſon to a lawyer, whom he accompanied to the ſpunging-houſe whither the priſoner had by this time retired. Peregrine was, under the auſpices of

his director, conducted to the judges chamber, where he was left in the cuſtody of a tipſtaff; and, after having paid for a warrant of *habeas corpus*, by him conveyed to the Fleet, and delivered to the care of the warden.

Here he was introduced to the lodge, in which he was obliged to expoſe himſelf a full half hour to the eyes of all the turnkeys and door-keepers, who took an accurate ſurvey of his perſon, that they might know him again at firſt ſight; and then he was turned looſe into the place called the Maſter's ſide, having given a valuable conſideration for that privilege. This is a large range of building, containing ſome hundreds of lodging-rooms for the convenience of the priſoners, who pay ſo much per week for that accommodation. In ſhort, this community is like a city detached from all communication with the neighbouring parts, regulated by its own laws, and furniſhed with peculiar conveniencies for the uſe of the inhabitants. There is a coffeehouſe for the reſort of gentlemen, in which all ſorts of liquors are kept, and a public kitchen, where any quantity of meat is ſold at a very reaſonable rate, or any kind of proviſion boiled and roaſted *gratis*, for the poor priſoners: Nay, there are certain ſervants of the public, who are obliged to go to market, at the pleaſure of individuals, without fee or reward from thoſe who employ them: Nor are they cooped up, ſo as to be excluded from the benefit of freſh air, there being an open area, of a conſiderable extent, adjacent to the building, in which they may exerciſe themſelves in walking, ſkittles, bowls, and variety of other diverſions, according to the inclination of each.

Our adventurer being admitted a denizen of this community, found himſelf bewildered in the midſt of ſtrangers, who, by their appearance, did not at all prepoſſeſs him in their favour; and, after having ſtrolled about the place with his friend Cadwallader, repaired to the coffeehouſe, in order to be further informed of the peculiar cuſtoms which it was neceſſary for him to know.

There, while he endeavoured to pick up intelligence from the bar-keeper, he was accoſted by a perſon in canonicals, who very civilly aſked if he was a new-comer. Being anſwered in the affirmative, he gave him the ſalutation of welcome to the ſociety, and, with great hoſpita-

lity, undertook to initiate him in the conſtitutions of the brotherhood. This humane clergyman gave him to underſtand, that his firſt care ought to be that of ſecuring a lodging; telling him there was a certain number of apartments in the priſon let at the ſame price, though ſome were more commodious than others; and that when the better ſort became vacant, by the removal of their poſſeſſors, thoſe who ſucceeded in point of ſeniority, had the privilege of occupying the empty tenements preferable to the reſt of the inhabitants, howſoever reſpectable they might otherwiſe be: That, when the jail was very much crowded, there was but one chamber allotted for two lodgers; but this was not conſidered as any great hardſhip on the priſoners; becauſe, in that caſe, there was always a ſufficient number of males, who willingly admitted the females to a ſhare in their apartments and beds: Not but the time had been, when this expedient would not anſwer the occaſion; becauſe, after a couple had been quartered in every room, there was a conſiderable reſidue ſtill unprovided with lodging; ſo that, for the time being, the laſt comers were obliged to take up their habitation in Mount Scoundrel, an apartment moſt miſerably furniſhed, in which they lay promiſcuouſly, amidſt filth and vermin, until they could be better accommodated in due courſe of rotation.

Peregrine, hearing the deſcription of this place, began to be very impatient about his night's lodging; and the parſon, perceiving his anxiety, conducted him, without loſs of time, to the warden, who forthwith put him in poſſeſſion of a paltry chamber, for which he agreed to pay half a crown a week. This point being ſettled, his director gave him an account of the different methods of eating, either ſingly, in a meſs, or at an ordinary, and adviſed him to chooſe the laſt, as the moſt reputable, offering to introduce him next day to the beſt company in the Fleet, who always dined together in public.

Pickle having thanked this gentleman for his civilities, and promiſed to be governed by his advice, invited him to paſs the evening at his apartment; and, in the mean time, ſhut himſelf up with Crabtree, in order to deliberate upon the wreck of his affairs. Of all his ample fortune nothing now remained but his wardrobe, which was

not very ſumptuous, about thirty guineas in caſh, and the garriſon, which the miſanthrope counſelled him to convert into ready money, for his preſent ſubſiſtence. This advice, however, he abſolutely rejected, not only on account of his having already beſtowed it upon Hatchway during the term of his natural life, but alſo with a view of retaining ſome memorial of the commodore's generoſity. He propoſed, therefore, to finiſh in this retreat the tranſlation which he had undertaken, and earn his future ſubſiſtence by labour of the ſame kind. He deſired Cadwallader to take charge of his moveables, and ſend to him ſuch linen and clothes as he ſhould have occaſion for in his confinement. But, among all his difficulties, nothing embarraſſed him ſo much as his faithful Pipes, whom he could no longer entertain in his ſervice. He knew Tom had made ſhift to pick up a competency in the courſe of his miniſtration; but that reflection, though it in ſome meaſure alleviated, could not wholly prevent the mortification he ſhould ſuffer in parting with an affectionate adherent, who was by this time become as neceſſary to him as one of his own members, and who was ſo accuſtomed to live under his command and protection, that he did not believe the fellow could reconcile himſelf to any other way of life.

Crabtree, in order to make him eaſy on that ſcore, offered to adopt him in the room of his own valet, whom he would diſmiſs; though he obſerved, that Pipes had been quite ſpoiled in our hero's ſervice. But Peregrine did not chooſe to lay his friend under that inconvenience, knowing that his preſent lacquey underſtood and complied with all the peculiarities of his humour, which Pipes would never be able to ſtudy or regard; he therefore determined to ſend him back to his ſhipmate Hatchway, with whom he had ſpent the fore part of his life.

Theſe points being adjuſted, the two friends adjourned to the coffeehouſe, with a view of inquiring into the character of the clergyman, to whoſe beneficence our adventurer was ſo much indebted. They learned he was a perſon who had incurred the diſpleaſure of the biſhop in whoſe dioceſe he was ſettled, and, being unequal in power to his antagoniſt, had been driven to the Fleet, in conſequence of his obſtinate oppoſition; though he ſtill found

means to enjoy a pretty conſiderable income, by certain irregular practices in the way of his function, which income was chiefly conſumed in acts of humanity to his fellow-creatures in diſtreſs.

His eulogium was ſcarce finiſhed, when he entered the room, according to appointment with Peregrine, who ordering wine and ſomething for ſupper to be carried to his apartment, the triumvirate went thither; and Cadwallader taking his leave for the night, the two fellow-priſoners paſſed the evening very ſociably, our hero being entertained by his new companion with the private hiſtory of the place, ſome particulars of which were extremely curious. He told him, that the perſon who attended them at ſupper, bowing with the moſt abject ſervility, and worſhipping them, every time he opened his mouth, with the epithets of *your Lordſhip* and *your Honour*, had, a few years before, been actually a captain in the guards; who, after having run his career in the great world, had treaded every ſtation in their community, from that of a buck of the firſt order, who ſwaggers about the Fleet in a laced coat, with a footman and whore, to the degree of a tapſter, in which he was now happily ſettled. "If you will take the trouble of going into the cook's kitchen (ſaid he), you will perceive a beau metamorphoſed into a turnſpit; and there are ſome hewers of wood and drawers of water in this microcoſm, who have had foreſts and fiſhponds of their own: Yet, notwithſtanding ſuch a miſerable reverſe of fortune, they are neither objects of regard or compaſſion, becauſe their misfortunes are the fruits of the moſt vicious extravagance, and they are abſolutely inſenſible of the miſery which is their lot. Thoſe of our fellow-ſufferers, who have been reduced by undeſerved loſſes, or the precipitation of unexperienced youth, never fail to meet with the moſt brotherly aſſiſtance, provided they behave with decorum, and a due ſenſe of their unhappy circumſtances. Nor are we deſtitute of power to chaſtiſe the licentious, who refuſe to comply with the regulations of the place, and diſturb the peace of the community with riot and diſorder. Juſtice is here impartially adminiſtered, by a court of equity, conſiſting of a ſelect number of the moſt reſpectable inhabitants, who puniſh all offenders with equal judgment and reſolution,

after they have been fairly convicted of the crimes laid to their charge."

The clergyman having thus explained the economy of the place, as well as the cauſe of his own confinement, began to diſcover ſigns of curioſity touching our hero's ſituation; and Pickle, thinking he could do no leſs for the ſatisfaction of a man who had treated him in ſuch an hoſpitable manner, favoured him with a detail of the circumſtances which produced his impriſonment; at the ſame time gratifying his reſentment againſt the miniſter, which delighted in recapitulating the injuries he had received. The parſon, who had been prepoſſeſſed in favour of our youth at firſt ſight, underſtanding what a conſiderable part he had acted on the ſtage of life, felt his veneration increaſe; and, pleaſed with the opportunity of introducing a ſtranger of his conſequence to the club, left him to his repoſe, or rather to ruminate on an event which he had not as yet ſeriouſly conſidered.

I might here, in imitation of ſome celebrated writers, furniſh out a page or two, with the reflections he made upon the inſtability of human affairs, the treachery of the world, and the temerity of youth; and endeavour to decoy the reader into a ſmile, by ſome quaint obſervation of my own, touching the ſagacious moralizer: But, beſides that I look upon this practice as an impertinent anticipation of the peruſer's thoughts, I have too much matter of importance upon my hands, to give the reader the leaſt reaſon to believe that I am driven to ſuch paltry ſhifts, in order to eke out the volume. Suffice it then to ſay, our adventurer paſſed a very uneaſy night, not only from the thorny ſuggeſtions of his mind, but likewiſe from the anguiſh of his body, which ſuffered from the hardneſs of his couch, as well as from the natural inhabitants thereof, that did not tamely ſuffer his intruſion.

In the morning he was waked by Pipes, who brought upon his ſhoulder a portmanteau filled with neceſſaries, according to the direction of Cadwallader; and toſſing it down upon the floor, regaled himſelf with a quid, without the leaſt manifeſtation of concern. After ſome pauſe, "You ſee, Pipes (ſaid his maſter), to what I have brought myſelf." "Ey, ey (anſwered the valet), once the veſſel is aſhore, what ſignifies talking? We muſt bear

a hand to tow her off, if we can: If ſhe won't budge for all the anchors and capſtans aboard, after we have lightened her, by cutting away her maſts, and heaving our guns and cargo overboard, why then, mayhap a briſk gale of wind, a tide, or current ſetting from ſhore, may float her again in the blaſt of a whiſtle. Here is two hundred and ten guineas by the tale, in this here canvas bag; and upon this ſcrap of paper—no, avaſt—that's my diſcharge from the pariſh for Moll Trundle—ey, here it is—an order for thirty pounds upon the what-d'ye-call-'em in the city; and two tickets for twenty-five and eighteen, which I lent, d'ye ſee, to Sam Studding to buy a cargo of rum, when he hoiſted the ſign of the Commodore at St. Catherine's." So ſaying, he ſpread his whole ſtock upon the table, for the acceptance of Peregrine; who, being very much affected with this freſh inſtance of his attachment, expreſſed his ſatisfaction at ſeeing he had been ſuch a good economiſt, and paid his wages up to that very day. He thanked him for his faithful ſervices, and, obſerving that he himſelf was no longer in a condition to maintain a domeſtic, adviſed him to retire to the garriſon, where he would be kindly received by his friend Hatchway, to whom he would recommend him in the ſtrongeſt terms.

Pipes looked blank at this unexpected intimation, to which he replied, that he wanted neither pay nor proviſion, but only to be employed as a tender; and that he would not ſteer his courſe for the garriſon, unleſs his maſter would firſt take his lumber aboard. Pickle, however, peremptorily refuſed to touch a farthing of the money, which he commanded him to put up; and Pipes was ſo mortified at his refuſal, that twiſting the notes together, he threw them into the fire without heſitation, crying, "Damn the money!" The canvas bag, with its contents, would have ſhared the ſame fate, had not Peregrine ſtarted up, and ſnatching the paper from the flames, ordered his valet to forbear, on pain of being baniſhed for ever from his ſight. He told him, that, for the preſent, there was a neceſſity for his being diſmiſſed, and he diſcharged him accordingly; but if he would go and live quietly with the lieutenant, he promiſed, on the firſt favourable turn of his fortune, to take him again in-

to his ſervice. In the mean time he gave him to underſtand, that he neither wanted, nor would make any uſe of his money, which he inſiſted upon his pocketing immediately, on pain of forfeiting all title to his favour.

Pipes was very much chagrined at theſe injunctions, to which he made no reply; but ſweeping the money into his bag, ſtalked off, in ſilence, with a look of grief and mortification, which his countenance had never exhibited before. Nor was the proud heart of Pickle unmoved upon this occaſion; he could ſcarce ſuppreſs his ſorrow in the preſence of Pipes, and, ſoon as he was gone, it vented itſelf in tears.

Having no great pleaſure in converſing with his own thoughts, he dreſſed himſelf with all convenient diſpatch, being attended by one of the occaſional valets of the place, who had formerly been a rich mercer in the city; and this operation being performed, he went to breakfaſt at the coffeehouſe, where he happened to meet with his friend the clergyman, and ſeveral perſons of genteel appearance, to whom the doctor introduced him as a new meſs-mate. By theſe gentlemen he was conducted to a place, where they ſpent the forenoon in playing at fives, an exerciſe in which our hero took ſingular delight; and about one o'clock a court was held, for the trial of two delinquents, who had tranſgreſſed the laws of honeſty and good order.

The firſt who appeared at the bar was an attorney, accuſed of having picked a gentleman's pocket of his handkerchief: And the fact being proved by inconteſtible evidence, he received ſentence. In conſequence of which, he was immediately carried to the public pump, and ſubjected to a ſevere caſcade of cold water. This cauſe being diſcuſſed, they proceeded to the trial of the other offender, who was a lieutenant of a man of war, indicted for a riot, which he had committed in company with a female, not yet taken, againſt the laws of the place, and the peace of his fellow-priſoners. The culprit had been very obſtreperous, and abſolutely refuſed to obey the ſummons, with many expreſſions of contempt and defiance againſt the authority of the court; upon which the conſtables were ordered to bring him to the bar, *vi et armis*; and he was accordingly brought before the judge, after

having made a moſt deſperate reſiſtance with a hanger, by which one of the officers was dangerouſly wounded. This outrage was ſuch an aggravation of his crime, that the court would not venture to decide upon it, but remitted him to the ſentence of the warden; who, by virtue of his dictatorial power, ordered the rioter to be loaded with irons, and confined in the ſtrong room, which is a diſmal dungeon, ſituated upon the ſide of the ditch, infeſted with toads and vermin, ſurcharged with noiſome damps, and impervious to the leaſt ray of light.

Juſtice being done upon theſe criminals, our adventurer and his company adjourned to the ordinary, which was kept at the coffeehouſe; and he found, upon inquiry, that his meſs-mates conſiſted of one officer, two underwriters, three projectors, an alchymiſt, an attorney, a parſon, a brace of poets, a baronet, and a knight of the bath. The dinner, though not ſumptuous, nor very elegantly ſerved up, was nevertheleſs ſubſtantial, and pretty well dreſſed: The wine was tolerable, and all the gueſts as cheerful as if they had been utter ſtrangers to calamity; ſo that our adventurer began to reliſh the company, and mix in the converſation, with that ſprightlineſs and eaſe which were peculiar to his diſpoſition. The repaſt being ended, the reckoning paid, and part of the gentlemen withdrawn to cards, or other avocations, thoſe who remained, among whom Peregrine made one, agreed to ſpend the afternoon in converſation over a bowl of punch; and the liquor being produced, they paſſed the time very ſocially in various topics of diſcourſe, including many curious anecdotes relating to their own affairs. No man ſcrupled to own the nature of the debt for which he was confined, unleſs it happened to be ſome piddling affair; but, on the contrary, boaſted of the importance of the ſum, as a circumſtance that implied his having been a perſon of conſequence in life; and he who had made the moſt remarkable eſcapes from bailiffs, was looked upon as a man of ſuperior genius and addreſs.

Among other extraordinary adventures of this kind, none was more romantic than the laſt elopement achieved by the officer; who told them he had been arreſted for a debt of two hundred pounds, at a time when he could not command as many pence, and conveyed to the

bailiff's houſe, in which he continued a whole fortnight, moving his lodgings higher and higher, from time to time, in proportion to the decay of his credit; until, from the parlour, he had made a regular aſcent to the garret. There, while he ruminated on his next ſtep, which would have been to the Marſhalſea, and ſaw the night come on, attended with hunger and cold, the wind began to blow, and the tiles of the houſe rattled with the ſtorm: His imagination was immediately ſtruck with the idea of eſcaping unperceived, amidſt the darkneſs and noiſe of the tempeſt, by creeping out of the window of his apartment, and making his way over the tops of the adjoining houſes. Glowing with this proſpect, he examined the paſſage, which, to his infinite mortification, he found grated with iron bars on the outſide; but even this difficulty did not divert him from his purpoſe. Conſcious of his own ſtrength, he believed himſelf able to make an hole through the roof, which ſeemed to be ſlender and crazy; and on this ſuppoſition, he barricadoed the door with the whole furniture of the room; then ſetting himſelf to work with a poker, he in a few minutes effected a paſſage for his hand, with which he gradually ſtripped off the boards and tiling, ſo as to open a ſally-port for his whole body, through which he fairly ſet himſelf free, groping his way towards the next tenement. Here, however, he met with an unlucky accident. His hat being blown off his head, chanced to fall into the court juſt as one of the bailiff's followers was knocking at the door; and this myrmidon recognizing it, immediately gave the alarm to his chief, who, running up ſtairs to the garret, forced open the door in a twinkling, notwithſtanding the precautions which the priſoner had taken, and, with his attendant, purſued the fugitive through his own track. "After this chaſe had continued ſome time (ſaid the officer), to the imminent danger of all three, I found my progreſs ſuddenly ſtopt by a ſky-light, through which I perceived ſeven taylors, ſitting at work upon a board. Without the leaſt heſitation, or previous notice, I plunged among them with my backſide foremoſt. Before they could recollect themſelves from the conſternation occaſioned by ſuch a ſtrange viſit, I told them my ſituation, and gave them to underſtand that there was no time

to be loſt. One of the number taking the hint, led me inſtantly down ſtairs, and diſmiſſed me at the ſtreet door; while the bailiff and his follower, arriving at the breach, were deterred from entering by the brethren of my deliverer, who preſenting their ſhears, like a range of *chevaux de frize*, commanded them to retire, on pain of immediate death: And the catchpole, rather than riſk his carcaſe, conſented to diſcharge the debt, comforting himſelf with the hope of making me priſoner again. There, however, he was diſappointed: I kept ſnug, and laughed at his eſcape-warrant, until I was ordered abroad with the regiment, when I conveyed myſelf in a hearſe to Graveſend, where I embarked for Flanders, but, being obliged to come over again on the recruiting ſervice, I was nabbed on another ſcore: And all the ſatisfaction my firſt captor has been able to obtain, is a writ of detainer; which, I believe, will fix me in this place, until the parliament, in its great goodneſs, ſhall think proper to diſcharge my debts, by a new act of inſolvency."

Every body owned, that the captain's ſucceſs was equal to the hardineſs of his enterpriſe, which was altogether in the ſtyle of a ſoldier; but one of the merchants obſerved, that he muſt have been a bailiff of ſmall experience, who would truſt a priſoner of that conſequence in ſuch an unguarded place. "If the captain (ſaid he) had fallen into the hands of ſuch a cunning raſcal as the fellow that arreſted me, he would not have found it ſuch an eaſy matter to eſcape; for the manner in which I was caught is perhaps the moſt extraordinary that ever was practiſed in theſe realms. You muſt know, gentlemen, I ſuffered ſuch loſſes by inſuring veſſels, during the war, that I was obliged to ſtop payment, though my expectations were ſuch as encouraged me to manage one branch of buſineſs, without coming to any immediate compoſition with my creditors. In ſhort, I received conſignments from abroad as uſual; and, that I might not be ſubject to the viſits of thoſe catchpoles, I never ſtirred abroad, but, turning my firſt floor into a warehouſe, ordered all my goods to be hoiſted up by a crane, fixed to the upper ſtory of my houſe. Divers were the ſtratagems practiſed by thoſe ingenious ferrets, with a view of decoying me from the walls of my fortification. I received

innumerable meſſages from people, who wanted to ſee me at certain taverns, upon particular buſineſs: I was ſummoned into the country, to ſee my own mother, who was ſaid to be at the point of death. A gentlewoman, one night, was taken in labour on my threſhold: At another time, I was diſturbed with the cry of murder on the ſtreet; and once I was alarmed by a falſe fire. But, being ſtill upon my guard, I baffled all their attempts, and thought myſelf quite ſecure from their invention, when one of thoſe blood-hounds, inſpired, I believe, by the devil himſelf, contrived a ſnare by which I was at laſt entrapped. He made it his buſineſs to inquire into the particulars of my traffic; and underſtanding that, among other things, there were ſeveral cheſts of Florence entered at the cuſtom-houſe on my behalf, he ordered himſelf to be encloſed in a box of the ſame dimenſions, with air-holes in the bottom, for the benefit of breathing, and No. III. marked upon the cover; and being conveyed to my door in a cart, among other goods, was, in his turn, hoiſted up to my warehouſe, where I ſtood with a hammer, in order to open the cheſts, that I might compare the contents with the invoice. You may gueſs my ſurpriſe and conſternation, when, upon uncovering the box, I ſaw a bailiff rearing up his head, like Lazarus from the grave, and heard him declare that he had a writ againſt me for a thouſand pounds. Indeed, I aimed the hammer at his head, but, in the hurry of my confuſion, miſſed my mark; before I could repeat the blow, he ſtarted up with great agility, and executed his office in ſight of ſeveral evidences, whom he had aſſembled in the ſtreet for that purpoſe; ſo that I could not poſſibly diſentangle myſelf from the toil without incurring an eſcape-warrant, from which I had no protection. But, had I known the contents of the cheſt, by all that's good! I would have ordered my porter to raiſe it up, as high as the crane would permit, and then have cut the rope by accident."

"That expedient (ſaid the knight with the red ribbon) would have diſcouraged him from ſuch hazardous attempts for the future, and would have been an example *in terrorem* of all his brethren. The ſtory puts me in mind of a deliverance achieved by Tom Hackabout, a very ſtout honeſt fellow, an old acquaintance of mine, who

had been ſo famous for maiming bailiffs, that another gentleman having been ill uſed at a ſpunging-houſe, no ſooner obtained his liberty, than, with a view of being revenged upon the landlord, he, for five ſhilings, bought one of Tom's notes, which ſold at a very large diſcount, and, taking out a writ upon it, put it into the hands of the bailiff, who had uſed him ill. The catchpole, after a diligent ſearch, had an opportunity of executing the writ upon the defendant, who, without ceremony, broke one of his arms, fractured his ſkull, and belaboured him in ſuch a manner, that he lay without ſenſe or motion on the ſpot. By ſuch exploits, this hero became ſo formidable, that no ſingle bailiff would undertake to arreſt him; ſo that he appeared in all public places untouched. At length, however, ſeveral officers of the Marſhalſea court entered into a confederacy againſt him; and two of the number, attended by three deſperate followers, ventured to arreſt him one day in the Strand, near Hungerford market: He found it impoſſible to make reſiſtance, becauſe the whole gang ſprung upon him at once, like ſo many tygers, and pinioned his arms ſo faſt, that he could not wag a finger. Perceiving himſelf fairly overpowered, he deſired to be conducted forthwith to jail, and was ſtowed in a boat accordingly; by the time they had reached the middle of the river, he found means to overſet the wherry by accident, and every man diſregarding the priſoner, conſulted his own ſafety. As for Hackabout, to whom that element was quite familiar, he mounted aſtride upon the keel of the boat, which was uppermoſt, and exhorted the bailiffs to ſwim for their lives; proteſting, before God, that they had no other chance to be ſaved.

"The watermen were immediately taken up by ſome of their own friends, who, far from yielding any aſſiſtance to the catchpoles, kept aloof, and exulted in their calamity. In ſhort, two of the five went to the bottom, and never ſaw the light of God's ſun, and the other three, with great difficulty, ſaved themſelves by laying hold on the rudder of a dung-barge, to which they were carried by the ſtream, while Tom, with great deliberation, ſwam acroſs to the Surry ſhore. After this achievement, he was ſo much dreaded by the whole fraternity, that they ſhivered at the very mention of his name; and this cha-

facter which ſome people would think an advantage to a man in debt, was the greateſt misfortune that could poſſibly happen to him; becauſe no tradeſman would give him credit for the leaſt trifle, on the ſuppoſition that he could not indemnify himſelf in the common courſe of law."

The parſon did not approve of Mr. Hackabout's method of eſcaping, which he conſidered as a very unchriſtian attempt upon the lives of his fellow-ſubjects:—"It is enough (ſaid he) that we elude the laws of our country, without murdering the officers of juſtice: For my own part, I can lay my hand upon my heart, and ſafely ſay, that I forgive from my ſoul the fellow by whom I was made a priſoner, although the circumſtances of his behaviour were treacherous, wicked, and profane. You muſt know, Mr. Pickle, I was one day called into my chapel, in order to join a couple in the holy bands of matrimony; and my affairs being at that time ſo ſituated, as to lay me under apprehenſions of an arreſt, I cautiouſly ſurveyed the man through a lattice which was made for that purpoſe, before I would venture to come within his reach. He was clothed in a ſeaman's jacket and trowſers, and had ſuch an air of ſimplicity in his countenance, as diveſted me of all ſuſpicion: I therefore, without further ſcruple, truſted myſelf in his preſence, began to exerciſe the duty of my function, and had actually performed one half of the ceremony, when the ſuppoſed woman, pulling out a paper from her boſom, exclaimed, with a maſculine voice, "Sir, you are my priſoner, I have got a writ againſt you for five hundred pounds." I was thunderſtruck at this declaration, not ſo much on account of my own misfortune, which (thank heaven) I can bear with patience and reſignation, as at the impiety of the wretch, firſt, in diſguiſing ſuch a worldly aim under the cloak of religion; and, ſecondly, in proſtituting the ſervice, when there was no occaſion for ſo doing, his deſign having previouſly taken effect. Yet I forgive him, poor ſoul! becauſe he knew not what he did; and I hope you, Sir Sipple, will exert the ſame Chriſtian virtue towards the man by whom you was likewiſe overreached."

"Oh! damn the raſcal (cried the knight), were I his

judge, he ſhould be condemned to flames everlaſting. A villain! to diſgrace me in ſuch a manner, before almoſt all the faſhionable company in town." Our hero expreſſing a curioſity to know the particulars of this adventure, the knight gratified his deſire, by telling him, that one evening, while he was engaged in a party of cards, at a drum in the houſe of a certain lady of quality, he was given to underſtand by one of the ſervants, that a ſtranger, very richly dreſſed, was juſt arrived in a chair, preceded by five footmen with flambeaux, and that he refuſed to come up ſtairs, until he ſhould be introduced by Sir Sipple. "Upon this notice (continued the knight), I judged it was ſome of my quality friends; and having obtained her ladyſhip's permiſſion to bring him up, went down to the hall, and perceived a perſon, whom, to the beſt of my recollection, I had never ſeen before. However, his appearance was ſo magnificent, that I could not harbour the leaſt ſuſpicion of his true quality; and, ſeeing me advance, he ſaluted me with a very genteel bow, obſerving, that, though he had not the honour of my acquaintance, he could not diſpenſe with waiting upon me, even on that occaſion, in conſequence of a letter which he had received from a particular friend. So ſaying, he put a paper into my hand, intimating, that he had got a writ againſt me for ten thouſand pounds, and that it would be my intereſt to ſubmit without reſiſtance, for he was provided with a guard of twenty men, who ſurrounded the door in different diſguiſes, determined to ſecure me againſt all oppoſition. Enraged at the ſcoundrel's fineſſe, and truſting to the aſſiſtance of the real footmen aſſembled in the hall, "So, you are a raſcally bailiff (ſaid I), who have aſſumed the garb of a gentleman, in order to diſturb her ladyſhip's company. Take this fellow, my lads, and roll him in the kennel: Here are ten guineas for your trouble. Theſe words were no ſooner pronounced, than I was ſeized, lifted up, placed in a chair, and carried off in the twinkling of an eye; not but that the ſervants of the houſe, and ſome other footmen, made a motion towards my reſcue, and alarmed all the company above: But the bailiff affirming with undaunted effrontery, that I was taken up upon an affair of ſtate, and ſo many people appearing in his behalf, the

countess would not suffer the supposed messenger to be insulted; and he carried me to the county-jail, without further let or molestation.

CHAPTER XCVIII.

Pickle seems tolerably well reconciled to his cage; and is by the clergyman entertained with the memoirs of a noted personage, whom he sees by accident in the Fleet.

The knight had scarce finished his narrative, when our hero was told, that a gentleman in the coffeeroom wanted to see him; and when he went thither, he found his friend Crabtree, who had transacted all his affairs, according to the determination of the preceding day; and now gave him an account of the remarks he had overheard, on the subject of his misfortune;—for the manner of the arrest was so public and extraordinary, that those who were present immediately propagated it among their acquaintance, and it was that same evening discoursed upon at several tea and card tables, with this variation from the truth, that the debt amounted to twelve thousand, instead of twelve hundred pounds: From which circumstance it was conjectured, that Peregrine was a bite from the beginning, who had found credit on account of his effrontery and appearance, and imposed himself upon the town as a young gentleman of fortune. They rejoiced, therefore, at his calamity, which they considered as a just punishment for his fraud and presumption, and began to review certain particulars of his conduct, that plainly demonstrated him to be a rank adventurer, long before he had arrived at this end of his career.

Pickle, who now believed his glory was set for ever, received this intelligence with that disdain which enables a man to detach himself effectually from the world, and, with great tranquillity, gave the misanthrope an entertaining detail of what he had seen and heard since their last parting. While they amused themselves in this manner over a dish of coffee, they were joined by the parson, who congratulated our hero upon his bearing mischance with such philosophic quiet, and began to regale the two friends

with ſome curious circumſtances relating to the private hiſtory of the ſeveral priſoners, as they happened to come in.

At length a gentleman entered; at ſight of whom the clergyman roſe up, and ſaluted him with a moſt reverential bow, which was graciouſly returned by the ſtranger, who, with a young man that attended him, retired to the other end of the room. They were no ſooner out of hearing, than the communicative prieſt deſired his company to take particular notice of this perſon to whom he had paid his reſpects: "That man (ſaid he) is this day one of the moſt flagrant inſtances of neglected virtue which the world can produce. Over and above a cool diſcerning head, fraught with uncommon learning and experience, he is poſſeſſed of ſuch fortitude and reſolution, as no difficulties can diſcourage, and no danger impair; and ſo indefatigable in his humanity, that even now, while he is ſurrounded with ſuch embarraſſments as would diſtract the brain of any ordinary mortal, he has added conſiderably to his encumbrances, by taking under his protection that young gentleman, who, induced by his character, appealed to his benevolence for redreſs of the grievances under which he labours from the villany of his guardian."

Peregrine's curioſity being excited by this encomium, he aſked the name of this generous patron, of which when he was informed, "I am no ſtranger (ſaid he) to the fame of that gentleman, who has made a conſiderable noiſe in the world, on account of that great cauſe he undertook in defence of an unhappy orphan; and, ſince he is a perſon of ſuch an amiable diſpoſition, I am heartily ſorry to find that his endeavours have not met with that ſucceſsful iſſue which their good fortune in the beginning ſeemed to promiſe. Indeed the circumſtance of his eſpouſing that cauſe was ſo uncommon and romantic, and the depravity of the human heart ſo univerſal, that ſome people, unacquainted with his real character, imagined his views were altogether ſelfiſh; and ſome were not wanting, who affirmed he was a mere adventurer. Nevertheleſs, I muſt do him the juſtice to own, I have heard ſome of the moſt virulent of thoſe who were concerned on the other ſide of the queſtion, bear teſtimony

in his favour, obſerving, that he was deceived into the expence of the whole, by the plauſible ſtory which at firſt engaged his compaſſion. Your deſcription of his character confirms me in the ſame opinion, though I am quite ignorant of the affair; the particulars of which I ſhould be glad to learn, as well as a genuine account of his own life, many circumſtances of which are by his enemies, I believe, egregiouſly miſrepreſented."

"Sir (anſwered the prieſt), that is a piece of ſatisfaction which I am glad to find myſelf capable of giving you: I have had the pleaſure of being acquainted with Mr. M—— from his youth, and every thing which I ſhall relate concerning him, you may depend upon as a fact which hath fallen under my own cognizance, or been vouched upon the credit of undoubted evidence.

Mr. M——'s father was a miniſter of the eſtabliſhed church of Scotland, deſcended from a very ancient clan, and his mother nearly related to a noble family in the northern part of that kingdom. While the ſon was boarded at a public ſchool, where he made good progreſs in the Latin tongue, his father died, and he was left an orphan to the care of an uncle, who, finding him determined againſt any ſervile employment, kept him at ſchool, that he might prepare himſelf for the univerſity, with a view of being qualified for his father's profeſſion.

Here his imagination was ſo heated by the warlike achievements he found recorded in the Latin authors, ſuch as Cæſar, Curtius, and Buchanan, that he was ſeized with an irreſiſtible thirſt of military glory, and deſire of trying his fortune in the army. His majeſty's troops taking the field, in conſequence of the rebellion which happened in the year ſeventeen hundred and fifteen, this young adventurer, thinking no life equal to that of a ſoldier, found means to furniſh himſelf with a fuſil and bayonet, and, leaving the ſchool, repaired to the camp near Stirling, with a view of ſignalizing himſelf in the field, though he was at that time but juſt turned of thirteen. He offered his ſervice to ſeveral officers, in hope of being enliſted in their companies; but they would not receive him, becauſe they rightly concluded, that he was ſome ſchool-boy broke looſe, without the knowledge or conſent of his relations. Notwithſtanding this diſcouragement, he

continued in camp, curiouſly prying into every part of the ſervice; and ſuch was the reſolution conſpicuous in him, even at ſuch a tender age, that, after his ſmall finances were exhauſted, he perſiſted in his deſign; and, becauſe he would not make his wants known, actually ſubſiſted for ſeveral days on hips, haws and ſloes, and other ſpontaneous fruits, whith he gathered in the woods and fields. Meanwhile, he never failed to be preſent, when any regiment or corps of men were drawn out to be exerciſed and reviewed, and accompanied them in all their evolutions, which he had learned to great perfection, by obſerving the companies which were quartered in the place where he was at ſchool. This eagerneſs and perſeverance attracted the notice of many officers, who, after having commended his ſpirit and zeal, preſſed him to return to his parents, and even threatened to expel him from the camp, if he would not comply with their advice.

Theſe remonſtrances having no other effect than that of warning him to avoid his monitors, they thought proper to alter their behaviour towards him, took him into their protection, and even into their meſs; and what, above all other marks of favour, pleaſed the young ſoldier moſt, permitted him to incorporate in the battalion, and take his turn of duty with the other men. In this happy ſituation he was diſcovered by a relation of his mother, who was a captain in the army, and who uſed all his authority and influence in perſuading M—— to return to ſchool; but finding him deaf to his admonitions and threats, he took him under his own care, and, when the army marched to Dumblane, left him at Stirling, with expreſs injunction to keep himſelf within the walls.

He temporiſed with his kinſman, fearing, that, ſhould he ſeem refractory, the captain would have ordered him to be ſhut up in the caſtle. Inflamed with the deſire of ſeeing a battle, his relation no ſooner marched off the ground, than he mixed in with another regiment, to which his former patrons belonged, and proceeded to the field, where he diſtinguiſhed himſelf, even at that early time of life, by his gallantry, in helping to retrieve a pair of colours belonging to M—n's regiment; ſo that, after the affair, he was preſented to the Duke of Argyll, and recommended ſtrongly to Brigadier Grant, who invited him into his regiment, and promiſed to provide for him with

the firſt opportunity: But that gentleman in a little time loſt his command upon the duke's diſgrace, and the regiment was ordered for Ireland, being given to Colonel Naſſau, whoſe favour the young volunteer acquired to ſuch a degree, that he was recommended to the king for an enſigncy, which in all probability he would have obtained, had not the regiment been unluckily reduced.

In conſequence of this reduction, which happened in the moſt ſevere ſeaſon of the year, he was obliged to return to his own country, through infinite hardſhips, to which he was expoſed from the narrowneſs of his circumſtances: And continuing ſtill enamoured of a military life, he entered into the regiment of Scotch Greys, at that time commanded by the late Sir James Campbell, who being acquainted with his family and character, encouraged him with the promiſe of ſpeedy preferment. In this corps he remained three years, during which he had no opportunity of ſeeing actual ſervice, except at the affair of Glenſheel; and this life of inſipid quiet muſt have hung heavy upon a youth of M——'s active diſpoſition, had not he found exerciſe for the mind, in reading books of amuſement, hiſtory, voyages, and geography, together with thoſe that treated of the art of war, ancient and modern, for which he contracted ſuch an eager appetite, that he uſed to ſpend ſixteen hours a-day in this employment. About that time he became acquainted with a gentleman of learning and taſte, who obſerving his indefatigable application, and inſatiable thirſt after knowledge, took upon himſelf the charge of ſuperintending his ſtudies; and, by the direction of ſuch an able guide, the young ſoldier converted his attention to a more ſolid and profitable courſe of reading. So inordinate was his deſire of making ſpeedy advances in the paths of learning, that, within the compaſs of three months, he diligently peruſed the writings of Locke and Malebranche, and made himſelf maſter of the firſt ſix, and of the eleventh and twelfth books of Euclid's Elements. He conſidered Puffendorf and Grotius with uncommon care, acquired a tolerable degree of knowledge in the French language, and his imagination was ſo captivated with the deſire of learning, that, ſeeing no proſpect of a war, or views of being provided for in the ſervice, he quitted the army, and went through

a regular courſe of univerſity education. Having made ſuch progreſs in his ſtudies, he reſolved to qualify himſelf for the church, and acquired ſuch a ſtock of ſchool divinity, under the inſtructions of a learned profeſſor at Edinburgh, that he more than once mounted the roſtrum in the public hall, and held forth with uncommon applauſe: But being diſcouraged from a proſecution of his plan, by the unreaſonable auſterity of ſome of the Scotch clergy, by whom the moſt indifferent and innocent words and actions were often miſconſtrued into levity and miſconduct, he reſolved to embrace the firſt favourable opportunity of going abroad, being inflamed with the deſire of ſeeing foreign countries, and actually ſet out for Holland, where, for the ſpace of two years, he ſtudied the Roman law, with the law of Nature and Nations, under the famous profeſſors Tolieu and Barbeyrac.

Having thus finiſhed his ſchool education, he ſet out for Paris, with a view to make himſelf perfect in the French language, and learn ſuch uſeful exerciſes, as might be acquired with the wretched remnant of his ſlender eſtate, which was by that time reduced very low. In his journey through the Netherlands, he went to Namur, and paid his reſpects to Biſhop Strickland and General Collier, by whom he was received with great civility, in conſequence of letters of recommendation, with which he was provided from the Hague, and the old general aſſured him of his protection and intereſt for a pair of colours, if he was diſpoſed to enter into the Dutch ſervice.

Though he was by that time pretty well cured of his military Quixotiſm, he would not totally decline the generous proffer, for which he thanked him in the moſt grateful terms, telling the general that he would pay his duty to him on his return from France, and then, if he could determine upon re-engaging in the army, ſhould think himſelf highly honoured in being under his command.

After a ſtay of two months in Flanders, he proceeded to Paris, and, far from taking up his habitation in the ſuburbs of St. Germain, according to the cuſtom of Engliſh travellers, he hired a private lodging on the other ſide of the river, and aſſociated chiefly with French officers, who (their youthful ſallies being over) are allowed to be

the politeſt gentlemen of that kingdom. In this ſcheme he found his account ſo much, that he could not but wonder at the folly of his countrymen, who loſe the main ſcope of their going abroad, by ſpending their time and fortune idly with one another.

During his reſidence in Holland, he had made himſelf acquainted with the beſt authors in the French language, ſo that he was able to ſhare in their converſation; a circumſtance from which he found great benefit; for it not only improved him in his knowledge of that tongue, but alſo tended to the enlargement of his acquaintance, in the courſe of which he contracted intimacies in ſome families of good faſhion, eſpecially thoſe of the long robe, which would have enabled him to paſs his time very agreeably, had he been a little eaſier in point of fortune: But his finances, notwithſtanding the moſt rigid economy, being in a few months reduced to a very low ebb, the proſpect of indigence threw a damp upon all his pleaſures, though he never ſuffered himſelf to be thereby in any degree diſpirited; being in that reſpect of ſo happy a diſpoſition, that conſcious poverty or abundance made very ſlight impreſſions upon his mind.

This conſumption of his caſh, however, involved him in ſome perplexity; and he deliberated with himſelf, whether he ſhould return to General Collier, or repair to London, where he might poſſibly fall into ſome buſineſs not unbecoming a gentleman; though he was very much mortified to find himſelf incapable of gratifying an inordinate deſire which poſſeſſed him of making the grand tour, or, at leaſt, of viſiting the ſouthern parts of France.

While he thus heſitated between different ſuggeſtions, he was one morning viſited by a gentleman who had ſought and cultivated his friendſhip, and for whom he had done a good office, in ſupporting him with ſpirit againſt a brutal German, with whom he had an affair of honour. This gentleman came to propoſe a party for a fortnight, to Fontainbleau, where the court then was; and the propoſal being declined by M—— with more than uſual ſtiffneſs, his friend was very urgent to know the reaſon of his refuſal, and at length, with ſome confuſion, ſaid, "perhaps your finances are low." M—— replied, that he had wherewithal to defray the expence of his journey

to London, where he could be furniſhed with a freſh ſupply; and this anſwer was no ſooner made, than the other taking him by the hand, "My dear friend (ſaid he), I am not unacquainted with your affairs, and would have offered you my credit long ago, if I had thought it would be acceptable; even now, I do not pretend to give you money, but deſire and inſiſt upon it, that you will accept of the loan of theſe two pieces of paper, to be repaid when you marry a woman with a fortune of twenty thouſand pounds, or obtain an employment of a thouſand a-year." So ſaying, he preſented him with two actions of above two thouſand livres each.

M—— was aſtoniſhed at this unexpected inſtance of generoſity in a ſtranger, and, with ſuitable acknowledgment, peremptorily refuſed to incur ſuch an obligation; but at length he was, by dint of importunity and warm expoſtulation, prevailed upon to accept one of the actions, on condition that the gentleman would take his note for the ſum; and this he abſolutely rejected, until M—— promiſed to draw upon him for double the value or more, in caſe he ſhould at any time want a farther ſupply. This uncommon act of friendſhip and generoſity, M—— afterwards had an opportunity to repay tenfold, though he could not help regretting the occaſion, on his friend's account. That worthy man having, by placing too much confidence in a villanous lawyer, and a chain of other misfortunes, involved himſelf and his amiable lady in a labyrinth of difficulties, which threatened the total ruin of his family: M—— felt the inexpreſſible ſatisfaction of delivering his benefactor from the ſnare.

Being thus reinforced by the generoſity of his friend, M—— reſolved to execute his former plan of ſeeing the ſouth of France, together with the ſea-ports of Spain, as far as Cadiz, from whence he propoſed to take a paſſage for London by ſea; and, with this view, ſent forward his trunks by the diligence to Lyons, determined to ride poſt, in order to enjoy a better view of the country, and for the conveniency of ſtopping at thoſe places where there was any thing remarkable to be ſeen or inquired into. While he was employed in taking leave of his Pariſian friends, who furniſhed him with abundant recommendation, a gentleman of his own country, who ſpoke little

or no French, hearing of his intention, begged the favour of accompanying him in his expedition.

With this new companion, therefore, he ſet out for Lyons, where he was perfectly well received by the intendant and ſome of the beſt families of the place, in conſequence of his letters of recommendation; and, after a ſhort ſtay in that city, proceeded down the Rhone, to Avignon, in what is called the *coche d'eau*; then viſiting the principal towns of Dauphine, Languedoc, and Provence, he returned to the delightful city of Marſeilles, where he and his fellow-traveller were ſo much captivated by the ſerenity of the air, the good-nature and hoſpitality of the ſprightly inhabitants, that they never dreamed of changing their quarters, during the whole winter, and part of the ſpring: Here he acquired the acquaintance of the Marquis D'Argens, attorney-general in the parliament of Aix, and of his eldeſt ſon, who now makes ſo great a figure in the literary world; and when the affair of Father Girard and Mademoiſelle Cadiere began to make a noiſe, he accompanied theſe two gentlemen to Toulon, where the marquis was ordered to take a precognition of the facts.

On his return to Marſeilles, he found a certain noble lord of great fortune under the direction of a Swiſs governor, who had accommodated him with two of his own relations, of the ſame country, by way of companions, together with five ſervants in his train. They being abſolute ſtrangers in the place, M—— introduced them to the intendant, and ſeveral other good families; and had the good fortune to be ſo agreeable to his lordſhip, that he propoſed and even preſſed him to live with him in England, as a friend and companion; and to take upon him the ſuperintendence of his affairs, in which caſe he would ſettle upon him four hundred a year for life.

This propoſal was too advantageous to be ſlighted by a perſon of no fortune, or fixed eſtabliſhment: He therefore made no difficulty of cloſing with it; but as his lordſhip's departure was fixed to a ſhort day, and he urged him to accompany him to Paris, and from thence to England, M—— thought it would be improper and indecent to interfere with the office of his governor, who might take umbrage at his favour, and therefore excuſed himſelf from a compliance with his lordſhip's requeſt, until

his minority ſhould be expired, as he was within a few months of being of age. However, he repeated his importunities ſo earneſtly, and the governor joined in the requeſt with ſuch appearance of cordiality, that he was prevailed upon to comply with their joint deſire; and in a few days ſet out with them for Paris, by the way of Lyons. But, before they had been three days in the city, M—— perceived a total change in the behaviour of the Swiſs and his two relations, who, in all probability, became jealous of his influence with his lordſhip; and he no ſooner made this diſcovery than he reſolved to withdraw himſelf from ſuch a diſagreeable participation of that young nobleman's favour. He therefore, in ſpite of all his lordſhip's entreaties and remonſtrances, quitted him for the preſent; alleging, as a pretext, that he had a longing deſire to ſee Switzerland and the banks of the Rhine, and promiſing to meet him again in England.

This his intention being made known to the governor and his friends, their countenances immediately cleared up, their courteſy and complaiſance returned, and they even furniſhed him with letters for Geneva, Lauſanne, Bern, and Soleures; in conſequence of which he met with unuſual civilities at theſe places. Having made this tour with his Scotch friend (who came up to him before he left Lyons), and viſited the moſt conſiderable towns on both ſides of the Rhine, and the courts of the Electors Palatine, Mentz, and Cologn, he arrived in Holland; and from thence, through the Netherlands, repaired to London, where he found my lord juſt returned from Paris.

His lordſhip received him with expreſſions of uncommon joy, would not ſuffer him to ſtir from him for ſeveral days, and introduced him to his relations.

M—— accompanied his lordſhip from London to his country ſeat, where he was indeed treated with great friendſhip and confidence, and conſulted in every thing; but the noble peer never once made mention of the annuity which he had promiſed to ſettle upon him, nor did M—— remind him of it, becauſe he conceived it was his affair to fulfil his engagements of his own accord. M—— being tired of the manner of living at this place, made an excurſion to Bath, where he ſtaid about a fortnight, to partake of the diverſions; and, upon his return, found his lordſhip making diſpoſitions for another journey to Paris.

Surpriſed at this ſudden reſolution, he endeavoured to diſſuade him from it; but his remonſtrances were rendered ineffectual by the inſinuations of a foreigner who had come over with him, and filled his imagination with extravagant notions of pleaſure, infinitely ſuperior to any which he could enjoy while he was in the trammels and under the reſtraints of a governor. He therefore turned a deaf ear to all M——'s arguments, and entreated him to accompany him in the journey; but this gentleman, foreſeeing that a young man, like my lord, of ſtrong paſſions, and eaſy to be miſled, would, in all probability, ſquander away great ſums of money, in a way that would neither do credit to himſelf, or to thoſe who were concerned with him, reſiſted all his ſolicitations, on pretence of having buſineſs of conſequence at London; and afterwards had reaſon to be extremely well pleaſed with his own conduct in this particular.

Before he ſet out on this expedition, M——, in juſtice to himſelf, reminded him of the propoſal which he had made to him at Marſeilles, deſiring to know if he had altered his deſign in that particular; in which caſe he would turn his thoughts ſome other way, as he would not in the leaſt be thought to intrude or pin himſelf upon any man. My lord proteſted in the moſt ſolemn manner, that he ſtill continued in his former reſolution, and again beſeeching him to bear him company into France, promiſed that every thing ſhould be ſettled to his ſatisfaction upon their return to England. M——, however, ſtill perſiſted in his refuſal, for the above mentioned reaſons, and though he never heard more of the annuity, he nevertheleſs continued to ſerve his lordſhip with his advice and good offices ever after; particularly in directing his choice to an alliance with a lady of eminent virtue, the daughter of a noble lord, more conſpicuous for his ſhining parts than the ſplendour of his titles (a circumſtance upon which he always reflected with particular ſatisfaction, as well on account of the extraordinary merit of the lady, as becauſe it veſted in her children a conſiderable part of that great eſtate, which, of right, belonged to her grandmother), and afterwards put him in a way to retrieve his eſtate from a heavy load of debt he had contracted. When my lord ſet out on his Paris expedition, the money M——

had received from his generous friend at Paris was almoſt reduced to the laſt guinea. He had not yet reaped the leaſt benefit from his engagements with his lordſhip; and, diſdaining to aſk for a ſupply from him, he knew not how to ſubſiſt, with any degree of credit, till his return.

This uncomfortable proſpect was the more diſagreeable to him, as, at that time of life, he was much inclined to appear in the gay world, had contracted a taſte for plays, operas, and other public diverſions, and acquired an acquaintance with many people of good faſhion, which could not be maintained without a conſiderable expence. In this emergency, he thought he could not employ his idle time more profitably than in tranſlating, from foreign languages, ſuch books as were then chiefly in vogue; and upon application to a friend, who was a man of letters, he was furniſhed with as much buſineſs of that kind as he could poſſibly manage, and wrote ſome pamphlets on the reigning controverſies of that time, that had the good fortune to please. He was alſo concerned in a monthly journal of literature, and the work was carried on by the two [illegible] only, the [illegible]. M—— did not at all appear in the [illegible]ſhip. By [illegible] means he not only ſpent his morn[illegible] in ufeful exercife, but [illegible] applied himſelf with money [illegible] what the French call [illegible] who *cherchent plaiſirs*, during the whole ſummer. [illegible] moſt conſiderable aſſemblies in and about London, and conſtantly [illegible] courts of his acquaintance [illegible] ſucceſſively. [illegible] ved in He[illegible]

[illegible] repaired become ac[illegible]d from from Lon[illegible]s of uncouth of ex[illegible]r ſeverary of the [illegible] regard [illegible]ondon tchy the [illegible] with grimate [illegible]ery thint he [illegible] of the ation [illegible], nor dling [illegible] it was hHe [illegible].. M——y [illegible] made an [illegible]ight, to [illegible]ound his [illegible]o Paris.

acceſſion of fortune to the amount of three and twenty thouſand pounds, he ventured to declare his paſſion, and ſhe not only heard him with patience and approbation, but alſo replied in terms adequate to his warmeſt wiſh.

Finding himſelf ſo favourably received, he preſſed her to ſecure his happineſs by marriage; but to this propoſal ſhe objected the recency of her kinſwoman's death, which would have rendered ſuch a ſtep highly indecent, and the diſpleaſure of her other relations, from whom ſhe had ſtill greater expectations, and who, at that time, importuned her to marry a couſin of her own, whom ſhe could not like. However, that M—— might have no cauſe to repine at her delay, ſhe freely entered with him into an intimacy of correſpondence; during which nothing could have added to their mutual felicity, which was the more poignant and refined, from the myſterious and romantic manner of their enjoying it; for though he publicly viſited her as an acquaintance, his behaviour on theſe occaſions was always ſo diſtant, reſpectful, and reſerved, that the reſt of the company could not poſſibly ſuſpect the nature of their reciprocal attachment; in conſequence of which they uſed to have private interviews, unknown to every ſoul upon earth, except her maid, who was neceſſarily intruſted with the ſecret.

In this manner they enjoyed the converſation of each other for above twelve months, without the leaſt interruption; and though the ſtability of Mr. M——'s fortune depended entirely upon their marriage, yet as he perceived his miſtreſs ſo averſe to it, he never urged it with vehemence, nor was at all anxious on that ſcore, being eaſily induced to defer a ceremony, which, as he then thought, could in no ſhape have added to their ſatisfaction, though he hath ſince altered his ſentiments.

Be that as it will, his indulgent miſtreſs, in order to ſet his mind at eaſe in that particular, and in full confidence of his honour, inſiſted on his accepting a deed of gift of her whole fortune, in conſideration of her intended marriage; and, after ſome difficulty, he was prevailed upon to receive this proof of her eſteem, well knowing that it would ſtill be in his power to return the obligation. Though ſhe often entreated him to take upon himſelf the entire adminiſtration of her finances, and upon divers oc-

caſions preſſed him to accept of large ſums, he never once abuſed her generous diſpoſition, or ſolicited her for money, except for ſome humane purpoſe, which ſhe was always more ready to fulfil than he to propoſe.

In the courſe of this correſpondence, he became acquainted with ſome of her female relations, and, among the reſt, with a young lady, ſo eminently adorned with all the qualifications of mind and perſon, that, notwithſtanding all his philoſophy and caution, he could not behold and converſe with her, without being deeply ſmitten with her charms. He did all in his power to diſcourage this dangerous invaſion in the beginning, and to conceal the leaſt ſymptom of it from her relation; he ſummoned all his reflection to his aid, and, thinking it would be baſe and diſhoneſt to cheriſh any ſentiment repugnant to the affection which he owed to a miſtreſs who had placed ſuch unlimited confidence in him, he attempted to ſtifle the infant flame, by avoiding the amiable inſpirer of it. But the paſſion had taken too deep a root in his heart to be ſo eaſily extirpated—his abſence from the dear object increaſed the impatience of his love—the inteſtine conflict between that and gratitude deprived him of his reſt and appetite—he was, in a ſhort time, emaciated by continual watching, anxiety, and want of nouriſhment, and ſo much altered from his uſual cheerfulneſs, that his miſtreſs, being ſurpriſed and alarmed at the change, which, from the ſymptoms, ſhe judged was owing to ſome uneaſineſs of mind, took all imaginable pains to diſcover the cauſe.

In all probability it did not eſcape her penetration; for ſhe more than once aſked if he was in love with her couſin; proteſting, that, far from being an obſtacle to his happineſs, ſhe would, in that caſe, be an advocate for his paſſion. However, this declaration was never made without manifeſt ſigns of anxiety and uneaſineſs, which made ſuch an impreſſion upon the heart of M——, that he reſolved to ſacrifice his happineſs, and even his life, rather than take any ſtep which might be conſtrued into an injury or inſult to a perſon who had treated him with ſuch generoſity and goodneſs.

In conſequence of this reſolution, he formed another, which was to go abroad, under pretence of recovering his health, but in reality to avoid the temptation, as well as

the ſuſpicion of being inconſtant; and in this deſign he was confirmed by his phyſician, who actually thought him in the firſt ſtage of a conſumption, and therefore adviſed him to repair to the ſouth of France. He communicated his deſign, with the doctor's opinion, to the lady, who agreed to it with much leſs difficulty than he found in conquering his own reluctance at parting with the dear object of his love. The conſent of his generous miſtreſs being obtained, he waited upon her with the inſtrument whereby ſhe had made the conveyance of her fortune to him; and all his remonſtrances being inſufficient to perſuade her to take it back, he cancelled it in her preſence, and placed it in that ſtate upon her toilet, while ſhe was dreſſing; whereupon ſhe ſhed a torrent of tears, ſaying ſhe now plainly perceived that he wanted to tear himſelf from her, and that his affections were ſettled upon another. He was ſenſibly affected by this proof of her concern, and endeavoured to calm the perturbation of her mind, by vowing eternal fidelity, and preſſing her to accept of his hand in due form before his departure. By theſe means her tranſports were quieted for the preſent, and the marriage deferred for the ſame prudential reaſons which had hitherto prevented it.

Matters being thus compromiſed, and the day fixed for his departure, ſhe, together with her faithful maid, one morning viſited him for the firſt time at his own lodgings; and, after breakfaſt, deſiring to ſpeak with him in private, he conducted her into another room, where aſſuming an unuſual gravity of aſpect, "My dear M—— (ſaid ſhe), you are now going to leave me, and God alone knows if ever we ſhall meet again; therefore, if you really love me with that tenderneſs which you profeſs, you will accept of this mark of my friendſhip and unalterable affection; it will at leaſt be a proviſion for your journey, and if any accident ſhould befal me, before I have the happineſs of receiving you again into my arms, I ſhall have the ſatisfaction of knowing that you are not altogether without reſource." So ſaying, ſhe put an embroidered pocket-book into his hand. He expreſſed the high ſenſe he had of her generoſity and affection in the moſt pathetic terms, and begged leave to ſuſpend his acceptance, until he ſhould know the contents of her pre-

ſent, which was ſo extraordinary, that he abſolutely refuſed to receive it: He was, however, by her repeated entreaties, in a manner compelled to receive about one half, and ſhe afterwards inſiſted upon his taking a reinforcement of a conſiderable ſum for the expence of his journey.

Having ſtaid with her ten days beyond the time he had fixed for his departure, and ſettled the method of their correſpondence, he took his leave, with an heart full of ſorrow, anxiety, and diſtraction, produced from the different ſuggeſtions of his duty and love. He then ſet out for France, and, after a ſhort ſtay at Paris, proceeded to Aix in Provence, and from thence to Marſeilles, at which two places he continued for ſome months: But nothing he met with being able to diſſipate thoſe melancholy ideas which ſtill preyed upon his imagination, and affected his ſpirits, he endeavoured to elude them with a ſucceſſion of new objects; and, with that view, perſuaded a counſellor of the parliament of Aix, a man of great worth, learning, and good humour, to accompany him in making a tour of thoſe parts of France which he had not yet ſeen. On their return from this excurſion, they found at Aix an Italian Abbe, a perſon of character, and great knowledge of men and books, who, having travelled all over Germany and France, was ſo far on his return to his own country.

M—— having, by means of his friend the counſellor, contracted an acquaintance with this gentleman, and being deſirous of ſeeing ſome parts of Italy, particularly the carnival at Venice, they ſet out together from Marſeilles in a tartan for Genoa, coaſting it all the way, and lying on ſhore every night. Having ſhown him what was moſt remarkable in this city, his friend the Abbe was ſo obliging as to conduct him through Tuſcany, and the moſt remarkable cities in Lombardy, to Venice, where where M—— inſiſted upon defraying the expence of the whole tour, in conſideration of the Abbe's complaiſance, which had been of infinite ſervice to him in the courſe of this expedition. Having remained five weeks at Venice, he was preparing to ſet out for Rome, with ſome Engliſh gentlemen whom he had met by accident, when he was all of a ſudden obliged to change his reſolution by ſome

diſagreeable letters which he received from London. He had, from his firſt departure, correſponded with his generous, though inconſtant miſtreſs, with a religious exactneſs and punctuality; nor was ſhe, for ſome time, leſs obſervant of the agreement they had made. Nevertheleſs ſhe, by degrees, became ſo negligent and cold in her expreſſion, and ſo ſlack in her correſpondence, that he could not help obſerving and upbraiding her with ſuch indifference; and her endeavours to palliate it were ſupported by pretexts ſo frivolous, as to be eaſily ſeen through by a lover of very little diſcernment.

While he tortured himſelf with conjectures about the cauſe of this unexpected change, he received ſuch intelligence from England, as, when joined with what he himſelf had perceived, by her manner of writing, left him little or no room to doubt of her fickleneſs and inconſtancy. Nevertheleſs, as he knew by experience, that informations of that kind are not to be entirely relied upon, he reſolved to be more certainly appriſed; and, for that end, departed immediately for London, by the way of Tirol, Bavaria, Alſace, and Paris.

On his arrival in England, he learned, with infinite concern, that his intelligence had not been at all exaggerated; and his ſorrow was inexpreſſible to find a perſon, endowed with ſo many other noble and amiable qualities, ſeduced into an indiſcretion, that of neceſſity ruined the whole plan which had been concerted between them for their mutual happineſs. She made ſeveral attempts, by letters and interviews, to palliate her conduct, and ſoften him into a reconciliation; but his honour being concerned, he remained deaf to all her entreaties and propoſals. Nevertheleſs, I have often heard him ſay, that he could not help loving her, and revering the memory of a perſon to whoſe generoſity and goodneſs he owed his fortune, and one whoſe foibles were overbalanced by a thouſand good qualities. He often inſiſted on making reſtitution; but far from complying with that propoſal, ſhe afterwards often endeavoured to lay him under yet greater obligations of the ſame kind, and importuned him with the warmeſt ſolicitations to renew their former correſpondence, which he as often declined.

M—— took this inſtance of the inconſtancy of the

ſex ſo much to heart, that he had almoſt reſolved, for the future, to keep clear of all engagements for life, and returned to Paris, in order to diſſipate his anxiety, where he hired an apartment in one of the academies, in the exerciſes whereof he took ſingular delight. During his reſidence at this place, he had the good fortune to ingratiate himſelf with a great general, a deſcendant of one of the moſt ancient and illuſtrious families in France; having attracted his notice by ſome remarks he had written on Folard's Polybius, which were accidentally ſhown to that great man by one of his aids de camp, who was a particular friend of M——. The favour he had thus acquired, was ſtrengthened by his aſſiduities and attention. Upon his return to London, he ſent ſome of Handel's neweſt compoſitions to the prince, who was particularly fond of that gentleman's productions, together with Clark's edition of Cæſar; and, in the ſpring of the ſame year, before the French army took the field, he was honoured with a moſt obliging letter from the prince, inviting him to come over, if he wanted to ſee the operations of the campaign, and deſiring he would give himſelf no trouble about his equipage.

M—— having ſtill ſome remains of a military diſpoſition, and conceiving this to be a more favourable opportunity than any he ſhould ever meet with again, readily embraced the offer, and ſacrificed the ſoft delights of love, which at that time he enjoyed without controul, to an eager, laborious, and dangerous curioſity. In that and the following campaign, during which he was preſent at the ſiege of Philipſburgh, and ſeveral other actions, he enlarged his acquaintance among the French officers, eſpecially thoſe of the graver ſort, who had a taſte for books and literature; and the friendſhip and intereſt of thoſe gentlemen were afterwards of ſingular ſervice to him, though in an affair altogether foreign from their profeſſion.

He had all along made diligent inquiry into the trade and manufactures of the countries through which he had occaſion to travel, more particularly thoſe of Holland, England, and France; and, as he was well acquainted with the revenue and farms of this laſt kingdom, he ſaw with concern the great diſadvantages under which our

tobacco trade (the moſt conſiderable branch of our commerce with that people) was carried on; what inconſiderable returns were made to the planters, out of the low price given by the French company; and how much it was in the power of that company to reduce it ſtill lower. M—— had formed a ſcheme to remedy this evil, ſo far as it related to the national loſs or gain, by not permitting the duty of one penny in the pound, old ſubſidy, to be drawn back on tobacco re-exported. He demonſtrated to the miniſtry of that time, that ſo inconſiderable a duty could not in the leaſt diminiſh the demand from abroad, which was the only circumſtance to be apprehended, and that the yearly produce of that revenue would amount to one hundred and twenty thouſand pounds, without one ſhilling additional expence to the public; but the miniſtry having the exciſe-ſcheme then in contemplation, could think of no other till that ſhould be tried; and that project having miſcarried, he renewed his application, when they approved of his ſcheme in every particular, but diſcovered a ſurpriſing backwardneſs to carry it into execution.

His expectations in this quarter being diſappointed, he, by the interpoſition of his friends, preſented a plan to the French company, in which he ſet forth the advantages that would accrue to themſelves, from fixing the price, and ſecuring that ſort of tobacco which beſt ſuited the taſte of the public and their manufacture; and finally propoſed to furniſh them with any quantity, at the price which they paid in the port of London.

After ſome diſpute, they agreed to his propoſal, and contracted with him for fifteen thouſand hogſheads a-year, for which they obliged themſelves to pay ready money, on its arrival in any one or more convenient ports in the ſouth or weſtern coaſts of Great Britain that he ſhould pleaſe to fix upon for that purpoſe. M—— no ſooner obtained this contract, than he immediately ſet out for America, in order to put it in execution; and, by way of companion, carried with him a little French Abbe, a man of humour, wit, and learning, with whom he had been long acquainted, and for whom he had done many good offices.

On his arrival in Virginia, which opportunely happen-

ed at a time when all the gentlemen were aſſembled in the capital of that province, he publiſhed a memorial, repreſenting the diſadvantages under which their trade was carried on, the true method of redreſſing their own grievances in that reſpect, and propoſing to contract with them for the yearly quantity of fifteen thouſand hogſheads of ſuch tobacco as was fit for the French market, at the price which he demonſtrated to be conſiderably greater than that which they had formerly received.

This remonſtrance met with all the ſucceſs and encouragement he could expect: The principal planters, ſeeing their own intereſt concerned, readily aſſented to the propoſal, which, through their influence, was alſo reliſhed by the reſt; and the only difficulty that remained related to the ſecurity for payment of the bills on the arrival of the tobacco in England, and to the time ſtipulated for the continuance of the contract.

In order to remove theſe objections, Mr. M—— returned to Europe, and found the French company of farmers diſpoſed to agree to every thing he deſired for facilitating the execution of the contract, and perfectly well pleaſed with the ſample which he had already ſent; but his good friend the Abbe (whom he had left behind him in America), by an unparalleled piece of treachery, found means to overturn the whole project. He ſecretly wrote a memorial to the company, importing, that he found by experience M—— could afford to furniſh them at a much lower price than that which they had agreed to give; and that, by being in poſſeſſion of the contract for five years, as was intended according to the propoſal, he would have the company ſo much in his power, that they muſt afterwards ſubmit to any price he ſhould pleaſe to impoſe; and that, if they thought him worthy of ſuch a truſt, he would undertake to furniſh them at an eaſier rate, in conjunction with ſome of the leading men in Virginia and Maryland, with whom, he ſaid, he had already concerted meaſures for that purpoſe.

The company were ſo much alarmed at theſe inſinuations, that they declined complying with Mr. M——'s demands until the Abbe's return; and though they afterwards uſed all their endeavours to perſuade him to be concerned with that little traitor in his undertaking (by

which he might ſtill have been a very conſiderable gainer), he reſiſted all their ſolicitations, and plainly told them in the Abbe's preſence, that he would never proſtitute his own principles ſo far, as to enter into engagements of any kind with a perſon of his character, much leſs in a ſcheme that had a manifeſt tendency to lower the market price of tobacco in England.

Thus ended a project the moſt extenſive, ſimple, and eaſy, and (as appeared by the trial made) the beſt calculated to raiſe an immenſe fortune, of any that was ever undertaken or planned by a private perſon; a project, in the execution of which, M—— had the good of the public, and the glory of putting in a flouriſhing condition the valuable branch of our trade (which gives employment to two great provinces, and above two hundred ſail of ſhips) much more at heart than his own private intereſt. It was reaſonable to expect, that a man whoſe debts M—— had paid more than once, whom he had obliged in many other reſpects, and whom he had carried with him at a very conſiderable expence, on this expedition, merely with a view of bettering his fortune, would have acted with common honeſty, if not with gratitude; but ſuch was the depravity of this little monſter's heart, that, on his deathbed, he left a conſiderable fortune to mere ſtrangers, with whom he had little or no connection, without the leaſt thought of refunding the money advanced for him by M——, in order to prevent his rotting in a jail.

When M—— had once obtained a command of money, he, by his knowledge in ſeveral branches of trade, as well as by the aſſiſtance of ſome intelligent friends at Paris and London, found means to employ it to very good purpoſe; and had he been a man of that ſelfiſh diſpoſition, which too much prevails in the world, he might have been at this day maſter of a very ample fortune; but his ear was never deaf to the voice of diſtreſs, nor his beneficent heart ſhut againſt the calamities of his fellow-creatures. He was even ingenious in contriving the moſt delicate methods of relieving modeſt indigence, and, by his induſtrious benevolence, often anticipated the requeſts of miſery.

I could relate a number of examples to illuſtrate my

aſſertions, in ſome of which you would perceive the moſt diſintereſted generoſity; but ſuch a detail would treſpaſs too much upon your time, and I do not pretend to dwell upon every minute circumſtance of his conduct. Let it ſuffice to ſay, that, upon the declaration of war with Spain, he gave up all his commercial ſchemes, and called in his money from all quarters, with a view of ſitting down, for the reſt of his life, contented with what he had got, and reſtraining his liberalities to what he could ſpare from his yearly income. This was a very prudential reſolution, could he have kept it; but, upon the breaking out of the war, he could not without concern ſee many gentlemen of merit, who had been recommended to him, diſappointed of commiſſions, merely for want of money to ſatisfy the expectations of the commiſſion brokers of that time; and therefore launched out conſiderable ſums for them on their bare notes, great part whereof was loſt by the death of ſome in the unfortunate expedition to the Weſt Indies.

He at length, after many other actions of the like nature, from motives of pure humanity, love of juſtice, and abhorrence of oppreſſion, embarked in a cauſe, every way the moſt important that ever came under the diſcuſſion of the courts of law in theſe kingdoms; whether it be conſidered in relation to the extraordinary nature of the caſe, or the immenſe property of no leſs than fifty thouſand pounds a-year, and three peerages that depended upon it.

In the year 1740, the brave admiral who at that time commanded his majeſty's fleet in the Weſt Indies, among the other tranſactions of his ſquadron tranſmitted to the Duke of Newcaſtle, mentioned a young man, who, though in the capacity of a common ſailor on board one of the ſhips under his command, laid claim to the eſtate and titles of the Earl of A——. Theſe pretenſions were no ſooner communicated in the public papers, than they became the ſubject of converſation in all companies; and the perſon whom they chiefly affected, being alarmed at the appearance of a competitor, though at ſuch a diſtance, began to put himſelf in motion, and take all the precautions which he thought neceſſary to defeat the endeavour of the young upſtart. Indeed the early intelligence he

received of Mr. A—y's making himſelf known in the Weſt Indies, furniſhed him with numberleſs advantages over that unhappy young gentleman; for, being in poſſeſſion of a plentiful fortune, and lord of many manors in the neighbourhood of the very place where the claimant was born, he knew all the witneſſes who could give the moſt material evidence of his legitimacy; and, if his probity did not reſtrain him, had, by his power and influence, ſufficient opportunity and means of applying to the paſſions and intereſts of the witneſſes, to ſilence many, and gain over others to his ſide; while his competitor, by an abſence of fifteen or ſixteen years from his native country, the want of education and friends, together with his preſent helpleſs ſituation, was rendered abſolutely incapable of taking any ſtep for his own advantage. And although his worthy uncle's conſpicuous virtue, and religious regard for juſtice and truth, might poſſibly be an unconquerable reſtraint to his taking any undue advantages, yet the conſciences of that huge army of emiſſaries he kept in pay were not altogether ſo very tender and ſcrupulous. This much, however, may be ſaid, without derogation from, or impeachment of, the noble earl's nice virtue and honour, that he took care to compromiſe all differences with the other branches of the family, whoſe intereſts were, in this affair, connected with his own, by ſharing the eſtate with them, and alſo retained moſt of the eminent counſel within the bar of both kingdoms againſt this formidable baſtard, before any ſuit was inſtituted by him.

While he was thus entrenching himſelf againſt the attack of a poor forlorn youth, at the diſtance of fifteen hundred leagues, continually expoſed to the dangers of the ſea, the war, and an unhealthy climate, Mr. M——, in the common courſe of converſation, chanced to aſk ſome queſtions relating to this romantic pretender, of one H——, who was at that time the preſent Lord A——a's chief agent. This man, when preſſed, could not help owning that the late Lord A—m actually left a ſon, who had been ſpirited away into America, ſoon after his father's death; but ſaid he did not know whether this was the ſame perſon.

This information could not fail to make an impreſſion

on the humanity of Mr. M——, who, being acquainted with the genius of the wicked party who had poſſeſſed themſelves of this unhappy young man's eſtate and honours, expreſſed no ſmall anxiety and apprehenſion leſt they ſhould take him off by ſome means or other; and, even then, ſeemed diſpoſed to contribute towards the ſupport of the friendleſs orphan, and to inquire more circumſtantially into the nature of his claim. In the mean time his occaſions called him to France; and, during his abſence, Mr. A——y arrived in London, in the month of October 1741.

Here the clergyman was interrupted by Peregrine, who ſaid there was ſomething ſo extraordinary, not to call it improbable, in the account he had heard of the young gentleman's being ſent into exile, that he would look upon himſelf as infinitely obliged to the doctor, if he would favour him with a true repreſentation of that tranſaction, as well as of the manner in which he arrived and was known at the iſland of Jamaica.

The parſon, in compliance with our hero's requeſt, taking up the ſtory from the beginning, "Mr. A——y (ſaid he) is the ſon of Arthur late Lord Baron of A—m, by his wife Mary Sh—d, natural daughter to John Duke of B——— and N———by, whom he publicly married on the 21ſt day of July 1706, contrary to the inclination of his mother, and all his other relations, particularly of Arthur late Earl of A——a, who bore an implacable enmity to the duke her father, and for that reaſon did all that lay in his power to traverſe the marriage: But finding his endeavours ineffectual, he was ſo much offended, that he would never be perfectly reconciled to Lord A—m, though he was his preſumptive heir. After their nuptials, they cohabited together in England for the ſpace of two or three years, during which ſhe miſcarried more than once; and he being a man of levity, and an extravagant diſpoſition, not only ſquandered away all that he had received of his wife's fortune, but alſo contracted many conſiderable debts, which obliged him to make a precipitate retreat into Ireland, leaving his lady behind him in the houſe with his mother and ſiſter, who, having alſo been averſe to the match, had always looked upon her with eyes of diſguſt.

It was not likely that harmony ſhould long ſubſiſt in this family, eſpecially as Lady A—m was a woman of a lofty ſpirit, who could not tamely bear inſults and ill uſage from perſons, who, ſhe had reaſon to believe, were her enemies at heart. Accordingly a miſunderſtanding ſoon happened among them, which was fomented by the malice of one of her ſiſters-in-law: Divers ſcandalous reports of her miſconduct, to which the empty pretenſions of a vain wretched coxcomb (who was made uſe of as an infamous tool for that purpoſe) gave a colourable pretext, were trumped up, and tranſmitted, with many falſe and aggravating circumſtances, to her huſband in Ireland; who, being a giddy unthinking man, was ſo much incenſed at theſe inſinuations, that, in the firſt tranſports of his paſſion, he ſent to his mother a power of attorney, that ſhe might ſue for a divorce in his behalf. A libel was thereupon exhibited, containing many ſcandalous allegations, void of any real foundation in truth; but being unſupported by any manner of proof, it was at length diſmiſſed with coſts, after it had depended upwards of two years.

Lord A—m finding himſelf abuſed by the miſrepreſentations of his mother and ſiſter, diſcovered an inclination to be reconciled to his lady: In conſequence of which, ſhe was ſent over to Dublin by her father, to the care of a gentleman in that city; in whoſe houſe ſhe was received by her huſband, with all the demonſtrations of love and eſteem. From thence he conducted her to his lodgings, and then to his country-houſe, where ſhe had the misfortune to ſuffer a miſcarriage, through fear and reſentment of my lord's behaviour, which was often brutal and indecent. From the country they removed to Dublin, about the latter end of July, or beginning of Auguſt 1714, where they had not long continued, when her ladyſhip was known to be again with child.

Lord A—m and his iſſue being next in remainder to the honours and eſtate of Arthur Earl of A——, was extremely ſolicitous to have a ſon; and, warned by the frequent miſcarriages of his lady, reſolved to curb the natural impatience and ruſticity of his diſpoſition, that ſhe might not, as formerly, ſuffer by his outrageous conduct. He accordingly cheriſhed her with uncommon tenderneſs and

care; and her pregnancy being pretty far advanced, conducted her to his country-ſeat, where ſhe was delivered of Mr. A—y, about the latter end of April, or beginning of May; for none of the witneſſes have been able, at this diſtance, with abſolute certainty, to fix the preciſe time of his birth, and there was no regiſter kept in the pariſh: As an additional misfortune, no gentleman of faſhion lived in that pariſh; nor did thoſe who lived at any conſiderable diſtance, care to cultivate an acquaintance with a man of Lord A—m's ſtrange conduct.

Be that as it will, the occaſion was celebrated by his lordſhip's tenants and dependents upon the ſpot, and in the neighbouring town of New R—ſs, by bonfires, illuminations, and other rejoicings; which have made ſuch an impreſſion upon the minds of the people, that in the place where they happened, and the contiguous pariſhes, ſeveral hundred perſons have already declared their knowledge and remembrance of this event, in ſpite of the great power of the claimant's adverſary in that quarter, and the great pains and indirect methods taken by his numberleſs agents and emiſſaries, as well as by thoſe who are intereſted with him in the event of the ſuit, to corrupt and ſuppreſs the evidence.

Lord A—m, after the birth of his ſon, who was ſent to nurſe in the neighbourhood, according to the cuſtom of the country (where people of the higheſt diſtinction put their children out to nurſe into farm-houſes and cabins), lived in harmony with his lady for the ſpace of two years: But having, by his folly and extravagance, reduced himſelf to great difficulties, he demanded the remainder of her fortune from her father the Duke of B—, who abſolutely refuſed to part with a ſhilling until a proper ſettlement ſhould be made on his daughter, which, by that time, he had put out of his own power to make, by his folly and extravagance.

As her ladyſhip, by her endeavours to reform the economy of her houſe, had incurred the diſpleaſure of ſome idle profligate fellows, who had faſtened themſelves upon her huſband, and helped to conſume his ſubſtance, they ſeized this opportunity of the duke's refuſal; and, in order to be revenged upon the innocent lady, perſuaded Lord A—m, that the only means of extracting money

from his grace, would be to turn her away, on pretence of infidelity to his bed, for which they hinted there was but too much foundation. At their ſuggeſtions, a moſt infamous plan was projected; in the execution of which, one P—, a poor, unbred, ſimple country booby, whom they had decoyed into a ſnare, loſt one of his ears, and the injured lady retired that ſame day to New R—ſs, where ſhe continued ſeveral years. She did not, however, leave the houſe, without ſtruggling hard to carry her child along with her; but far from enjoying ſuch indulgence, ſtrict orders were given, that the boy ſhould not, for the future, be brought within her ſight. This baſe, inhuman treatment, inſtead of anſwering the end propoſed, produced ſuch a contrary effect, that the Duke of B——, by a codicil to his will, in which he reflects upon Lord A—m's evil temper, directed his executors to pay to his daughter an annuity of one hundred pounds, while her lord and ſhe ſhould continue to live ſeparate; and this allowance was to ceaſe on Lord A—m's death.

While ſhe remained in this ſolitary ſituation, the child was univerſally known and received as the legitimate ſon and heir of her lord, whoſe affection for the boy was ſo conſpicuous, that, in the midſt of his own neceſſities, he never failed to maintain him in the dreſs and equipage of a young nobleman. In the courſe of his infancy, his father having often changed his place of reſidence, the child was put under the inſtructions of a great many different ſchoolmaſters, ſo that he was perfectly well known in a great many different parts of the kingdom; and his mother ſeized all opportunities (which were but rare, on account of his father's orders to the contrary) of ſeeing and giving him proofs of her maternal tenderneſs, until ſhe ſet out for England, after having been long in a declining ſtate of health, by a paralytical diſorder; upon the conſequence of which, ſuch dependence was placed by her inconſiderate huſband, who was by this time reduced to extreme poverty, that he actually married a woman whom he had long kept as a miſtreſs. This creature no ſooner underſtood that Lady A—m was departed from Ireland, than ſhe openly avowed her marriage, and went about publicly with Lord A—m, viſiting his acquaintances in the character of his wife.

From this era may be dated the beginning of Mr. A—y's misfortune: This artful woman, who had formerly treated the child with an appearance of fondneſs, in order to ingratiate herſelf with the father, now looking upon herſelf as ſufficiently eſtabliſhed in the family, thought it was high time to alter her behaviour with regard to the unfortunate boy; and accordingly, for obvious reaſons, employed a thouſand artifices to alienate the heart of the weak father from his unhappy offspring: Yet, notwithſtanding all her inſinuations, nature ſtill maintained her influence in his heart; and though ſhe often found means to irritate him by artful and malicious accuſations, his reſentment never extended farther than fatherly correction. She would have found it impoſſible to accompliſh his ruin, had not her efforts been reinforced by a new auxiliary, who was no other than his uncle, the preſent uſurper of his title and eſtate; yet even this confederacy was overawed, in ſome meaſure, by the fear of alarming the unfortunate mother, until her diſtemper increaſed to a moſt deplorable degree of the dead palſy, and the death of her father had reduced her to a moſt forlorn and abject ſtate of diſtreſs. Then they ventured upon the execution of their projects; and (though their aims were widely different) concurred in their endeavours to remove the hapleſs boy, as the common obſtacle to both.

Lord A—m who (as I have already obſerved) was a man of weak intellects, and utterly void of any fixed principle of action, being by this time reduced to ſuch a pitch of miſery, that he was often obliged to pawn his wearing-apparel in order to procure the common neceſſaries of life; and having no other fund remaining, with which he could relieve his preſent neceſſities, except a ſale of the reverſion of the A——a eſtate, to which the nonage of his ſon was an effectual bar, he was adviſed by his virtuous brother, and the reſt of his counſellors, to ſurmount this difficulty, by ſecreting his ſon, and ſpreading a report of his death. This honeſt project he the more readily embraced, becauſe he knew that no act of his could fruſtrate the child's ſucceſſion. Accordingly, the boy was removed from the ſchool at which he was then boarded, to the houſe of one K—gh, an agent and as-

complice of the preſent Earl of A—a, where he was kept for ſeveral months cloſely confined; and in the mean time, it was induſtriouſly reported that he was dead.

This previous meaſure being taken, Lord A—m publiſhed advertiſements in the gazettes, offering reverſions of the A——a eſtate to ſale; and emiſſaries of various kinds were employed to inveigle ſuch as were ignorant of the nature of the ſettlement of theſe eſtates, or ſtrangers to the affairs of his family. Some people, impoſed upon by the report of the child's death, were drawn in to purchaſe, thinking themſelves ſafe in the concurrence of his lordſhip's brother, upon preſumption that he was next in remainder to the ſucceſſion; others, tempted by the ſmallneſs of the price (which rarely exceeded half a year's purchaſe, as appears by many deeds), though they doubted the truth of the boy's being dead, ran ſmall riſks on the contingency of his dying before he ſhould be of age, or in hopes of his being prevailed upon to confirm the grants of his father; and many more were treating with him on the ſame notions, when their tranſactions were ſuddenly interrupted, and the ſcheme of raiſing more money, for the preſent, defeated by the unexpected appearance of the boy, who being naturally ſprightly and impatient of reſtraint, had found means to break from his confinement, and wandered up and down the ſtreets of Dublin, avoiding his father's houſe, and chooſing to encounter all ſorts of diſtreſs, rather than ſubject himſelf again to the cruelty and malice of the woman who ſupplied his mother's place. Thus debarred his father's protection, and deſtitute of any fixed habitation, he herded with all the looſe, idle, and diſorderly youths in Dublin, ſkulking chiefly about the college, ſeveral members and ſtudents of which, taking pity on his misfortunes, ſupplied him at different times with clothes and money. In this unſettled and uncomfortable way of life did he remain, from the year 1725, to the letter end of November 1727; at which time his father died ſo miſerably poor, that he was actually buried at the public expence.

This unfortunate nobleman was no ſooner dead, than his brother Richard, now Earl of A—a, taking advantage of the nonage and helpleſs ſituation of his nephew, ſeized upon all the papers of the defunct, and afterwards

uſurped the title of Lord A—m, to the ſurpriſe of the ſervants, and others who were acquainted with the affairs of the family. This uſurpation, bold as it was, produced no other effect than that of his being inſulted by the populace as he went through the ſtreets, and the refuſal of the king at arms to enrol the certificate of his brother's having died without iſſue. The firſt of theſe inconveniencies he bore without any ſenſe of ſhame, though not without repining, conſcious that it would gradually vaniſh with the novelty of his invaſion; and as to the laſt, he conquered it by means well known and obvious.

Nor will it ſeem ſtrange, that he ſhould thus invade the rights of an orphan with impunity, if people will conſider, that the late Lord A—m had not only ſquandered away his fortune with the moſt ridiculous extravagance, but alſo aſſociated himſelf with low company, ſo that he was little known, and leſs regarded, by perſons of any rank and figure in life; and his child, of conſequence, debarred of the advantages which might have accrued from valuable connections. And though it was univerſally known, that Lady A—m had a ſon in Ireland, ſuch was the obſcurity in which the father had lived, during the laſt years of his life, that few of the nobility could be ſuppoſed to be acquainted with the particular circumſtances of a tranſaction in which they had no concern, and which had happened at the diſtance of twelve years before the date of this uſurpation. Moreover, as their firſt information was no other than common fame, the public clamour occaſioned by the ſeparation, might inſpire ſuch as were ſtrangers to the family affairs, with a miſtaken notion of the child's having been born about or after the time of that event. The hurry and buſtle occaſioned by the arrival of the lord lieutenant about this period, the reports induſtriouſly propagated of the claimant's death, the obſcurity and concealment in which the boy was obliged to live, in order to elude the wicked attempts of his uncle, might alſo contribute to his peaceable enjoyment of an empty title: And laſtly, Lord Chancellor W—m, whoſe immediate province it was to iſſue writs for parliament, was an utter ſtranger in Ireland, unacquainted with the deſcents of families, and conſequently did not examine farther than the certificate enrolled in

the books of the king at arms. Over and above theſe circumſtances, which naturally account for the ſucceſs of the impoſture, it may be obſerved, that the hapleſs youth had not one relation alive, on the ſide of his father, whoſe intereſt it was not to forward or connive at his deſtruction; that his grandfather the Duke of B—— was dead; and that his mother was then in England, in a forlorn, deſtitute, dying condition, ſecreted from the world, and even from her own relations, by her woman Mary H——, who had a particular intereſt to ſecrete her, and altogether dependent upon a miſerable and precarious allowance from the Ducheſs of B——, to whoſe caprice ſhe was moreover a moſt wretched ſlave.

Notwithſtanding theſe concurring circumſtances in favour of the uſurper, he did not think himſelf ſecure while the orphan had any chance of finding a friend who would undertake his cauſe; and therefore laid a plan for his being kidnapped, and ſent to America as a ſlave. His coadjutor in this inhuman ſcheme was a perſon who carried on the trade of tranſporting ſervants to our plantations, and, was deeply intereſted on this occaſion, having, for a mere trifle, purchaſed of the late Lord A---m, the reverſion of a conſiderable part of the A——a eſtate; which ſhameful bargain was confirmed by the brother, but could never take place, unleſs the boy could be effectually removed.

Every thing being ſettled with this auxiliary, ſeveral ruffians were employed in ſearch of the unhappy victim; and the firſt attempt that was made upon him, in which his uncle perſonally aſſiſted, happening near one of the great markets of the city of Dublin, an honeſt butcher, with the aſſiſtance of his neighbours, reſcued him by force from their cruel hands. This, however, was but a ſhort reſpite; for (though warned by this adventure, the boy ſeldom crept out of his lurking places, without the moſt cautious circumſpection) he was, in March 1727, diſcovered by the diligence of his perſecutors, and forcibly dragged on board of a ſhip bound for Newcaſtle on Delaware river in America, where he was ſold as a ſlave, and kept to hard labour, much above his age or ſtrength, for the ſpace of thirteen years, during which he was transferred from one perſon to another.

While he remained in this ſervile ſituation, he often mentioned, to thoſe in whom he thought ſuch confidence might be placed, the circumſtances of his birth and title, together with the manner of his being exiled from his native country; although, in this particular, he neglected a caution which he had received in his paſſage, importing that ſuch a diſcovery would coſt him his life. Meanwhile the uſurper quietly enjoyed his right; and to thoſe who queſtioned him about his brother's ſon, conſtantly replied, That the boy had been dead for ſeveral years: And Arthur, Earl of A——a, dying in April 1737, he, upon pretence of being next heir, ſucceeded to the honours and eſtate of that nobleman.

The term of the nephew's bondage, which had been lengthened out beyond the uſual time, on account of his repeated attempts to eſcape, being expired in the year 1739, he hired himſelf as a common ſailor in a trading veſſel bound to Jamaica; and there, being entered on board of one of his majeſty's ſhips under the command of Admiral Vernon, openly declared his parentage and pretenſions. This extraordinary claim, which made a great noiſe in the fleet, reaching the ears of one Lieutenant S—n, nearly related to the uſurper's Iriſh wife, he believed the young gentleman to be an impoſtor; and thinking it was incumbent on him to diſcover the cheat, he went on board the ſhip to which the claimant belonged, and having heard the account which he gave of himſelf, was, notwithſtanding his prepoſſeſſions, convinced of the truth of what he alleged. On his return to his own ſhip, he chanced to mention this extraordinary affair upon the quarter-deck, in the hearing of Mr. B—n, one of the midſhipmen, who had formerly been at ſchool with Mr. A—y. This young gentleman not only told the lieutenant, that he had been ſchool-fellow with Lord A—m's ſon, but alſo declared that he ſhould know him again, if not greatly altered, as he ſtill retained a perfect idea of his countenance.

Upon this intimation, the lieutenant propoſed that the experiment ſhould be tried; and went with the midſhipman on board the ſhip that the claimant was in, for that purpoſe. After all the ſailors had been aſſembled upon deck, Mr. B—n, caſting his eyes around, immediately

diſtinguiſhed Mr. A—y in the crowd, and, laying his hand on his ſhoulder, "This is the man," ſaid he; affirming, at the ſame time, that, while he continued at ſchool with him, the claimant was reputed and reſpected as Lord A—m's ſon and heir, and maintained in all reſpects ſuitable to the dignity of his rank. Nay, he was, in like manner, recognized by ſeveral other perſons in the fleet, who had known him in his infancy.

Theſe things being reported to the admiral, he generouſly ordered him to be ſupplied with neceſſaries, and treated like a gentleman; and, in his next diſpatches, tranſmitted an account of the affair to the Duke of Newcaſtle, among the other tranſactions of the fleet.

In September or October 1741, Mr. A—y arrived in London; and the firſt perſon to whom he applied for advice and aſſiſtance was a man of the law, nearly related to the families of A—a and A—m, and well acquainted with the particular affairs of each; who, far from treating him as a baſtard and impoſtor, received him with civility and ſeeming kindneſs, aſked him to eat, preſented him with a piece of money, and, excuſing himſelf from meddling in the affair, adviſed him to go to Ireland, as the moſt proper place for commencing a ſuit for the recovery of his right.

Before the young gentleman had an opportunity, or indeed any inclination, to comply with this advice, he was accidentally met in the ſtreet by that ſame H—n, who, as I have mentioned, gave Mr. M— the firſt inſight into the affair: This man immediately knew the claimant, having been formerly an agent for his father, and afterwards a creature of his uncle's, with whom he was, not without reaſon, ſuſpected to be concerned in kidnapping and tranſporting his nephew. Be that as it will, his connections with the uſurper were now broke off by a quarrel, in conſequence of which he had thrown up his agency; and he invited the hapleſs ſtranger to his houſe, with a view of making all poſſible advantage of ſuch a gueſt.

There he had not long remained, when his treacherous landlord, tampering with his inexperience, effected a marriage between him and the daughter of one of his own friends, who lodged in his houſe at the ſame time: But

afterwards, ſeeing no perſon of conſequence willing to eſpouſe his cauſe, he looked upon him as an encumbrance, and wanted to rid his hands of him accordingly. He remembered that Mr. M— had expreſſed himſelf with all the humanity of apprehenſion in favour of the unfortunate young nobleman, before his arrival in England; and, being well acquainted with the generoſity of his diſpoſition, he no ſooner underſtood that he was returned from France, than he waited upon him with an account of Mr. A—y's being ſafely arrived. Mr. M— was ſincerely rejoiced to find, that a perſon who had been ſo cruelly injured, and undergone ſo long and continued a ſcene of diſtreſs, was reſtored to a country where he was ſure of obtaining juſtice, and where every good man (as he imagined) would make the cauſe his own: And being informed that the youth was in want of neceſſaries, he gave twenty guineas to H—n for his uſe, and promiſed to do him all the ſervice in his power; but had no intention to take upon himſelf the whole weight of ſuch an important affair, or indeed to appear in the cauſe, until he ſhould be fully and thoroughly ſatisfied that the claimant's pretenſions were well founded.

In the mean time, H—n inſinuating that the young gentleman was not ſafe in his preſent lodging, from the machinations of his enemies, M— accommodated him with an apartment in his own houſe; where he was at great pains to remedy the defect in his education, by rendering him fit to appear as a gentleman in the world. Having received from him all the intelligence he could give relating to his own affair, he laid the caſe before counſel, and diſpatched a perſon to Ireland, to make further inquiries upon the ſame ſubject; who, on his firſt arrival in that kingdom, found the claimant's birth was as publicly known as any circumſtance of that kind could poſſibly be, at ſo great a diſtance of time.

The uſurper and his friends gave all the interruption in their power to any reſearches concerning that affair; and had recourſe to every art and expedient that could be invented, to prevent its being brought to a legal diſcuſſion: Privilege, bills in chancery, orders of court ſurreptitiouſly and illegally obtained, and every other invention was made uſe of to bar and prevent a fair and honeſt

trial by a jury. The uſurper himſelf, and his agents, at the ſame time that they formed divers conſpiracies againſt his life, in vain endeavoured to detach Mr. M— from the orphan's cauſe, by innumerable artifices, inſinuating, cajolling, and miſrepreſenting, with ſurpriſing dexterity and perſeverance.

His protector, far from being ſatisfied with their reaſons, was not only deaf to their remonſtrances, but, believing him in danger from their repeated efforts, had him privately conveyed into the country; where an unhappy accident (which he hath ever ſince ſincerely regretted) furniſhed his adverſary with a colourable pretext to cut him off in the beginning of his career.

A man happening to loſe his life by the accidental diſcharge of a piece that chanced to be in the young gentleman's hands, the account of this misfortune no ſooner reached the ears of his uncle, than he expreſſed the moſt immoderate joy at having found ſo good a handle for deſtroying him, under colour of law. He immediately conſtituted himſelf proſecutor, ſet his emiſſaries at work to ſecure a coroner's inqueſt ſuited to his cruel purpoſes; ſet out for the place in perſon, to take care that the priſoner ſhould not eſcape; inſulted him in jail, in the moſt inhuman manner; employed a whole army of attorneys and agents, to ſpirit up and carry on a moſt virulent proſecution; practiſed all the unfair methods that could be invented, in order that the unhappy gentleman ſhould be tranſported to Newgate, from the healthy priſon to which he was at firſt committed; endeavoured to inveigle him into deſtructive confeſſions; and, not to mention other more infamous arts employed in the affair of evidence, attempted to ſurpriſe him upon his trial in the abſence of his witneſſes and counſel, contrary to a previous agreement with the proſecutor's own attorney: Nay, he even appeared in perſon upon the bench at the trial, in order to intimidate the evidence, and brow-beat the unfortunate priſoner at the bar, and expended above a thouſand pounds in that proſecution. In ſpite of all his wicked efforts, however, which were defeated by the ſpirit and indefatigable induſtry of Mr. M—, the young gentleman was honourably acquitted, to the evident ſatisfaction of all the impartial; the misfortune that gave a handle for that un-

natural proſecution appearing to a demonſtration to have been a mere accident.

In a few months, his protector, who had now openly eſpouſed his cauſe (taking with him two gentlemen to witneſs his tranſactions), conducted him to his native country, with a view to be better informed of the ſtrength of his pretenſions, than he could be by the intelligences he had hitherto received, or by the claimant's own dark and almoſt obliterated remembrance of the facts which were eſſential to be known. Upon their arrival in Dublin, application was made to thoſe perſons whom Mr. A—y had named as his ſchoolmaſters and companions, together with the ſervants and neighbours of his father. Theſe, though examined ſeparately, without having the leaſt previous intimation of what the claimant had reported, agreed in their accounts with him, as well as with one another, and mentioned many other people as acquainted with the ſame facts, to whom Mr. M— had recourſe, and ſtill met with the ſame unvaried information. By theſe means, he made ſuch progreſs in his inquiries, that, in leſs than two months, no fewer than one hundred perſons, from different quarters of the kingdom, either perſonally, or by letters, communicated their knowledge of the claimant, in declarations conſonant with one another, as well as with the accounts he gave of himſelf. Several ſervants who had lived with his father, and been deceived with the ſtory of his death, ſo induſtriouſly propagated by his uncle, no ſooner heard of his being in Dublin, than they came from different parts of the country to ſee him; and though great pains were taken to deceive them, they, nevertheleſs, knew him at firſt ſight; ſome of them fell upon their knees to thank Heaven for his preſervation, embraced his legs, and ſhed tears of joy for his return.

Although the conduct of his adverſary, particularly in the above mentioned proſecution, together with the evidence that already appeared, were ſufficient to convince all mankind of the truth of the claimant's pretenſions, Mr. M—, in order to be further ſatisfied, reſolved to ſee how he would be received upon the ſpot where he was born; juſtly concluding, that, if he was really an impoſtor, the baſtard of a kitchen-wench, produced in a coun-

ſy entirely poſſeſſed by his enemy and his allies, he muſt ɔe looked upon in that place with the utmoſt deteſtation ınd contempt.

This his intention was no ſooner known to the adverſe ɔarty, than their agents and friends, from all quarters, :epaired to that place, with all poſſible diſpatch, and uſed ıll their influence with the people, in remonſtrances, :hreats, and all the other arts they could deviſe, not only ɔo diſcountenance the claimant upon his arrival, but even ɔo ſpirit up a mob to inſult him. Notwithſtanding theſe precautions, and the ſervile awe and ſubjection in which tenants are kept by their landlords in that part of the country, as ſoon as it was known that Mr. A—y approached the town, the inhabitants crowded out in great multitudes to receive and welcome him, and accompanied him into town, with acclamations and other expreſſions of joy, inſomuch that the agents of his adverſary durſt not ſhow their faces. The ſovereign of the corporation, who was a particular creature and favourite of the uſurper, and whoſe all depended upon the iſſue of the cauſe, was ſo conſcious of the ſtranger's right, and ſo much awed by the behaviour of the people, who knew that conſciouſneſs, that he did not think it ſafe even to preſerve the appearance of neutrality upon this occaſion, but actually held the ſtirrup while Mr. A—y diſmounted from his horſe.

This ſenſe of conviction in the people manifeſted itſelf ſtill more powerfully when he returned to the ſame place in the year 1744, about which time Lord A——a being informed of his reſolution, determined again to be beforehand with him, and ſet out in perſon with his agents and friends, ſome of whom were detached before him, to prepare for his reception, and induced the people to meet him in a body, and accompany him to town, with ſuch expreſſions of welcome as they had before beſtowed on his nephew; but, in ſpite of all their art and intereſt, he was ſuffered to paſs through the ſtreet in a mournful ſilence; and though ſeveral barrels of beer were produced, to court the favour of the populace, they had no other effect than that of drawing their ridicule upon the donor; whereas, when Mr. A——y, two days afterwards, appeared, all the inhabitants, with garlands, ſtreamers,

muſic, and other enſigns of joy, crowded out to meet him, and uſhered him into town with ſuch demonſtrations of pleaſure and good will, that the noble peer found it convenient to hide himſelf from the reſentment of his own tenants, the effects of which he muſt have ſeverely felt, had not he been ſcreened by the timely remonſtrances of Mr. M——, and the other gentlemen who accompanied his competitor.

Nor did his apprehenſion vaniſh with the tranſaction of this day; the town was again in uproar on the Sunday following, when it was known that Mr. A——y intended to come thither from Dunmain to church; they went out to meet him as before, and conducted him to the church-door with acclamations, which terrified his uncle to ſuch a degree, that he fled with precipitation in a boat, and ſoon after entirely quitted the place.

It would be almoſt an endleſs taſk to enumerate the particular ſteps that were taken by one ſide to promote, and by the other to delay the trial. The young gentleman's adverſaries finding that they could not, by all the ſubterfuges and arts they had uſed, evade it, repeated attempts were made to aſſaſſinate him and his protector, and every obſtruction thrown in the way of his cauſe which craft could invent, villany execute, and undue influence confirm. But all theſe difficulties were ſurmounted by the vigilance, conſtancy, courage, and ſagacity of M——; and, at laſt, the affair was brought to a very ſolemn trial at bar, which being continued, by ſeveral adjournments, from the eleventh to the twenty-fifth day of November, a verdict was found for the claimant, by a jury of gentlemen, which, in point of reputation and property, cannot be eaſily paralleled in the annals of that or any other country; a jury that could by no means be ſuſpected of prepoſſeſſions in favour of Mr. A——y (to whoſe perſon they were abſolute ſtrangers), eſpecially if we conſider that a gentleman in their neighbourhood, who was nephew to the foreman, and nearly related to ſome of the reſt of their number, forfeited a conſiderable eſtate by their deciſion.

This verdict (ſaid the parſon) gave the higheſt ſatisfaction to all impartial perſons that were within reach of being duly informed of their proceedings, and of the dif-

ferent genius and conduct of the parties engaged in the conteſt, but more eſpecially to ſuch as were in court (as I was) at the trial, and had an opportunity of obſerving the characters and behaviour of the perſons who appeared there to give evidence. To ſuch it was very apparent, that all the witneſſes produced there, on the part of the uncle, were either his tenants, dependents, pot-companions, or perſons ſome way or other intereſted in the iſſue of the ſuit, and remarkable for a low kind of cunning; that many of them were perſons of profligate lives, who deſerved no credit; that (independent of the levity of their characters) thoſe of them who went under the denomination of colonels (Colonel L—fts alone excepted, who had nothing to ſay, and was only brought there in order to give credit to that party), made ſo ridiculous a figure, and gave ſo abſurd, contradictory, and inconſiſtent an evidence, as no court or jury could give the leaſt degree of credit to. On the other hand, it was obſerved, that the nephew and Mr. M—— his chief manager (being abſolute ſtrangers in that country, and unacquainted with the characters of the perſons they had to deal with), were obliged to lay before the court and jury ſuch evidence as came to their hand, ſome of whom plainly appeared to have been put upon them by their adverſaries with a deſign to hurt. It was alſo manifeſt, that the witneſſes produced for Mr. A——y were ſuch as could have no manner of connection with him, nor any dependence whatſoever upon him, to influence their evidence; for the far greateſt part of them had never ſeen him from his infancy till the trial began, and many of them (though poor and undignified with the title of colonels) were people of unblemiſhed character, of great ſimplicity, and ſuch as no man in his ſenſes would pitch upon to ſupport a bad cauſe. It is plain that the jury (whoſe well-known honour, impartiality, and penetration muſt be revered by all who are acquainted with them) were not under the leaſt difficulty about their verdict; for they were not encloſed above half an hour, when they returned with it. Theſe gentlemen could not help obſerving the great inequality of the parties engaged, the great advantages that the uncle had in every other reſpect (except the truth and juſtice of his caſe) over the nephew, by means of

his vaſt poſſeſſions, and of his power and influence all round the place of his birth; nor could the contraſt between the different geniuſes of the two parties eſcape their obſervation. They could not but ſee and conclude, that a perſon who had confeſſedly tranſported and ſold his orphan nephew into ſlavery, who, on his return, had carried on ſo unwarrantable and cruel a proſecution to take away his life under colour of law, and who had alſo given ſuch glaring proofs of his ſkill and dexterity in the management of witneſſes for that cruel purpoſe, was in like manner capable of exerting the ſame happy talent on this occaſion, when his all was at ſtake; more eſpecially, as he had ſo many others who were equally intereſted with himſelf, and whoſe abilities in that reſpect fell nothing ſhort of his own, to ſecond him in it. The gentlemen of the jury had alſo a near view of the manner in which the witneſſes delivered their teſtimonies, and had from thence an opportunity of obſerving many circumſtances and diſtinguiſhing characteriſtics of truth and falſehood, from which a great deal could be gathered, that could not be adequately conveyed by any printed account, how exact ſoever; conſequently, they muſt have been much better judges of the evidence on which they founded their verdict, than any perſon, who had not the ſame opportunity, can poſſibly be.

Theſe, Mr. Pickle, were my reflections on what I had occaſion to obſerve concerning that famous trial; and on my return to England, two years after, I could not help pitying the ſelf-ſufficiency of ſome people, who, at this diſtance, pretended to paſs their judgment on that verdict with as great poſitiveneſs as if they had been in the ſecrets of the cauſe, or upon the jury who tried it, and and that from no better authority than the declamations of Lord A——a's emiſſaries, and ſome falſified printed accounts, artfully cooked up on purpoſe to miſlead and deceive.

But to return from this digreſſion—Lord A——a, the defendant in that cauſe, was ſo conſcious of the ſtrength and merit's of his injured nephew's caſe, and that a verdict would go againſt him, that he ordered a writ of error to be made out before the trial was ended; and the verdict was no ſooner given, than he immediately lodged it, though he well knew he had no manner of error to

aſſign. This expedient was practiſed merely for vexation and delay, in order to keep Mr. A——y from the poſſeſſion of the ſmall eſtate he had recovered by the verdict, that, his ſlender funds being exhauſted, he might be deprived of other means to proſecute his right; and by the moſt oppreſſive contrivances and ſcandalous chicanery, it has been kept up to this day, without his being able to aſſign the leaſt ſhadow of any error.

Lord A——a was not the only antagoniſt that Mr. A——y had to deal with; all the different branches of the A——a family, who had been worrying one another at law ever ſince the death of the late Earl of A——a, about the partition of his great eſtate, were now firmly united in an aſſociation againſt this unfortunate gentleman; mutual deeds were executed among them, by which many great lordſhips and eſtates were given up by the uncle to perſons who had no right to poſſeſs them, in order to engage them to ſide with him againſt his nephew, in withholding the unjuſt poſſeſſion of the remainder.

Theſe confederates having held ſeveral conſultations againſt their common enemy, and finding that his cauſe gathered daily ſtrength ſince the trial, by the acceſſion of many witneſſes of figure and reputation, who had not been heard of before, and that the only chance they had to prevent the ſpeedy eſtabliſhment of his right, and their own deſtruction, was by ſtripping Mr. M—— of the little money that yet remained, and by ſtopping all further reſources whereby he might be enabled to proceed; they, therefore, came to a determined reſolution to carry that hopeful ſcheme into execution; and, in purſuance thereof, they have left no expedient or ſtratagem, how extraordinary or ſcandalous ſoever, unpractiſed, to diſtreſs Mr. A——y and that gentleman. For that end, all the oppreſſive arts and dilatory expenſive contrivances that the fertile invention of the loweſt pettifoggers of the law could poſſibly deviſe, have with dexterity been played off againſt them, in fruitleſs quibbling, and malicious ſuits, entirely foreign to the merits of the cauſe. Not to mention numberleſs other acts of oppreſſion, the moſt extraordinary and unprecedented proceedings, by means whereof this ſham writ of error hath been kept on foot ever ſince November 1743, is to me (ſaid the doctor) a moſt flagrant inſtance

not only of the prevalency of power and money (when employed, in the preſent caſe, againſt an unfortunate helpleſs man, diſabled, as he is, of the means of aſcertaining his right), but of the badneſs of a cauſe, that hath recourſe to ſo many iniquitous expedients to ſupport it.

In a word, the whole conduct of Lord A——a and his party, from the beginning to this time, hath been ſuch as ſufficiently manifeſts, that it could proceed from no other motives than a conſciouſneſs of Mr. A——y's right, and of their own illegal uſurpations, and from a terror of truſting the merits of their caſe to a fair diſcuſſion by the laws of their country; and that the intention and main drift of all their proceedings plainly tends to ſtifle and ſmother the merits of the caſe from the knowledge of the world, by oppreſſive arts and ingenious delays, rather than truſt it to the candid determination of an honeſt jury. What elſe could be the motives of kidnapping the claimant, and tranſporting him when an infant? of the various attempts made upon his life ſince his return? of the attempts to diveſt him of all aſſiſtance to aſcertain his right, by endeavouring ſo ſolicitouſly to prevail on Mr. M—— to abandon him in the beginning? of retaining an army of counſel before any ſuit had been commenced? of the many ſiniſter attempts to prevent the trial at bar? of the various arts made uſe of to terrify any one from appearing as witneſs for the claimant, and to ſeduce thoſe who had appeared? of the ſhameleſs, unprecedented, low tricks now practiſed, to keep him out of the poſſeſſion of that eſtate for which he had obtained the verdict, thereby to diſable him from bringing his cauſe to a further hearing; and of the attempts made to buy up Mr. M——'s debts, and to ſpirit up ſuits againſt him? Is it not obvious from all theſe circumſtances, as well as from the obſtruction they have given to the attorney-general's proceeding to make a report to his Majeſty on the claimant's petition to the king for the peerage, which was referred by his Majeſty to that gentleman, ſo far back as 1743, that all their efforts are bent to that one point, of ſtifling, rather than ſuffering the merits of this cauſe to come to a fair and candid hearing; and that the ſole conſideration at preſent between them

nd this unfortunate man is not whether he is right or wrong, but whether he ſhall or ſhall not find money to bring this cauſe to a final determination.

Lord A——a and his confederates, not thinking themſelves ſafe with all theſe expedients, while there was a poſſibility of their antagoniſt's obtaining any aſſiſtance from ſuch as humanity, compaſſion, generoſity, or a love of juſtice might induce to lay open their purſes to his aſſiſtance in aſcertaining his right, have, by themſelves and their numerous emiſſaries, employed all the arts of calumny, ſlander, and detraction againſt him, by traducing his cauſe, vilifying his perſon, and moſt baſely and cruelly tearing his character to pieces, by a thouſand miſrepreſentations, purpoſely invented and induſtriouſly propagated in all places of reſort, which is a kind of cowardly aſſaſſination that there is no guarding againſt; yet, in ſpite of all theſe machinations, and the ſhameful indifference of mankind, who ſtand aloof unconcerned, and ſee this unhappy gentleman moſt inhumanly oppreſſed by the weight of lawleſs power and faction, M——, far from ſuffering himſelf to be dejected by the multiplying difficulties that crowd upon him, ſtill exerts himſelf with amazing fortitude and aſſiduity, and will (I doubt not) bring the affair he began and carried on with ſo much ſpirit, while his finances laſted, to a happy concluſion.

It would exceed the bounds of my intention, and, perhaps, treſpaſs too much upon your time, were I to enumerate the low artifices and ſhameful quibbles by which the uſurper has found means to procraſtinate the deciſion of the conteſt between him and his hapleſs nephew, or to give a detail of the damage and perplexity which Mr. M——— has ſuſtained, and been involved in by the treachery and ingratitude of ſome who liſted themſelves under him, in the proſecution of this affair, and by the villany of others, who, under various pretences of material diſcoveries they had to make, &c. had faſtened themſelves upon him, and continued to do all the miſchief in their power, until the cloven foot was detected.

One inſtance, however, is ſo flagrantly flagitious, that I cannot reſiſt the inclination I feel to relate it, as an example of the moſt infernal perfidy that perhaps ever entered the human heart. I have already mentioned the

part which H——n acted in the beginning of M——'s connection with the unfortunate ſtranger, and hinted that the ſaid H——n lay under many obligations to that gentleman before Mr. A——y's arrival in England. He had been chief agent to Lord A——a, and, as it afterwards appeared, received ſeveral payments of a ſecret penſion which that Lord enjoyed, for which he either could not, or would not account. His lordſhip, therefore, in order to compel him to it, took out writs againſt him, and his houſe was continually ſurrounded with catchpoles for the ſpace of two whole years.

Mr. M—— believing, from H——n's own account of the matter, that the poor man was greatly injured, and proſecuted on account of his attachment to the unhappy young gentleman, did him all the good offices in his power, and became ſecurity for him on ſeveral occaſions; nay, ſuch was his opinion of his integrity, that, after Mr. A——y was cleared of the proſecution carried on againſt him by his uncle, his perſon was truſted to the care of this hypocrite, who deſired that the young gentleman might lodge at his houſe for the convenience of air, M—'s own occaſions calling him often into the country.

Having thus, by his conſummate diſſimulation, acquired ſuch a valuable charge, he wrote a letter to one of Lord A——a's attorneys, offering to betray Mr. A——y, provided his lordſhip would ſettle his account, and give him a diſcharge for eight hundred pounds of the penſion, which he had received, and not accounted for. Mr. M—, informed of this treacherous propoſal, immediately removed his lodger from his houſe into his own, without aſſigning his reaſons for ſo doing, until he was obliged to declare it, in order to free himſelf from the importunities of H——n, who earneſtly ſolicited his return. This miſcreant, finding himſelf detected and diſappointed in his villanous deſign, was ſo much enraged at his miſcarriage, that, forgetting all the benefits he had received from M— for a ſeries of years, he practiſed all the miſchief that his malice could contrive againſt him; and at length entered into a confederacy with one G—ſt—ey, and ſeveral other abandoned wretches, who, as before ſaid, under various pretences of being able to make material diſcoveries, and otherwiſe to ſerve the cauſe, had found means to be em-

ployed in ſome extra buſineſs relating to it, though their real intention was to betray the claimant.

Theſe confederates, in conjunction with ſome other auxiliaries of infamous character, being informed that Mr. M—— was on the point of ſecuring a conſiderable ſum, to enable him to proſecute Mr. A——y's right, and to bring it to a happy concluſion, contrived a deep laid ſcheme to diſappoint him in it, and at once to ruin the cauſe. And, previous meaſures being taken for that wicked purpoſe, they impoſed upon the young gentleman's inexperience and credulity, by inſinuations equally falſe, plauſible, and malicious; to which they at length gained his belief, by the mention of ſome circumſtances that gave what they alleged an air of probability, and even of truth. They ſwore that Mr. M—— had taken out an action againſt him for a very large ſum of money; that they had actually ſeen the writ; that the intention of it was to throw him into priſon for life, and ruin his cauſe, in conſequence of an agreement made by him with Lord A—a, and his other enemies, to retrieve the money that he had laid out in the cauſe.

This plauſible tale was enforced with ſuch an air of truth, candour, and earneſt concern for his ſafety, and was ſtrengthened by ſo many imprecations, and corroborating circumſtances of their invention, as would have ſtaggered one of much greater experience and knowledge of mankind than Mr. A——y could be ſuppoſed at that time. The notion of perpetual impriſonment, and the certain ruin they made him believe his cauſe was threatened with, worked upon his imagination to ſuch a degree, that he ſuffered himſelf to be led like a lamb to the ſlaughter, by this artful band of villains, who ſecreted him at the lodgings of one Pr—nt—ce, an intimate of G—ſt—ey's, for ſeveral days, under colour of his being hunted by bailiffs employed by Mr. M——, where he was not only obliged by them to change his name, but even his wife was not ſuffered to have acceſs to him.

Their deſign was to have ſold him, or drawn him into a ruinous compromiſe with his adverſaries, for a valuable conſideration to themſelves. But as no ties are binding among ſuch a knot of villains, the reſt of the conſpirators were jockied by G—ſt—ey; who, in order to monopolize

the advantage to himſelf, hurried his prize into the country, and ſecreted him even from his confederates, in a place of concealment one hundred miles from London, under the ſame ridiculous pretence of M——'s having taken out a writ againſt him, and of bailiffs being in purſuit of him every where round London.

He was no ſooner there, than G—ſt—ey, as a previous ſtep to the other villany he intended, tricked him out of a bond for ſix thouſand pounds, under colour of his having a perſon ready to advance the like ſum upon it, as an immediate fund for carrying on his cauſe; aſſuring him, at the ſame time, that he had a ſet of gentlemen ready, who were willing to advance twenty-five thouſand pounds more for the ſame purpoſe, and to allow him five hundred pounds a-year for his maintenance, till his cauſe ſhould be made an end of, provided that Mr. M—— ſhould have no further concern with him and his cauſe.

Mr A——y, having by this time received ſome intimations of the deceit that had been put upon him, made anſwer, that he ſhould look upon himſelf as a very ungrateful monſter indeed, if he deſerted a perſon who had ſaved his life, and ſo generouſly ventured his own, together with his fortune, in his cauſe, until he ſhould firſt be certain of the truth of what was alleged of him, and abſolutely rejected the propoſal. G—ſt—ey, who had no other view in making it, than to cover the ſecret villany he meditated againſt him, and to facilitate the execution thereof, eaſily receded from it, when he found Mr. A—y ſo averſe to it, and undertook nevertheleſs to raiſe the money; adding, that he might, if he pleaſed, return to Mr. M—— whenever it was ſecured. The whole drift of this pretended undertaking to raiſe the twenty-five thouſand pounds, was only to lay a foundation for a dextrous contrivance to draw Mr. A——y unwarily into the execution of a deed, relinquiſhing all his right and title, under a notion of its being a deed to ſecure the repayment of that ſum.

G—ſt—ey having, as he imagined, ſo far paved the way for the execution of ſuch a deed, enters into an agreement with an agent, employed for that purpoſe by Mr. A——y's adverſaries, purporting, that, in conſideration of the payment of a bond for ſix thouſand pounds,

which he, G—ſt—ey, had, as he pretended, laid out in Mr. A——y's cauſe, and of an annuity of ſeven hundred pounds a-year, he was to procure for them from Mr. A——y a deed ready executed, relinquiſhing all right and title to the A——a eſtate and honours. Every thing being prepared for the execution of this infernal ſcheme, unknown to Mr. A——y, G—ſt—ey then thought proper to ſend for him to town from his retirement, in order, as he pretended, to execute a ſecurity of twenty-five thouſand pounds.

This intended victim to that villain's avarice no ſooner arrived in town, full of hopes of money to carry on his cauſe, and of agreeably ſurpriſing his friend and protector Mr. M——— with ſo ſeaſonable and unexpected a reinforcement, than an unforeſeen difficulty aroſe, concerning the payment of G—ſt—ey's ſix thouſand pound bond. That money was to have been raiſed out of the eſtate of a lunatic, which could not be done without the leave of the Court of Chancery, to whom an account muſt have been given of the intended application of it. While preparations were making to rectify this omiſſion, G—ſt—ey immediately carried Mr. A———y again into the country, leſt he ſhould happen to be undeceived by ſome means or other.

In the mean time, this wicked machination was providentially diſcovered by Mr. M———, before it could be carried into execution, by means of the jealouſies that aroſe among the conſpirators themſelves; and was, at the ſame time, confirmed to him by a perſon whom the very agent for the A———a party had intruſted with the ſecret. M——— no ſooner detected it, than he communicated his diſcovery to one of Mr. A———y's counſel, a man of great worth; and immediately thereupon took proper meaſures to defeat it. He then found means to lay open to Mr. A——y himſelf the treacherous ſcheme that was laid for his deſtruction: He was highly ſenſible of it; and could never afterwards reflect on the ſnare that he had ſo unwarily been drawn into, and had ſo narrowly eſcaped, without a mixture of horror, ſhame, and gratitude to his deliverer.

The conſummate aſſurance of the monſters who were engaged in this plot, after they had been detected, and

upbraided with their treachery, is ſcarce to be paralleled; for they not only owned the fact of ſpiriting Mr. A——y away, in the manner above mentioned, but juſtified their doing it as tending to his ſervice. They alſo maintained, that they had actually ſecured the twenty-five thouſand pounds for him, though they never could name any one perſon who was to have advanced the money. No man was more active in this ſcheme than H———n; nor any man more ſolicitous to keep Mr. A———y up in the falſe impreſſions he had received, or in projecting methods to ruin his protector, than he.

Among many other expedients for that purpoſe, a moſt malicious attempt was made to lodge an information againſt him, for treaſonable practices, with the ſecretary of ſtate, notwithſtanding the repeated proofs he had given of his loyalty; and, as a preparatory ſtep to his accuſation, a letter, which this traitor dictated, was copied by another perſon, and actually ſent to the Earl of C——d, importing, that the perſon who copied the letter had an affair of conſequence to communicate to his lordſhip, if he would appoint a time of receiving the information. But that perſon, upon full conviction of the villany of the ſcheme, abſolutely refuſed to proceed further in it; ſo that his malice once more proved abortive; and before he had time to execute any other contrivance of the ſame nature, he was impriſoned in this very jail for debt.

Here, finding his creditors inexorable, and himſelf deſtitute of all other reſource, he made application to the very man whom he had injured in ſuch an outrageous manner, ſet forth his deplorable caſe in the moſt pathetic terms, and entreated him, with the moſt abject humility, to uſe his influence in his behalf. The diſtreſs of this varlet immediately diſarmed M——— of his reſentment, and even excited his compaſſion. Without ſending any anſwer to his remonſtrances, he interceded for him with his creditors; and the perſon to whom he was chiefly indebted, refuſing to releaſe him without ſecurity, this unwearied benefactor joined with the priſoner in a bond for above two hundred and forty pounds, for which he obtained his releaſe.

He was no ſooner diſcharged, however, than he entered into freſh combinations with G—ſt—ey and others,

in order to thwart his deliverer in his ſchemes of raiſing money, and otherwiſe to diſtreſs and deprive him of liberty; for which purpoſe, no art or induſtry (perjury not excepted) hath been ſpared. And, what is ſtill more extraordinary, this perfidious monſter having found money to take up the bond, in conſequence of which he regained his freedom, hath procured a writ againſt M——, upon that very obligation; and taken aſſignments to ſome other debts of that gentleman, with the ſame Chriſtian intention. But hitherto he hath, by ſurpriſing ſagacity and unſhaken reſolution, baffled all their infernal contrivances, and retorted ſome of their machinations on their own heads. At this time, when he is ſuppoſed by ſome, and repreſented by others, as under the circumſtances of oblivion and deſpondence, he proceeds in his deſign with the utmoſt calmneſs and intrepidity, meditating ſchemes, and ripening meaſures, that will one day confound his enemies, and attract the notice and admiration of mankind."

Peregrine, having thanked the prieſt for his obliging information, expreſſed his ſurpriſe at the ſcandalous inattention of the world to an affair of ſuch importance; obſerving, that, by ſuch inhuman neglect, this unfortunate young gentleman, Mr. A——y, was abſolutely deprived of all the benefit of ſociety; the ſole end of which is, to protect the rights, redreſs the grievances, and promote the happineſs of individuals. As for the character of M——, he ſaid, it was ſo romantically ſingular in all its circumſtances, that, though other motives were wanting, curioſity alone would induce him to ſeek his acquaintance; But he did not at all wonder at the ungrateful returns which had been made to his generoſity by H——n and many others, whom he had ſerved in a manner that few, beſides himſelf, would have done; for he had been long convinced of the truth conveyed in theſe lines of a celebrated Italian author:

Li beneficii, che per la loro grandezza, non puonno eſſer guiderdonati, con la ſcelerata moneta dell' ingratitudine, ſono pagati.

"The ſtory which you have related of that young gentleman (ſaid he) bears a very ſtrong reſemblance to

the fate of a Spaniſh nobleman, as it was communicated to me by one of his own intimate friends at Paris. The Counteſs d'Alvarez died immediately after the birth of a ſon, and the huſband ſurviving her but three years, the child was left ſole heir to his honours and eſtate, under the guardianſhip of his uncle, who had a ſmall fortune and a great many children. This inhuman relation, coveting the wealth of his infant ward, formed a deſign againſt the life of the helpleſs orphan, and truſted the execution of it to his valet de chambre, who was tempted to undertake the murder by the promiſe of a conſiderable reward. He accordingly ſtabbed the boy with a knife in three different places, on the right ſide of his neck; but, as he was not uſed to ſuch barbarous attempts, his hand failed in the performance; and he was ſeized with ſuch remorſe, that, perceiving the wounds were not mortal, he carried the hapleſs victim to the houſe of a ſurgeon, by whoſe care they were healed; and, in the mean time, that he might not forfeit his recompence, found means to perſuade his employer, that his orders were performed. A bundle being made up for the purpoſe, was publicly interred as the body of the child, who was ſaid to have been ſuddenly carried off by a convulſion; and the uncle, without oppoſition, ſucceeded to his honours and eſtate. The boy being cured of his hurts, was, about the age of ſix, delivered, with a ſmall ſum of money, to a merchant juſt embarking for Turkey; who was given to underſtand, that he was the baſtard of a man of quality; and that, for family reaſons, it was neceſſary to conceal his birth.

While the unfortunate orphan remained in this deplorable ſtate of bondage, all the children of the uſurper died one after another; and he himſelf being taken dangerouſly ill, attributed all his afflictions to the juſt judgment of God, and communicated his anxiety on that ſubject to the valet de chambre, who had been employed in the murder of his nephew. That domeſtic, in order to quiet his maſter's conſcience, and calm the perturbation of his ſpirits, confeſſed what he had done, and gave him hopes of ſtill finding the boy by dint of induſtry and expence. The unhappy child being the only hope of the family of Alvarez, the uncle immediately ordered a mi-

nute inquiry to be ſet on foot; in conſequence of which he was informed, that the orphan had been ſold to a Turk, who had afterwards transferred him to an Engliſh merchant, by whom he was conveyed to London.

An expreſs was immediately diſpatched to this capital, where he underſtood that the unhappy exile had, in conſideration of his faithful ſervices, been bound apprentice to a French barber-ſurgeon; and, after he had ſufficiently qualified himſelf in that profeſſion, been received into the family of the Count de Gallas, at that time the Emperor's ambaſſador at the court of London. From the houſe of this nobleman he was traced into the ſervice of Count d'Oberſtorf, where he had married his lady's chambermaid, and then gone to ſettle as a ſurgeon in Bohemia.

In the courſe of theſe inquiries, ſeveral years elapſed; his uncle, who was very much attached to the houſe of Auſtria, lived at Barcelona, when the father of this Empreſs Queen recided in that city, and lent him a very conſiderable ſum of money in the moſt preſſing emergency of his affairs; and when that prince was on the point of returning to Germany, the old Count, finding his end approaching, ſent his father confeſſor to his Majeſty, with a circumſtantial account of the barbarity he had practiſed againſt his nephew, for which he implored forgiveneſs, and begged he would give orders, that the orphan, when found, ſhould inherit the dignities and fortune which he had unjuſtly uſurped.

His Majeſty aſſured the old man, that he might make himſelf eaſy on that ſcore, and ordered the confeſſor to follow him to Vienna, immediately after the count's death, in order to aſſiſt his endeavours in finding out the injured heir. The prieſt did not fail to yield obedience to this command: He informed himſelf of certain natural marks on the young count's body, which were known to the nurſe and women who attended him in his infancy; and, with a gentleman whom the Emperor ordered to accompany him, ſet out for Bohemia, where he ſoon found the object of his inquiry, in the capacity of major domo to a nobleman of that country, he having quitted his profeſſion of ſurgery for that office.

He was not a little ſurpriſed, when he found himſelf

around the apartment, "Split my topſtay-ſail (ſaid he, with an arch ſneer), you have got into a ſnug birth, couſin. Here you may ſit all weathers, without being turned out to take your watch, and no fear of the ſhip's dragging her anchor. You han't much room to ſpare, 'tis true: An' I had known as how you ſtowed ſo cloſe, Tom ſhould have ſlung my own hammock for you, and then you mought have knocked down this great lubberly hurricane houſe. But, mayhap, you turn in double, and ſo you don't chooſe to truſt yourſelf and your doxy to a clew and canvas."

Pickle bore his jokes with great good humour, rallied him in his turn about the diary-maid at the garriſon, inquiring about his friends in the country, aſked if he had been to viſit his niece, and, finally, expreſſed a deſire of knowing the cauſe of his journey to London. The lieutenant ſatisfied his curioſity in all theſe particulars; and, in anſwer to the laſt queſtion, obſerved, that, from the information of Pipes, underſtanding he was land-locked, he had come from the country in order to tow him into the oſſing. "I know not how the wind ſits (ſaid he), but if ſo be as three thouſand pounds will bring you clear of the cape, ſay the word, and you ſha'n't lie wind-bound another glaſs for want of the money."

This was an offer which few people in our hero's ſituation would have altogether refuſed, eſpecially as he had all the reaſon in the world to believe, that, far from being a vain unmeaning compliment, it was the genuine tribute of friendſhip, which the lieutenant would have willingly, aye, and with pleaſure, paid. Nevertheleſs, Peregrine peremptorily refuſed his aſſiſtance, though not without expreſſing himſelf in terms of acknowledgment ſuitable to the occaſion. He told him, it would be time enough to make uſe of his generoſity, when he ſhould find himſelf deſtitute of all other reſource. Jack employed all his rhetoric, with a view of perſuading him to take this opportunity to procure his own enlargement; and, finding his arguments ineffectual, inſiſted upon his accepting an immediate ſupply for his neceſſary occaſions; ſwearing with great vehemence, that he would never return to the garriſon, unleſs he would put him upon the footing of any other tenant, and receive his rent accordingly.

Our young gentleman as poſitively ſwore, that he never would conſider him in that light; remonſtrating, that he had long ago ſettled the houſe upon him for life, as a pledge of his own eſteem, as well as in conformity with the commodore's deſire; and beſeeching him to return to his uſual avocations, proteſted that, if ever his ſituation ſhould ſubject him to the neceſſity of borrowing from his friends, Mr. Hatchway ſhould be the firſt man to whom he would apply himſelf for ſuccour. To convince him that this was not the caſe at preſent, he produced the bank note which he had received in the letter, together with his own ready money; and mentioned ſome other funds, which he invented extempore, in order to amuſe the lieutenant's concern. In the cloſe of this expoſtulation, he deſired Pipes to conduct Mr. Hatchway to the coffeehouſe, where he might entertain himſelf with the newſpaper for half an hour; during which he would put on his clothes, and beſpeak ſomething for dinner, that they might enjoy each other's company, as long as his occaſions would permit him to ſtay in that place.

The two ſailors were no ſooner gone, than he took up the pen, and wrote the following letter, in which he encloſed the bank note to his generous benefactreſs:

"MADAM,

"YOUR humanity is not more ingenious than my ſuſpicion. In vain you attempt to impoſe upon me by an act of generoſity, which no perſon upon earth but your ladyſhip is capable of committing. Though your name was not ſubſcribed on the paper, your ſentiments were fully diſplayed in the contents, which I muſt beg leave to reſtore, with the ſame ſenſe of gratitude, and for the ſame reaſons I expreſſed, when laſt I had the honour to converſe with you upon this ſubject. Though I am deprived of my liberty by the villany and ingratitude of mankind, I am not yet deſtitute of the other conveniencies of life; and therefore beg to be excuſed for incurring an unneceſſary addition to that load of obligation you have already laid upon,

Madam,
Your ladyſhip's moſt devoted
Humble ſervant,
PEREGRINE PICKLE."

Having dreſſed himſelf, and repaired to the place of appointment, he diſpatched this epiſtle by the hands of Pipes, who was ordered to leave it at her ladyſhip's houſe, without ſtaying for an anſwer; and in the mean time gave directions for dinner, which he and his friend Hatchway ate very cheerfully in his own apartment, after he had entertained him with a ſight of all the curioſities in the place. During their repaſt, Jack repeated his kind offers to our adventurer, who declined them with his former obſtinacy, and begged he might be no more importuned on that ſubject: But, if he inſiſted upon giving ſome freſh proofs of his friendſhip, he might have an opportunity of exhibiting it in taking Pipes under his care and protection; for nothing affected him ſo much as his inability to provide for ſuch a faithful adherent.

The lieutenant deſired he would give himſelf no trouble upon that ſcore; he being, of his own accord, perfectly well diſpoſed to befriend his old ſhip-mate, who ſhould never want while he had a ſhilling to ſpare. But he began to drop ſome hints of an intention to fix his quarters in the Fleet, obſerving, that the air ſeemed to be very good in that place, and that he was tired of living in the country. What he ſaid did not amount to a plain declaration, and therefore Peregrine did not anſwer it as ſuch, though he perceived his drift; and took an opportunity of deſcribing the inconveniencies of the place, in ſuch a manner, as he hoped would deter him from putting ſuch an extravagant plan in execution.

This expedient, however, far from anſwering the end propoſed, had a quite contrary effect, and furniſhed Hatchway with an argument againſt his own unwillingneſs to quit ſuch a diſagreeable place. In all probability, Jack would have been more explicit with regard to the ſcheme he had propoſed, if the converſation had not been interrupted by the arrival of Cadwallader, who never failed in the performance of his diurnal viſit. Hatchway, conjecturing that this ſtranger might have ſome private buſineſs with his friend, quitted the apartment, on pretence of taking a turn: And meeting Pipes at the door, deſired his company to the Bare, by which name the open ſpace is diſtinguiſhed; where, during a courſe of perambulation, theſe two companions held a council upon

Pickle: In conſequence of which it was determined, ſince he obſtinately perſiſted to refuſe their aſſiſtance, that they ſhould take lodgings in his neighbourhood, with a view of being at hand to miniſter unto his occaſions, in ſpite of his falſe delicacy, according to the emergency of his affairs.

This reſolution being taken, they conſulted the barkeeper of the coffeehouſe about lodging, and ſhe directed them to the warden; to whom the lieutenant, in his great wiſdom, repreſented himſelf as a kinſman, to Peregrine, who, rather than leave that young gentleman by himſelf to the unavoidable diſcomforts of a priſon, was inclined to keep him company, till ſuch time as his affairs could be put in order. This meaſure he the more anxiouſly deſired to take, becauſe the priſoner was ſometimes ſubject to a diſordered imagination, upon which occaſion he ſtood in need of extraordinary attendance; and therefore he (the lieutenant) entreated the warden to accommodate him with a lodging for himſelf and his ſervant, for which he was ready to make any reaſonable acknowledgement. The warden, who was a ſenſible and humane man, could not help applauding his reſolution; and ſeveral rooms being at that time unoccupied, he put him immediately in poſſeſſion of a couple, which were forthwith prepared for his reception.

This affair being ſettled to his ſatisfaction, he diſpatched Pipes for his portmanteau; and, returning to the coffeehouſe, found Peregrine, with whom he ſpent the remaining part of the evening. Our hero, taking it for granted that he propoſed to ſet out for the garriſon next day, wrote a memorandum of ſome books which he had left in that habitation, and which he now deſired Jack to ſend up to town by the waggon, directed for Mr. Crabtree. He cautioned him againſt giving the leaſt hint of his misfortune in the neighbourhood, that it might remain, as long as poſſible, concealed from the knowledge of his ſiſter (who, he knew, would afflict herſelf immoderately at the news), nor reach the ears of the reſt of his family, who would exult and triumph over his diſtreſs.

Hatchway liſtened to his injunctions with great attention, and promiſed to demean himſelf accordingly: Then the diſcourſe ſhifted to an agreeable recapitulation of the

merry ſcenes they had formerly acted together: And the evening being pretty far advanced, Peregrine, with ſeeming reluctance, told him that the gates of the Fleet would in a few minutes be ſhut for the night, and that there was an abſolute neceſſity for his withdrawing to his lodging. Jack replied, that he could not think of parting with him ſo ſoon, after ſuch a long ſeparation; and that he was determined to ſtay with him an hour or two longer, if he ſhould be obliged to take up his lodging in the ſtreets. Pickle, rather than diſoblige his gueſt, indulged him in his deſire, and reſolved to give him a ſhare of his own bed. A pair of chickens and 'ſparagus were beſpoke for ſupper, at which Pipes attended with an air of internal ſatisfaction; and the bottle was bandied about in a jovial manner till midnight, when the lieutenant roſe up to take his leave, obſerving, that, being fatigued with riding, he was inclined to turn in. Pipes, upon this intimation, produced a lanthorn ready lighted; and Jack, ſhaking his entertainer by the hand, wiſhed him good night, and promiſed to viſit him again betimes in the morning.

Peregrine, imagining that his behaviour proceeded from the wine, which he had plentifully drank, told him, that if he was diſpoſed to ſleep, his bed was ready prepared in the room, and ordered his attendant to undreſs his maſter; upon which Mr. Hatchway gave him to underſtand, that he had no occaſion to incommode his friend, having already provided a lodging for himſelf: and the young gentleman demanding an explanation, he frankly owned what he had done, ſaying, "You gave me ſuch a diſmal account of the place, that I could not think of leaving you in it without company." Our young gentleman, who was naturally impatient of benefits, and foreſaw that this uncommon inſtance of Hatchway's friendſhip would encroach upon the plan which he had formed for his own ſubſiſtence, by engroſſing his time and attention, ſo as that he ſhould not be able to proſecute his labours, cloſeted the lieutenant next day, and demonſtrated to him the folly and ill conſequences of the ſtep he had taken. He obſerved, that the world in general would look upon it as the effect of mere madneſs; and, if his relations were ſo diſpoſed, they might make it the foundation for a ſtatute of lunacy againſt him; that his abſence from the

garriſon muſt be a very great detriment to his private affairs; and, laſtly, that his preſence in the Fleet would be a very great hindrance to Pickle himſelf, whoſe hope of regaining his liberty altogether depended upon his being detached from all company and interruption.

To theſe remonſtrances Jack replied, that, as to the opinion of the world, it was no more to him than a rotten net-line; and if his relations had a mind to have his upper works condemned, he did not doubt but he ſhould be able to ſtand the ſurvey, without being declared unfit for ſervice; that he had no affairs at the garriſon, but ſuch as would keep cold; and with regard to Pickle's being interrupted by his preſence, he gave him his word, that he would never come along-ſide of him, except when he ſhould give him the ſignal for holding diſcourſe. In concluſion, he ſignified his reſolution to ſtay where he was, at all events, without making himſelf accountable to any perſon whatſoever.

Peregrine ſeeing him determined, deſiſted from any further importunity; reſolving, however, to tire him out of his plan by reſerve and ſupercilious neglect; for he could not bear the thought of being ſo notoriouſly obliged by any perſon upon earth. With this view he quitted the lieutenant, upon ſome ſlight pretence; after having told him, that he could not have the pleaſure of his company at dinner, becauſe he was engaged with a particular club of his fellow-priſoners.

Jack was a ſtranger to the punctilios of behaviour, and therefore did not take this declaration amiſs; but had immediate recourſe to the advice of his counſellor Mr. Pipes, who propoſed, that he ſhould go to the coffeehouſe and kitchen, and give the people to underſtand that he would pay for all ſuch liquor and proviſions as Mr. Pickle ſhould order to be ſent to his own lodging. This expedient was immediately practiſed; and as there was no credit in the place, Hatchway depoſited a ſum of money, by way of ſecurity, to the cook and the vintner, intimating, that there was a neceſſity for taking that method of befriending his couſin Peregrine, who was ſubject to ſtrange whims, that rendered it impoſſible to ſerve him any other way.

In conſequence of theſe inſinuations, it was that ſame

day rumoured about the Fleet, that Mr. Pickle was an unhappy gentleman diſordered in his underſtanding, and that the lieutenant was his near relation, who had ſubjected himſelf to the inconvenience of living in a jail, with the ſole view of keeping a ſtrict eye over his conduct. This report, however, did not reach the ears of our hero till the next day, when he ſent one of the runners of the Fleet, who attended him, to beſpeak and pay for a couple of pullets, and ſomething elſe for dinner, to which he had already invited his friend Hatchway, in hope of being able to perſuade him to retire into the country, after he had undergone a whole day's mortification in the place. The meſſenger returned with an aſſurance, that the dinner ſhould be made ready according to his directions, and reſtored the money, obſerving that his kinſman had paid for what was beſpoke.

Peregrine was equally ſurpriſed and diſguſted at this information, and reſolved to chide the lieutenant ſeverely for his unſeaſonable treat, which he conſidered as a thing repugnant to his reputation. Meanwhile, he diſpatched his attendant, for wine to the coffeehouſe, and finding his credit bolſtered up in that place by the ſame means, was enraged at the preſumption of Jack's friendſhip. He queſtioned the valet about it with ſuch manifeſtation of diſpleaſure, that the fellow, afraid of diſobliging ſuch a good maſter, frankly communicated the ſtory which was circulated at his expence. The young gentleman was ſo much incenſed at this piece of intelligence, that he wrote a bitter expoſtulation to the lieutenant, where he not only retracted his invitation, but declared that he would never converſe with him while he ſhould remain within the place.

Having thus obeyed the dictates of his anger, he gave notice to the cook, that he ſhould not have occaſion for what was ordered. Repairing to the coffeehouſe, he told the landlord, that whereas he underſtood the ſtranger with the wooden leg had prepoſſeſſed him and others with ridiculous notions, tending to bring the ſanity of his intellects in queſtion, and, to confirm this imputation, had, under the pretence of conſanguinity, undertaken to defray his expences; he could not help (in juſtice to himſelf) declaring, that the ſame perſon, was, in reality,

the madman, who had given his keepers the ſlip; that, therefore, he (the landlord) would not find his account in complying with his orders, and encouraging him to frequent his houſe; and that, for his own part, he would never enter the door, or favour him with the leaſt trifle of his cuſtom, if ever he ſhould for the future find himſelf anticipated in his payments by that unhappy lunatic.

The vintner was confounded at this retorted charge; and, after much perplexity and deliberation, concluded, that both parties were diſtracted; the ſtranger in paying a man's debts againſt his will, and Pickle, in being offended at ſuch forwardneſs of friendſhip.

CHAPTER C.

Theſe aſſociates commit an aſſault upon Crabtree, for which they are baniſhed from the Fleet. Peregrine begins to feel the effects of confinement.

Our adventurer having dined at an ordinary, and in the afternoon retired to his own apartment, as uſual, with his friend Cadwallader, Hatchway and his aſſociate, after they had been obliged to diſcuſs the proviſion for which they had paid, renewed their conference upon the old ſubject. Pipes giving his meſſmate to underſtand, that Peregrine's chief confident was the old deaf bachelor, whom he had ſeen at his lodging the preceding day, Mr. Hatchway, in his great penetration, diſcovered, that the young gentleman's obſtinacy proceeded from the advice of the miſanthrope, whom, for that reaſon, it was their buſineſs to chaſtiſe. Pipes entered into this opinion the more willingly, as he had all along believed the ſenior to be a ſort of wizzard, or ſome caco-demon, whom it was not very creditable to be acquainted with. Indeed, he had been inſpired with this notion by the inſinuations of Hadgi, who had formerly dropped ſome hints touching Crabtree's profound knowledge in the magic art; mentioning, in particular, his being poſſeſſed of the philoſopher's ſtone; an aſſertion to which Tom had given implicit credit, until his maſter was ſent to priſon for debt, when he could no

longer ſuppoſe Cadwallader lord of ſuch a valuable ſecret, or elſe he would have certainly procured the enlargement of his moſt intimate friend.

With theſe ſentiments, he eſpouſed the reſentment of Hatchway. They determined to ſeize the ſuppoſed conjurer, with the firſt opportunity, on his return from his viſit to Peregrine, and, without heſitation, exerciſe upon him the diſcipline of the pump. This plan they would have executed that ſame evening, had not the miſanthrope luckily withdrawn himſelf, by accident, before it was dark, and even before they had intelligence of his retreat. But, next day, they kept themſelves upon the watch till he appeared, and Pipes lifting his hat, as Crabtree paſſed, "O damn ye, old Dunny (ſaid he), you and I muſt grapple by and bye; and a'gad I ſhall lie ſo near your quarter, that your ear ports will let in the ſound, tho'f they are double caulked with oakum."

The miſanthrope's ears were not quite ſo faſt cloſed, but that they received this intimation; which, though delivered in terms that he did not well underſtand, had ſuch an effect upon his apprehenſion, that he ſignified his doubts to Peregrine, obſerving, that he did not much like the looks of that ſame ruffian with the wooden leg. Pickle aſſured him, he had nothing to fear from the two ſailors, who could have no cauſe of reſentment againſt him; or, if they had, would not venture to take any ſtep, which they knew muſt block up all the avenues to that reconcilement, about which they were ſo anxious; and, moreover, give ſuch offence to the governor of the place as would infallibly induce him to expel them both from his territories.

Notwithſtanding this aſſurance, the young gentleman was not ſo confident of the lieutenant's diſcretion, as to believe that Crabtree's fears were altogether without foundation; he forthwith conjectured that Jack had taken umbrage at an intimacy from which he found himſelf excluded, and imputed his diſgrace to the inſinuations of Cadwallader, whom, in all likelihood, he intended to puniſh for his ſuppoſed advice. He knew his friend could ſuſtain no great damage from the lieutenant's reſentment, in a place which he could immediately alarm with his cries, and therefore wiſhed he might fall into the ſnare,

becauſe it would furniſh him with a pretence of complaint; in conſequence of which, the ſailors would be obliged to ſhift their quarters, ſo as that he ſhould be rid of their company, in which he at preſent could find no enjoyment.

Every thing happened as he had foreſeen; the miſanthrope, in his retreat from Peregrine's chamber, was aſſaulted by Hatchway and his aſſociate, who ſeized him by the collar without ceremony, and began to drag him towards the pump, at which they would have certainly complimented him with a very diſagreeable bath, had not he exalted his voice in ſuch a manner, as in a moment brought a number of the inhabitants, and Pickle himſelf, to his aid. The aſſailants would have perſiſted in their deſign, had the oppoſition been ſuch as they could have faced with any poſſibility of ſucceſs: Nor did they quit their prey, before a dozen, at leaſt, had come to his reſcue, and Peregrine, with a menacing aſpect and air of authority, commanded his old valet to withdraw: Then they thought proper to ſheer off, and betake themſelves to cloſe quarters, while our hero accompanied the affrighted Cadwallader to the gate, and exhibited to the warden a formal complaint againſt the rioters, upon whom he retorted the charge of lunacy, which was ſupported by the evidence of twenty perſons, who had been eye-witneſſes of the outrage committed againſt the old gentleman.

The governor, in conſequence of this information, ſent a meſſage to Mr. Hatchway, warning him to move his lodgings next day, on pain of being expelled. The lieutenant contumaciouſly refuſing to comply with this intimation, was in the morning, while he amuſed himſelf in walking upon the Bare, ſuddenly ſurrounded by the conſtables of the court, who took him and his adherent priſoners, before they were aware, and delivered them into the hands of the turnkeys, by whom they were immediately diſmiſſed, and their baggage conveyed to the ſide of the ditch.

This expulſion was not performed without an obſtinate oppoſition on the part of the delinquents, who, had they not been ſurpriſed, would have ſet the whole Fleet at defiance, and, in all probability, have acted divers tragedies, before they could have been overpowered. Things being

circumſtanced as they were, the lieutenant did not part with his conductor, without tweaking his noſe, by way of farewel; and Pipes, in imitation of ſuch a laudable example, communicated a token of remembrance, in an application to the ſole eye of his attendant, who, ſcorning to be out-done in this kind of courteſy, returned the compliment with ſuch good will, that Tom's organ performed the office of a multiplying glaſs. Theſe were mutual hints for ſtripping; and accordingly each was naked from the waiſt upwards in a trice. A ring of butchers from the market was immediately formed; a couple of the reverend Flamens, who, in morning gowns, ply for marriages in that quarter of the town, conſtituted themſelves ſeconds and umpires of the approaching conteſt, and the battle began without further preparation. The combatants were, in point of ſtrength and agility, pretty equally matched; but the jailor had been regularly trained to the art of bruiſing: He had more than once ſignalized himſelf in public, by his proweſs and ſkill in this exerciſe, and loſt one eye upon the ſtage in the courſe of his exploits. This was a misfortune of which Pipes did not fail to take the advantage: He had already ſuſtained ſeveral hard knocks upon his temples and jaws, and found it impracticable to ſmite his antagoniſt upon the victualing office, ſo dextrouſly was it defended againſt aſſault. He then changed his battery, and being ambi-dexter, raiſed ſuch a clatter upon the turnkey's blind ſide, that this hero, believing him left-handed, converted his attention that way, and oppoſed the unenlightened ſide of his face to the right hand of Pipes, which being thus unprovided againſt, ſlily beſtowed upon him a peg under the fifth rib, that in an inſtant laid him ſenſeleſs on the pavement, at the feet of his conqueror. Pipes was congratulated upon his victory, not only by his friend Hatchway, but alſo by all the byſtanders, particularly the prieſt who had eſpouſed his cauſe, and now invited the ſtrangers to his lodgings in a neighbouring alehouſe, where they were entertained ſo much to their liking, that they determined to ſeek no other habitation while they ſhould continue in town; and, notwithſtanding the diſgrace and diſcouragement they had met with, in their endeavours to ſerve our adventurer, they were ſtill reſolved to perſevere in their good offices, or, in the vulgar phraſe, to ſee him out.

While they ſettled themſelves in this manner, and acquired familiar connections round all the purlieus of the ditch, Peregrine found himſelf deprived of the company of Cadwallader, who ſignified by letter, that he did not chooſe to hazard his perſon again in viſiting him, while ſuch aſſaſſins occupied the avenues through which he muſt paſs; for he had been at pains to inquire into the motions of the ſeamen, and informed himſelf exactly of the harbour in which they were moored.

Our hero had been ſo much accuſtomed to the converſation of Crabtree, which was altogether ſuitable to the ſingularity of his own diſpoſition, that he could very ill afford to be debarred of it at this juncture, when almoſt every other ſource of enjoyment was ſtopped. He was, however, obliged to ſubmit to the hardſhips of his ſituation; and as the characters of his fellow-priſoners did not at all improve upon him, he was compelled to ſeek for ſatisfaction within himſelf. Not but that he had an opportunity of converſing with ſome people, who neither wanted ſenſe, nor were deficient in point of principle; yet there appeared in the behaviour of them all, without exception, a certain want of decorum, a ſqualour of ſentiment, a ſort of jailiſh caſt contracted in the courſe of confinement, which diſguſted the delicacy of our hero's obſervation. He, therefore, detached himſelf from their parties as much as he could, without giving offence to thoſe among whom he was obliged to live, and reſumed his labours with incredible eagerneſs and perſeverance, his ſpirts being ſupported by the ſucceſs of ſome ſevere *Philippics*, which he occaſionally publiſhed againſt the author of his misfortune.

Nor was his humanity unemployed in the vacations of his revenge. A man muſt be void of all ſympathy and compaſſion, who can reſide among ſo many miſerable objects, without feeling an inclination to relieve their diſtreſs. Every day almoſt preſented to his view ſuch lamentable ſcenes, as were moſt likely to attract his notice, and engage his benevolence. Reverſes of fortune, attended with the moſt deplorable circumſtances of domeſtic woe, were continually intruding upon his acquaintance; his ears were invaded with the cries of the hapleſs wife, who, from the enjoyment of affluence and pleaſure, was forced to follow

her huſband to this abode of wretchedneſs and want; his eyes were every minute aſſailed with the naked and meagre appearances of hunger and cold; and his fancy teemed with a thouſand aggravations of their miſery.

Thus ſituated, his purſe was never ſhut while his heart remained open. Without reflecting upon the ſlenderneſs of his ſtore, he exerciſed his charity to all the children of diſtreſs, and acquired a popularity which, though pleaſing, was far from being profitable. In ſhort, his bounty kept no pace with his circumſtances, and in a little time he was utterly exhauſted. He had recourſe to his bookſeller, from whom, with great difficulty, he obtained a ſmall reinforcement; and immediately relapſed into the ſame want of retention. He was conſcious of his infirmity, and found it incurable: He foreſaw that by his own induſtry he ſhould never be able to defray the expence of theſe occaſions; and this reflection ſunk deep into his mind. The approbation of the public, which he had earned or might acquire, like a cordial often repeated, began to loſe its effect upon his imagination; his health ſuffered by his ſedentary life and auſtere application; his eye-ſight failed, his appetite forſook him, his ſpirits decayed; ſo that he became melancholy, liſtleſs, and altogether incapable of proſecuting the only means he had left for his ſubſiſtence; and (what did not at all contribute to the alleviation of theſe particulars), he was given to underſtand by his lawyer, that he had loſt his cauſe, and was condemned in coſts. Even this was not the moſt mortifying piece of intelligence he received; he at the ſame time learned that his bookſeller was bankrupt, and his friend Crabtree at the point of death.

Theſe were comfortable conſiderations to a youth of Peregrine's diſpoſition, which was ſo capricious, that the more his miſery increaſed, the more haughty and inflexible he became. Rather than be beholden to Hatchway, who ſtill hovered about the gate, eager for an opportunity to aſſiſt him, he choſe to undergo the want of almoſt every convenience of life, and actually pledged his wearing apparel to an Iriſh pawnbroker in the Fleet, for money to purchaſe thoſe things, without which he muſt have abſolutely periſhed. He was gradually irritated by his misfortunes into a rancorous reſentment of

gainſt mankind in general, and his heart ſo alienated from the enjoyments of life, that he did not care how ſoon he quitted his miſerable exiſtence. Though he had ſhocking examples of the viciſſitudes of fortune continually before his eyes, he could never be reconciled to the idea of living like his fellow-ſufferers, in the moſt abject degree of dependence. If he refuſed to accept of favours from his own allies and intimate friends, whom he had formerly obliged, it is not to be ſuppoſed that he would liſten to propoſals of that kind from any of his fellow-priſoners, with whom he had contracted acquaintance: He was even more cautious than ever of incurring obligations; he now ſhunned his former meſs-mates, in order to avoid diſagreeable tenders of friendſhip. Imagining that he perceived an inclination in the clergyman to learn the ſtate of his finances, he diſcouraged and declined the explanation, and at length ſecluded himſelf from all ſociety.

CHAPTER CI.

He receives an unexpected viſit; and the clouds of misfortune begin to ſeparate.

WHILE he pined in this forlorn condition, with an equal abhorrence of the world and himſelf, Captain Gauntlet arrived in town in order to employ his intereſt for promotion in the army; and, in conſequence of his wife's particular deſire, made it his buſineſs to inquire for Peregrine, to whom he longed to be reconciled, even though at the expence of a ſlight ſubmiſſion. But he could hear no tidings of him, at the place to which he was directed; and, on the ſuppoſition that our hero had gone to reſide in the country, applied himſelf to his own buſineſs, with intention to renew his inquiries, after that affair ſhould be tranſacted. He communicated his demands to his ſuppoſed patron, who had aſſumed the merit of making him a captain, and been gratified with a valuable preſent on that conſideration; and was cajoled with hopes of ſucceeding in his preſent aim by the ſame intereſt.

Meanwhile, he became acquainted with one of the clerks belonging the war-office, whoſe advice and aſſiſtance, he was told would be a furtherance to his ſcheme. As he had occaſion to diſcourſe with this gentleman upon the circumſtances of his expectation, he learned that the nobleman, upon whom he depended, was a perſon of no conſequence in the ſtate, and altogether incapable of aſſiſting him in his advancement. At the ſame time, his counſellor expreſſed his ſurpriſe that Captain Gauntlet did not rather intereſt in his cauſe the noble peer to whoſe good offices he owed his laſt commiſſion.

This remark introduced an explanation, by which Godfrey diſcovered, to his infinite aſtoniſhment, the miſtake in which he had continued ſo long with regard to his patron; though he could not divine the motive which induced a nobleman, with whom he had no acquaintance or connection, to interpoſe his influence in his behalf. Whatſoever that might be, he thought it was his duty to make his acknowledgment; and for that purpoſe went next morning to his houſe, where he was politely received, and given to underſtand, that Mr. Pickle was the perſon to whoſe friendſhip he was indebted for his laſt promotion.

Inexpreſſible were the tranſports of gratitude, affection, and remorſe, that took poſſeſſion of the ſoul of Gauntlet, when this myſtery was unfolded. "Good heaven! (cried he, lifting up his hands) have I lived ſo long in a ſtate of animoſity with my benefactor? I intended to have reconciled myſelf at any rate before I was ſenſible of this obligation; but now I ſhall not enjoy a moment's quiet until I have an opportunity of expreſſing to him my ſenſe of his heroic friendſhip. I preſume, from the nature of the favour conferred upon him, in my behalf, that Mr. Pickle is well known to your lordſhip; and I ſhould think myſelf extremely happy, if you could inform me in what part of the country he is to be found; For the perſon with whom he lodged ſome time ago could give me no intelligence of his motions."

The nobleman, touched with this inſtance of generous ſelf denial in Peregrine, as well as with the ſenſibility of his friend, lamented the unhappineſs of our hero, while he gave Gauntlet to underſtand that he had been long

diſordered in his intellects, in conſequence of having ſquandered away his fortune; and that his creditors had thrown him into the Fleet-priſon; but whether he ſtill continued in that confinement, or was releaſed from his misfortunes by death, his lordſhip did not know, becauſe he had never inquired.

Godfrey no ſooner received this intimation, than (his blood boiling with grief and impatience) he craved pardon for his abrupt departure; then quitting his informer on the inſtant, reimbarked in his hackney-coach, and ordered himſelf to be conveyed directly to the Fleet. As the vehicle proceeded along one ſide of the market, he was ſurpriſed with the appearance of Hatchway and Pipes, who ſtood cheapening cauliflowers at a green-ſtall, their heads being caſed in worſted night caps, half covered with their hats, and a ſhort tobacco-pipe in the mouth of each. He was rejoiced at ſight of the two ſeamen, which he took for an happy omen of finding his friend; and, ordering the coachman to ſtop the carriage, called to the lieutenant by his name. Jack replying with an hilloah, looking behind him, and recogniſing the face of his old acquaintance, ran up to the coach with great eagerneſs. Shaking the captain heartily by the hand, "Odd's heart! (ſaid he) I am glad thou haſt fallen in with us; we ſhall now be able to find the trim of the veſſel, and lay her about on t'other tack. For my own part, I have had many a conſort in my time, that is, in the way of good fellowſhip, and I always made ſhift to ware'em at one time or another: But this headſtrong toad will neither obey the helm nor the ſheet; and, for aught I know, will founder where a lies at anchor."

Gauntlet, who conceived part of his meaning, alighted immediately; and being conducted to the ſailor's lodging, was informed of every thing that had paſſed between the lieutenant and Pickle. He, in his turn, communicated to Jack the diſcovery which he had made, with regard to his commiſſion; at which the other gave no ſigns of ſurpriſe: But, taking the pipe from his mouth, "Why, look ye, captain (ſaid he), that's not the only good turn you have owed him. That ſame money you received from the commodore as an old debt, was all a ſham, contrived by Pickle, for you twice; but a'wool drive under

his bare poles, without ſails and rigging, or a meſs of proviſion on board, rather than take the ſame aſſiſtance from another man."

Godfrey was not only amazed, but chagrined at the knowledge of this anecdote; which gave umbrage to his pride, while it ſtimulated his deſire of doing ſomething in return for the obligation. He inquired into the preſent circumſtances of the priſoner; and underſtanding that he was indiſpoſed, and but indifferently provided with the common neceſſaries of life, though ſtill deaf to all offers of aſſiſtance, began to be extremely concerned at the account of his ſavage obſtinacy and pride, which would, he feared, exclude him from the privilege of relieving him in his diſtreſs. However, he reſolved to leave no expedient untried, that might have any tendency to ſurmount ſuch deſtructive prejudice; and entering the jail, was directed to the apartment of the wretched priſoner. He knocked ſoftly at the door, and, when it was opened, ſtarted back with horror and aſtoniſhment: The figure that preſented itſelf to his view was the remains of his once happy friend; but ſo miſerably altered and diſguiſed, that his features were ſcarce cognizable. The florid, the ſprightly, the gay, the elevated youth, was now metamorphoſed into a wan, dejected, meagre, ſqualid ſpectre; the hollow-eyed repreſentative of diſtemper, indigence, and deſpair: Yet his eyes retained a certain ferocity, which threw a diſmal gleam athwart the cloudineſs of his aſpect, and he, in ſilence, viewed his old companion with a look betokening confuſion and diſdain. As for Gauntlet, he could not, without emotion, behold ſuch a woful reverſe of fate, in a perſon for whom he entertained the nobleſt ſentiments of friendſhip, gratitude, and eſteem: his ſorrow was at firſt too big for utterance, and he ſhed a flood of tears before he could pronounce one word.

Peregrine, in ſpite of his miſanthropy, could not help being affected with this uncommon teſtimony of regard; but he ſtrove to ſtifle his ſenſations: His brows contracted themſelves into a ſevere frown; his eyes kindled into the appearance of live coals: He waved with his hand, in ſignal for Godfrey to be gone, and leave ſuch a wretch as him to the miſeries of his fate; and, finding nature

too ſtrong to be ſuppreſſed, uttered a deep groan, and weeped aloud.

The ſoldier, ſeeing him thus melted, unable to reſtrain the ſtrong impulſe of his affection, ſprung towards, and claſping him in his arms, "My deareſt friend, and beſt benefactor (ſaid he), I am come hither to humble myſelf for the offence I was ſo unhappy as to give at our laſt parting; to beg a reconciliation, to thank you for the eaſe and affluence I have enjoyed through your means, and to reſcue you, in ſpite of yourſelf, from this melancholy ſituation; of which, but an hour ago, I was utterly ignorant. Do not deny me the ſatisfaction of acquitting myſelf, in point of duty and obligation. You muſt certainly have had ſome regard for a perſon, in whoſe favour you have exerted yourſelf ſo much; and if any part of that eſteem remains, you will not refuſe him an opportunity of approving himſelf in ſome meaſure worthy of it. Let me not ſuffer the moſt mortifying of all repulſes, that of ſlighted friendſhip; but kindly ſacrifice your reſentment and inflexibility to the requeſt of one who is at all times ready to ſacrifice his life for your honour and advantage. If you will not yield to my entreaties, have ſome regard to the wiſhes of my Sophy, who laid me under the ſtrongeſt injunctions to ſolicit your forgiveneſs, even before ſhe knew how much I was indebted to your generoſity; or, if that conſideration ſhould be of no weight, I hope you will relax a little for the ſake of poor Emilia, whoſe reſentment hath been long ſubdued by her affection, and who now droops in ſecret at your neglect."

Every word of this addreſs, delivered in the moſt pathetic manner, made an impreſſion upon the mind of Peregrine: He was affected with the ſubmiſſion of his friend, who, in reality, had given him no juſt cauſe to complain. He knew that no ordinary motive had ſwayed him to a condeſcenſion ſo extraordinary in a man of his punctilious temper: He conſidered it, therefore, as the genuine effect of eager gratitude and diſintereſted love, and his heart began to relent accordingly. When he heard himſelf conjured in the name of the gentle Sophy, his obſtinacy was quite overcome; and when Emilia was recalled to his remembrance, his whole frame underwent a violent

agitation. He took his friend by the hand, with a ſoftened look; and, as ſoon as he recovered the faculty of ſpeech, which had been overpowered in the conflict of paſſions that tranſported him, proteſted, that he retained no veſtige of animoſity, but conſidered him in the light of an affectionate comrade, the ties of whoſe friendſhip adverſity could not unbind. He mentioned Sophy in the moſt reſpectful terms; ſpoke of Emilia with the moſt reverential awe, as the object of his inviolable love and veneration; but diſclaimed all hope of ever more attracting her regard; and excuſed himſelf from profiting by Godfrey's kind intention, declaring, with a reſolute air, that he had broke off all connection with mankind, and that he impatiently longed for the hour of his diſſolution, which, if it ſhould not ſoon arrive by the courſe of nature, he was reſolved to haſten it with his own hands, rather than be expoſed to the contempt, and more intolerable pity of a raſcally world.

Gauntlet argued againſt this frantic determination with all the vehemence of expoſtulating friendſhip; but his remonſtrances did not produce the deſired effect upon our deſperate hero, who calmly refuted all his arguments, and aſſerted the rectitude of his deſign from the pretended maxims of reaſon and true philoſophy.

While this diſpute was carried on with eagerneſs on one ſide, and deliberation on the other, a letter was brought to Peregrine, who threw it careleſsly aſide unopened, though the ſuperſcription was in an hand-writing to which he was a ſtranger; and, in all probability, the contents would never have been peruſed, had not Gauntlet inſiſted upon his waving all ceremony, and reading it forthwith. Thus ſolicited, Pickle unſealed the billet, which, to his no ſmall ſurpriſe, contained the following intimation:—

"MR. P. PICKLE,

"SIR,

"THIS comes to inform you, that, after many dangers and diſappointments, I am, by the bleſſing of God, ſafely arrived in the Downs, on board of the Gomberoon Indiaman, having made a tolerable voyage; by which I

hope I ſhall be enabled to repay, with intereſt, the ſeven hundred pounds which I borrowed of you before my departure from England. I take this opportunity of writing by our purſer, who goes expreſs with diſpatches for the company, that you may have this ſatisfactory notice as ſoon as poſſible, relating to one whom I ſuppoſe you have long given over as loſt. I have encloſed it in a letter to my broker, who, I hope, knows your addreſs, and will forward it accordingly: And I am, with reſpect, Sir,

Your moſt humble ſervant,

BENJAMIN CHINTZ."

He had no ſooner taken a curſory view of this agreeable epiſtle, than his countenance cleared up, and, reaching it to his friend, with a ſmile, "There (ſaid he), is a more convincing argument, on your ſide of the queſtion, than all the caſuiſts in the univerſe can advance." Gauntlet, wondering at this obſervation, took the paper, and, caſting his eyes greedily upon the contents, congratulated him upon the receipt of it, with extravagant demonſtrations of joy: "Not on account of the ſum (ſaid he), which, upon my honour, I would with pleaſure pay three times over for your convenience and ſatisfaction; but becauſe it ſeems to have reconciled you to life, and diſpoſed your mind for re-enjoying the comforts of ſociety."

The inſtantaneous effect which this unexpected ſmile of fortune produced in the appearance of our adventurer is altogether inconceivable; it plumped up his cheeks in a moment, unbended and enlightened every feature of his face; elevated his head, which had begun to ſink, as it were, between his ſhoulders; and from a ſqueaking diſpirited tone, ſwelled up his voice to a clear manly accent. Godfrey, taking advantage of this favourable change, began to regale him with proſpects of future ſucceſs: He reminded him of his youth and qualifications, which were certainly deſigned for better days than thoſe he had as yet ſeen; he pointed out various paths by which he might arrive at wealth and reputation; he importuned him to accept of a ſum for his immediate occaſions; and earneſtly begged that he would allow him to diſcharge the debt for which he was confined, obſerving, that Sophy's fortune had enabled him to exhibit that proof of his grati-

tude, without any detriment to his affairs; and proteſting that he ſhould not believe himſelf in poſſeſſion of Mr. Pickle's eſteem, unleſs he was permitted to make ſome ſuch return of good will to the man, who had not only raiſed him from indigence and ſcorn, to competence and reputable rank, but alſo empowered him to obtain the poſſeſſion of an excellent woman, who had filled up the meaſure of his felicity.

Peregrine declared himſelf already overpaid for all his good offices, by the pleaſure he enjoyed in employing them, and the happy effects they had produced in the mutual ſatisfaction of two perſons ſo dear to his affection; and aſſured his friend, that one time or other he would ſet his conſcience at eaſe, and remove the ſcruples of his honour, by having recourſe to his aſſiſtance; but at preſent he could not make uſe of his friendſhip, without giving juſt cauſe of offence to honeſt Hatchway, who was prior to him in point of ſolicitation, and had manifeſted his attachment with ſurpriſing obſtinacy and perſeverance.

CHAPTER CII.

Peregrine reconciles himſelf to the lieutenant, and renews his connection with ſociety. Divers plans are projected in his behalf, and he has occaſion to exhibit a remarkable proof of ſelf-denial.

THE captain, with reluctance, yielded the preference in this particular to Jack, who was immediately invited to a conference, by a note ſubſcribed with Pickle's own hand. He was found at the priſon-gate waiting for Gauntlet, to know the iſſue of his negociation. He no ſooner received this ſummons, than he ſet all his ſails, and made the beſt of his way to his friend's apartment; being admitted by the turnkey, in conſequence of Peregrine's requeſt, communicated by the meſſenger who carried the billet. Pipes followed cloſe in the wake of his ſhip-mate; and, in a few minutes after the note had been diſpatched, Peregrine and Gauntlet heard the ſound of the ſtump, aſcending the wooden ſtair-caſe with ſuch velocity, that they at firſt miſtook it for the application of drum-ſticks to the head of an empty

barrel. This uncommon ſpeed, however, was attended with a misfortune; he chanced to overlook a ſmall defect in one of the ſteps, and his prop plunging into a hole, he fell backwards, to the imminent danger of his life. Tom was luckily at his back, and ſuſtained him in his arms, ſo as that he eſcaped without any other damage than the loſs of his wooden leg, which was ſnapt in the middle, by the weight of his body in falling; and ſuch was his impatience, that he would not give himſelf the trouble to diſengage the fractured member. Unbuckling the whole equipage in a trice, he left it ſticking in the crevice, ſaying a rotten cable was not worth heaving up, and, in this natural ſtate of mutilation, hopped into the room with infinite expedition.

Peregrine, taking him cordially by the hand, ſeated him upon one ſide of his bed; and, after having made an apology for that reſerve of which he had ſo juſtly complained, aſked if he could conveniently accommodate him with the loan of twenty guineas. The lieutenant, without opening his mouth, pulled out his purſe; and Pipes, who overheard the demand, applying the whiſtle to his lips, performed a loud overture, in token of his joy. Matters being thus brought to an accommodation, our hero told the captain, that he ſhould be glad of his company at dinner, with their common friend Hatchway, if he would in the mean time leave him to the miniſtry of Pipes; and the ſoldier went away for the preſent, in order to pay a ſhort viſit to his uncle, who at that time languiſhed in a declining ſtate of health, promiſing to return at the appointed hour.

The lieutenant, having ſurveyed the diſmal appearance of his friend, could not help being moved at the ſpectacle, and began to upbraid him with his obſtinate pride, which (he ſwore) was no better than ſelf-murder. But the young gentleman interrupted him in the courſe of his moraliſing, by telling him he had reaſons for his conduct, which, perhaps, he would impart in due ſeaſon; but, at preſent, his deſign was to alter that plan of behaviour, and make himſelf ſome amends for the miſery he had undergone. He accordingly ſent Pipes to redeem his clothes from the pawnbroker's wardrobe, and beſpeak ſomething comfortable for dinner. When Godfrey came back, he was very

agreeably ſurpriſed to ſee ſuch a favourable alteration in his externals; for, by the aſſiſtance of his valet, he had purified himſelf from the dregs of his diſtreſs, and now appeared in a decent ſuit, with clean linen, while his face was diſencumbered of the hair that overſhadowed it, and his apartment prepared for the reception of company.

They enjoyed their meal with great ſatisfaction, entertaining one another with a recapitulation of their former adventures at the garriſon. In the afternoon, Gauntlet taking his leave, in order to write a letter to his ſiſter, at the deſire of his uncle, who, finding his end approaching, wanted to ſee her without loſs of time, Peregrine made his appearance on the Bare, and was complimented on his coming abroad again, not only by his old meſs-mates, who had not ſeen him for many weeks, but by a number of thoſe objects whom his liberality had fed, before his funds were exhauſted. Hatchway was, by his intereſt with the warden, put in poſſeſſion of his former quarters, and Pipes diſpatched to make inquiry about Crabtree at his former lodging, where he learned that the miſanthrope, after a very ſevere fit of illneſs, was removed to Kenſington Gravel-pits, for the convenience of breathing a purer air than that of London.

In conſequence of this information, Peregrine, who knew the narrowneſs of the old gentleman's fortune, next day deſired his friend Gauntlet to take the trouble of viſiting him, in his name, with a letter, in which he expreſſed great concern for his indiſpoſition, gave him notice of the fortunate intelligence he had received from the Downs, and conjured him to make uſe of his purſe, if he was in the leaſt hampered in his circumſtances. The captain took coach immediately, and ſet out for the place, according to the direction which Pipes had procured.

Cadwallader, having ſeen him at Bath, knew him again at firſt ſight; and, though reduced to a ſkeleton, believed himſelf in ſuch a fair way of doing well, that he would have accompanied him to the Fleet immediately, had he not been reſtrained by his nurſe, who was, by his phyſician, inveſted with full authority to diſpute and oppoſe his will in every thing that ſhe ſhould think prejudicial to his health; for he was conſidered, by thoſe who had the care of him, as an old humouriſt, not a little diſtempered

in his brain. He inquired particularly about the ſailors, who (he ſaid) had deterred him from carrying on his uſual correſpondence with Pickle, and been the immediate cauſe of his indiſpoſition, by terrifying him into a fever. Underſtanding that the breach between Pickle and Hatchway was happily cemented, and that he was no longer in any danger from the lieutenant's reſentment, he promiſed to be at the Fleet with the firſt convenient opportunity; and, in the mean time, wrote an anſwer to Peregrine's letter, importing, that he was obliged to him for his offer, but had not the leaſt occaſion for his aſſiſtance.

In a few days, our adventurer recovered his vigour, complexion, and vivacity; he mingled again in the diverſions and parties of the place; and he received, in a little time, the money he had lent upon bottomry, which, together with the intereſt, amounted to upwards of eleven hundred pounds. The poſſeſſion of this ſum, while it buoyed up his ſpirits, involved him in perplexity. Sometimes he thought it was incumbent on him, as a man of honour, to employ the greateſt part of it in diminiſhing the debt for which he ſuffered; on the other hand, he conſidered that obligation effaced, by the treacherous behaviour of his creditor, who had injured him to ten times the value of the ſum; and, in theſe ſentiments, entertained thoughts of attempting his eſcape from priſon, with a view of conveying himſelf, with the ſhipwreck of his fortune, to another country, in which he might uſe it to better advantage.

Both ſuggeſtions were attended with ſuch doubts and difficulties, that he heſitated between them, and for the preſent laid out a thouſand pounds in ſtock, the intereſt of which, together with the fruits of his own induſtry, he hoped, would ſupport him above want in his confinement, until ſomething ſhould occur that would point out the expediency of ſome other determination. Gauntlet ſtill inſiſted upon having the honour of obtaining his liberty, at the expence of taking up his notes to Gleanum, and exhorted him to purchaſe a commiſſion with part of the money which he had retrieved. The lieutenant affirmed, that it was his privilege to procure the releaſe of his couſin Pickle, becauſe he enjoyed a very handſome ſum by his aunt, which of right belonged to the young

gentleman, to whom he was, moreover, indebted for the uſe of his furniture, and for the very houſe that ſtood over his head; and that, although he had already made a will in his favour, he ſhould never be ſatisfied, nor eaſy in his mind, ſo long as he remained deprived of his liberty, and wanted any of the conveniencies of life.

Cadwallader, who by this time aſſiſted at their councils, and was beſt acquainted with the peculiarity and unbending diſpoſition of the youth, propoſed, that, ſeeing he was ſo averſe to obligations, Mr. Hatchway ſhould purchaſe of him the garriſon with its appendages, which, at a moderate price, would ſell for more money than would be ſufficient to diſcharge his debts; that, if the ſervile ſubordination of the army did not ſuit his inclinations, he might, with his reverſion, buy a comfortable annuity, and retire with him to the country, where he might live abſolutely independent, and entertain himſelf, as uſual, with the ridiculous characters of mankind.

This plan was to Pickle leſs diſagreeable than any other project which as yet had been ſuggeſted, and the lieutenant declared himſelf ready to execute his part of it without delay; but the ſoldier was mortified at the thoughts of ſeeing his aſſiſtance unneceſſary, and eagerly objected to the retirement, as a ſcheme that would blaſt the faireſt promiſes of fame and fortune, and bury his youth and talents in ſolitude and obſcurity. This earneſt oppoſition on the part of Gauntlet hindered our adventurer from forming any immediate reſolution, which was alſo retarded by his unwillingneſs to part with the garriſon upon any terms, becauſe he looked upon it as a part of his inheritance, which he could not diſpoſe of without committing an inſult upon the memory of the deceaſed commodore.

CHAPTER CIII.

He is engaged in a very extraordinary correſpondence, which is interrupted by a very unexpected event.

WHILE this affair was in agitation, the captain told him, in the courſe of converſation, that Emilia was arrived in

town, and had inquired about Mr. Pickle with ſuch an eagerneſs of concern, as ſeemed to proclaim that ſhe was in ſome meaſure informed of his misfortune; he therefore deſired to know if he might be allowed to make her acquainted with his ſituation, provided he ſhould be again importuned by her on that ſubject, which he had at firſt induſtriouſly waved.

This proof, or rather preſumption, of her ſympathiſing regard, did not fail to operate powerfully upon the boſom of Peregrine, which was immediately filled with thoſe tumults which love, ill ſtifled, frequently excites. He obſerved, that his diſgrace was ſuch as could not be effectually concealed; therefore he ſaw no reaſon for depriving himſelf of Emilia's compaſſion, ſince he was for ever excluded from her affection; and deſired Godfrey to preſent to his ſiſter the lowly reſpects of a deſpairing lover.

But, notwithſtanding his declaration of deſpondence on this head, his imagination involuntarily teemed with more agreeable ideas: The propoſal of Crabtree had taken root in his reflection, and he could not help forming plans of paſtoral felicity in the arms of the lovely Emilia, remote from thoſe pompous ſcenes which he now deteſted and deſpiſed. He amuſed his fancy with the proſpect of being able to ſupport her in a ſtate of independency, by means of the ſlender annuity which it was in his power to purchaſe, together with the fruits of thoſe endeavours which would profitably employ his vacant hours; and foreſaw proviſion for his growing family in the friendſhip of the lieutenant, who had already conſtituted him his heir. He even parcelled out his hours among the neceſſary cares of the world, the pleaſures of domeſtic bliſs, and the enjoyments of a country life; and ſpent the night in ideal parties with his charming bride, ſometimes walking by the ſedgy bank of ſome tranſparent ſtream, ſometimes pruning the luxuriant vine, and ſometimes ſitting in ſocial converſe with her in a ſhady grove of his own planting.

Theſe, however, were no more than the ſhadowy phantoms of imagination, which, he well knew, would never be realized; not that he believed ſuch happineſs unattainable by a perſon in his circumſtances, but becauſe he would not ſtoop to propoſe a ſcheme which

might, in any ſhape, ſeem to interfere with the intereſt of Emilia, or ſubject himſelf to a repulſe from that young lady, who had rejected his addreſſes in the zenith of his fortune.

While he diverted himſelf with theſe agreeable reveries, an unexpected event intervened, in which ſhe and her brother were deeply intereſted. The uncle was tapped for the dropſy, and died in a few days after the operation, having bequeathed, in his will, five thouſand pounds to his nephew, and twice that ſum to his niece, who had always enjoyed the greateſt ſhare of his favour.

If our adventurer, before this occurrence, looked upon his love for Emilia as a paſſion which it was neceſſary, at any rate, to conquer or ſuppreſs, he now conſidered her acceſſion of fortune as a circumſtance which confirmed that neceſſity, and reſolved to diſcourage every thought on that ſubject which ſhould tend to the propagation of hope. One day, in the midſt of a converſation calculated for the purpoſe, Godfrey put into his hand a letter directed to Mr. Pickle, in the hand-writing of Emilia, which the youth no ſooner recognized, than his cheeks were covered with a crimſon dye, and he began to tremble with violent agitation; for he at once gueſſed the import of the billet, which he kiſſed with great reverence and devotion, and was not at all ſurpriſed when he read the following words:

"SIR,

"I HAVE performed a ſufficient ſacrifice to my reputation, in retaining hitherto the appearance of that reſentment which I had long ago diſmiſſed; and as the late favourable change in my ſituation empowers me to avow my genuine ſentiments, without fear of cenſure, or ſuſpicion of mercenary deſign, I take this opportunity to aſſure you, that, if I ſtill maintain that place in your heart which I was vain enough to think I once poſſeſſed, I am willing to make the firſt advances to an accommodation, and have actually furniſhed my brother with full powers to conclude it in the name of your appeaſed

EMILIA."

Pickle, having kiſſed the ſubſcription with great ardour, fell upon his knees, and lifting up his eyes, "Thank

Heaven! (cried he, with an air of tranſport) I have not been miſtaken in my opinion of that generous maid. I believed her inſpired with the moſt dignified and heroic ſentiments, and now ſhe gives me a convincing proof of her magnanimity: It is now my buſineſs to approve myſelf worthy of her regard. May Heaven inflict upon me the keeneſt arrows of its vengeance, if I do not, at this inſtant, contemplate the character of Emilia with the moſt perfect love and adoration; yet, amiable and enchanting as ſhe is, I am, more than ever, determined to ſacrifice the intereſt of my paſſion to my glory, though my life ſhould fail in the conteſt; and even to refuſe an offer, which, otherwiſe, the whole univerſe ſhould not bribe me to forego."

This declaration was not ſo unexpected as unwelcome to his friend Gauntlet, who repreſented that his glory was not at all intereſted in the affair; becauſe he had already vindicated his generoſity in repeated proffers to lay his whole fortune at Emilia's feet, when it was impoſſible that any thing ſelfiſh could enter into the propoſal: But that, in rejecting her preſent purpoſe, he would give the world an opportunity to ſay, that his pride was capricious, his obſtinacy invincible, and his ſiſter would have undeniable reaſon to believe, that either his paſſion for her was diſſembled, or the ardour of it conſiderably abated.

In anſwer to theſe remonſtrances, Pickle obſerved, that he had long ſet the world at defiance; and as to the opinion of Emilia, he did not doubt that ſhe would applaud in her heart the reſolution he had taken, and do juſtice to the purity of his intention.

It was not an eaſy taſk to divert our hero from his deſigns, at any time of life; but, ſince his confinement, his inflexibility was become almoſt inſurmountable. The captain, therefore, after having diſcharged his conſcience, in aſſuring him that his ſiſter's happineſs was at ſtake, that his mother had approved of the ſtep ſhe had taken, and that he himſelf ſhould be extremely mortified at his refuſal, forbore to preſs him with further argument, which ſerved only to rivet him the more ſtrongly in his own opinion; and undertook to deliver this anſwer to Emilia's letter.

"MADAM,

"THAT I revere the dignity of your virtue with the utmoſt veneration, and love you infinitely more than life, I am at all times ready to demonſtrate; but the ſacrifice to honour, it is now my turn to pay; and ſuch is the rigour of my deſtiny, that, in order to juſtify your generoſity, I muſt refuſe to profit by your condeſcenſion. Madam, I am doomed to be for ever wretched; and to ſigh without ceaſing, for the poſſeſſion of that jewel, which, though now in my offer, I dare not enjoy. I ſhall not pretend to expreſs the anguiſh that tears my heart, whilſt I communicate this fatal renunciation; but appeal to the delicacy of your own ſentiments, which can judge of my ſufferings, and will, doubtleſs, do juſtice to the ſelf-denial of your forlorn

P. PICKLE."

Emilia, who knew the nicety of our hero's pride, had foreſeen the purport of this epiſtle before it came to her hands; ſhe did not therefore deſpair of ſucceſs, nor deſiſt from the proſecution of her plan, which was no other than that of ſecuring her own happineſs, in eſpouſing the man upon whom ſhe had fixed her unalterable affection. Confident of his honour, and fully ſatisfied of the mutual paſſion with which they were inſpired, ſhe gradually decoyed him into a literary correſpondence, wherein ſhe attempted to refute the arguments on which he grounded his refuſal; and, without doubt, the young gentleman was not a little pleaſed with the enjoyment of ſuch delightful commerce, in the courſe of which he had (more than ever) an opportunity of admiring the poignancy of her wit, and the elegance of her underſtanding.

The contemplation of ſuch excellency, while it ſtrengthened the chains with which ſhe held him enſlaved, added emulation to the other motives that induced him to maintain the diſpute; and much ſubtlety of reaſoning was expended upon both ſides of this very particular queſtion, without any proſpect of conviction on either part; till at laſt ſhe began to deſpair of making him a proſelyte to her opinion by dint of argument; and reſolved, for the future, to apply herſelf chiefly to the irreſiſtible prepoſſeſſions of his love, which were not at all diminiſhed or im-

paired by the eſſays of her pen. With this view ſhe propoſed a conference, pretending that it was impoſſible to convey all her reflections upon this ſubject, in a ſeries of ſhort letters; and Godfrey undertook to bail him for the day: But, conſcious of her power, he would not truſt himſelf in her preſence, though his heart throbbed with all the eagerneſs of deſire to ſee her fair eyes diſrobed of that reſentment which they had wore ſo long, and to enjoy the raviſhing ſweets of a fond reconciliation.

Nature could not have held out againſt ſuch powerful attacks, had not the pride and caprice of his diſpoſition been gratified to the full in the triumph of his reſiſtance; he looked upon the conteſt as altogether original, and perſevered with obſtinacy, becauſe he thought himſelf ſure of favourable terms, whenever he ſhould be diſpoſed to capitulate. Perhaps he might have overſhot himſelf, in the courſe of his perſeverance: A young lady of Emilia's fortune and attractions could not fail to find herſelf ſurrounded by temptations, which few women can reſiſt. She might have miſinterpreted the meaning of ſome paragraph, or taken umbrage at an unguarded expreſſion in one of Peregrine's letters: She might have been tired out by his obſtinate peculiarity, or, at the long-run, conſtrued it into madneſs, ſlight, or indifference; or, rather than waſte her prime in fruitleſs endeavours to ſubdue the pride of an headſtrong humouriſt, ſhe might have liſtened to the voice of ſome admirer, fraught with qualifications ſufficient to engage her eſteem and affection. But all theſe poſſibilities were providentially prevented by an accident attended with more important conſequences than any we have hitherto recounted.

Early one morning Pipes was diſturbed by the arrival of a meſſenger, who had been ſent expreſs from the country by Mr. Clover, with a packet for the lieutenant, and arrived in town over night; but as he was obliged to have recourſe to the information of Jack's correſpondent in the city, touching the place of his abode, before he demanded entrance at the Fleet the gate was ſhut; nor would the turnkeys admit him, although he told them that he was charged with a meſſage of the utmoſt conſequence; ſo that he was fain to tarry till day-break, when he, at his earneſt ſolicitation, was allowed to enter.

Hatchway, opening the packet, found a letter enclosed for Perigrine, with an earneſt requeſt, that he ſhould forward it to the hands of that young gentleman with all poſſible diſpatch. Jack, who could not dive into the meaning of this extraordinary injunction, began to imagine that Mrs. Clover lay at the point of death, and wanted to take her laſt farewel of her brother; and this conceit worked ſo ſtrongly upon his imagination, that, while he huddled on his clothes, and made the beſt of his way to the apartment of our hero, he could not help curſing, within himſelf, the folly of the huſband, in ſending ſuch diſagreeable meſſages to a man of Peregrine's impatient temper, already ſoured by his own uneaſy ſituation.

This reflection would have induced him to ſuppreſs the letter, had not he been afraid to tamper with the ticklish diſpoſition of his friend, to whom, while he delivered it, "As for my own part (ſaid he), mayhap I may have as much natural affection as another; but, when my ſpouſe parted, I bore my misfortune like a Britiſh man and a Chriſtian: For why? he's no better than a freſh-water ſailor, who knows not how to ſtem the current of miſchance."

Pickle being waked from a pleaſant dream, in which the fair Emilia was principally concerned, and hearing this ſtrange preamble, ſat up in his bed, and unſealed the letter, in a ſtate of mortification and diſguſt: But what were the emotions of his ſoul, when he read the following intimation!

"DEAR BROTHER,

"IT hath pleaſed God to take your father ſuddenly off by a fit of apoplexy; and as he has died inteſtate, I give you this notice, that you may, with all ſpeed, come down and take poſſeſſion of your right, in deſpite of Maſter Gam and his mother, who, you may be ſure, do not ſit eaſy under this unexpected diſpenſation of providence. I have, by virtue of being a juſtice of the peace, taken ſuch precautions as I thought neceſſary for your advantage; and the funeral ſhall be deferred until your pleaſure be known. Your ſiſter, though ſincerely afflicted by her father's fate, ſubmits to the will of Heaven with laudable reſignation,

and begs you will ſet out for this place without delay; in which requeſt ſhe is joined by, Sir,

Your affectionate brother, and
Humble ſervant,
CHARLES CLOVER."

Peregrine at firſt looked upon this epiſtle as a mere illuſion of the brain, and a continuation of the reverie in which he had been engaged. He read it ten times over, without being perſuaded that he was actually awake: He rubbed his eyes, and ſhook his head, in order to ſhake off the drowſy vapours that ſurrounded him: He hemmed thrice with great vociferation, ſnapped his fingers, tweaked his noſe, ſtarted up from his bed, and, opening the caſement, took a ſurvey of the well-known objects that appeared on each ſide of his habitation. Every thing ſeemed congruous and connected, and he ſaid within himſelf, "Sure this is the moſt diſtinct dream that ever ſleep produced." Then he had recourſe again to the paper, which he carefully peruſed, without finding any variation from his firſt notion of the contents.

Hatchway, ſeeing all his extravagances of action, accompanied with a wild ſtare of diſtraction, began to believe that his head was at length fairly turned, and was really meditating means for ſecuring his perſon, when Pickle, in a tone of ſurpriſe, exclaimed, "Good God! am I or am I not awake?" "Why, look ye, couſin Pickle (replied the lieutenant), that is a queſtion which the deep ſea line of my underſtanding is not long enough to ſound; but howſomever, tho'f I can't truſt to the obſervation I have taken, it ſhall go hard but I will fall upon a way to gueſs whereabouts we are." So ſaying, he lifted up a pitcher full of cold water, that ſtood behind the outward door, and diſcharged it in the face of Peregrine without ceremony or heſitation.

This remedy produced the deſired effect: Unpalatable as it was, the young gentleman no ſooner recovered his breath, which was endangered by ſuch a ſudden application, than he thanked his friend Jack for the ſeaſonable operation he had performed. Having no longer any juſt reaſon to doubt the reality of what appeared ſo convincingly to his ſenſes, he ſhifted himſelf on the inſtant, not

without hurry and trepidation; and putting on his morning dreſs, ſallied forth to the Bare, in order to deliberate with himſelf on the important intelligence he had received.

Hatchway, not yet fully convinced of his ſanity, and curious to know the purport of the letter, which had affected him in ſuch an extraordinary manner, carefully attended his footſteps in this excurſion, in hope of being favoured with his confidence, in the courſe of their perambulation. Our hero no ſooner appeared at the ſtreet-door, than he was ſaluted by the meſſenger, who having poſted himſelf in the way for that purpoſe, "God bleſs your noble honour, Squire Pickle (cried he), and give you joy of ſucceeding to your father's eſtate." Theſe words had ſcarce proceeded from his mouth, when the lieutenant hopping eagerly towards the countryman, ſqueezed his hand with great affection, and aſked if the old gentleman had actually taken his departure: "Ay, Maſter Hatchway (replied the other), in ſuch a woundy haſte, that he forgot to make a will." "Body of me! (exclaimed the ſeaman) theſe are the beſt tidings I have ever heard ſince I firſt went to ſea. Here, my lad, take my purſe, and ſtow thyſelf chock full of the beſt liquor in the land." So ſaying, he tipped the peaſant with ten pieces, and immediately the whole place echoed with the ſound of Tom's inſtrument. Peregrine, repairing to the walk, communicated the billet to his honeſt friend, who at his deſire went forthwith to the lodgings of Captain Gauntlet, and returned in leſs than half an hour with that gentleman, who (I need not ſay) was heartily rejoiced at the occaſion.

CHAPTER CIV.

Peregrine holds a conſultation with his friends, in conſequence of which he bids adieu to the Fleet. He arrives at his father's houſe, and aſſerts his right of inheritance.

NOR did our hero keep the miſanthrope in ignorance of this happy turn of fortune: Pipes was diſpatched to the

ſenior, with a meſſage requeſting his immediate preſence; and he accordingly appeared, in obedience to the ſummons, growling with diſcontent, for having been deprived of ſeveral hours of his natural reſt. His mouth was immediately ſtopped with the letter, at which he *ſmiled horrible a ghaſtly grin;* and, after a compliment of gratulation, they entered into cloſe divan, about the meaſures to be taken in conſequence of this event.

There was no room for much debate: It was unanimouſly agreed, that Pickle ſhould ſet out with all poſſible diſpatch for the garriſon, to which Gauntlet and Hatchway reſolved to attend him. Pipes was accordingly ordered to prepare a couple of poſt chaiſes, while Godfrey went to procure bail for his friend, and provide them with money for the expence of the expedition, but not before he was deſired by Peregrine to conceal this piece of news from his ſiſter, that our youth might have an opportunity to ſurpriſe her in a more intereſting manner, after he ſhould have ſettled his affairs.

All theſe previous ſteps being taken, in leſs than an hour, our hero took his leave of the Fleet, after he had left twenty guineas with the warden for the relief of the poor priſoners, a great number of whom convoyed him to the gate, pouring forth prayers for his long life and proſperity; and he took the road to the garriſon, in the moſt elevated tranſports of joy, unallayed with the leaſt mixture of grief at the death of a parent whoſe paternal tenderneſs he had never known. His breaſt was abſolutely a ſtranger to that boaſted Στοργη, or inſtinct of affection, by which the charities are ſuppoſed to ſubſiſt.

Of all the journeys he had ever made, this, ſure, was the moſt delightful: He felt all the ecſtaſy that muſt naturally be produced in a young man of his imagination, from ſuch a ſudden tranſition in point of circumſtance; he found himſelf delivered from confinement and diſgrace, without being obliged to any perſon upon earth for his deliverance; he had it now in his power to retort the contempt of the world in a manner ſuited to his moſt ſanguine wiſh; he was reconciled to his friend, and enabled to gratify his love, even upon his own terms; and ſaw himſelf in poſſeſſion of a fortune more ample than

his firſt inheritance, with a ſtock of experience that would ſteer him clear of all thoſe quickſands among which he had been formerly wrecked.

In the middle of their journey, while they halted at an inn for a ſhort refreſhment and change of horſes, a poſtilion running up to Peregrine in the yard, fell at his feet, claſped his knees with great eagerneſs and agitation, and preſented to him the individual face of his old valet de chambre. The youth perceiving him in ſuch an abject garb and attitude, commanded him to riſe and tell the cauſe of ſuch a miſerable reverſe in his fortune. Upon which Hadgi gave him to underſtand, that he had been ruined by his wife, who, having robbed him of all his caſh and valuable effects, had eloped from his houſe with one of his own cuſtomers, who appeared in the character of a French count, but was in reality no other than an Italian fiddler; that, in conſequence of this retreat, he (the huſband) was diſabled from paying a conſiderable ſum which he had ſet apart for his wine merchant, who being diſappointed in his expectation, took out an execution againſt his effects; and the reſt of his creditors following his example, hunted him out of houſe and home: So that, finding his perſon in danger at London, he had been obliged to eſcape into the country, ſkulking about from one village to another, till, being quite deſtitute of all ſupport, he had undertaken his preſent office, to ſave himſelf from ſtarving.

Peregrine liſtened with compaſſion to his lamentable tale, which too well accounted for his not appearing in the Fleet, with offers of ſervice to his maſter in diſtreſs, a circumſtance that Pickle had all along imputed to his avarice and ingratitude. He aſſured him, that, as he had been the means of throwing in his way the temptation to which he fell a ſacrifice, he would charge himſelf with the retrieval of his affairs: In the mean time, he made him taſte of his bounty, and deſired him to continue in his preſent employment, until he ſhould return from the garriſon, when he would conſider his ſituation, and do ſomething for his immediate relief.

Hadgi attempted to kiſs his ſhoe, and wept, or affected to weep, with ſenſibility, at this gracious reception; he even made a merit of his unwillingneſs to exerciſe his

new occupation, and earneſtly begged that he might be allowed to give immediate attendance upon his dear maſter, from whom he could not bear the thoughts of a ſecond parting. His entreaties were reinforced by the interceſſion of his two friends, in conſequence of which the Swiſs was permitted to follow them at his own leiſure, while they ſet forwards after a ſlight repaſt, and reached the place of their deſtination before ten o'clock at night.

Peregrine, inſtead of alighting at the garriſon, rode ſtraightway to his father's houſe; and no perſon appearing to receive him, not even a ſervant to take care of his chaiſe, he diſmounted without aſſiſtance. Being followed by his two friends, he advanced into the hall, where perceiving a bell-rope, he made immediate application to it, in ſuch a manner as brought a couple of footmen into his preſence. After having reprimanded them, with a ſtern look, for their neglect in point of attendance, he commanded them to ſhow him into an apartment; and as they ſeemed unwilling to yield obedience to his orders, aſked if they did not belong to the family?

One of them, who took upon himſelf the office of ſpokeſman, replied with a ſullen air, that they had been in the ſervice of old Mr. Pickle, and now that he was dead, thought themſelves bound to obey no body but their lady, and her ſon Mr. Gamaliel. This declaration had ſcarce proceeded from his mouth, when our hero gave them to underſtand, that ſince they were not diſpoſed to own any other maſter, they muſt change their quarters immediately. He ordered them to decamp without further preparation; and as they ſtill continued reſtive, they were kicked out of doors by the captain and his friend Hatchway. Squire Gam, who overheard every thing that paſſed, and was now more than ever inflamed with that rancour which he had ſucked with his mother's milk, flew to the aſſiſtance of his adherents, with a piſtol in each hand, bellowing *Thieves! thieves!* with great vociferation, as if he had miſtaken the buſineſs of the ſtrangers, and actually believed himſelf in danger of being robbed. Under this pretence he diſcharged a piece at his brother, who luckily eſcaped the ſhot, cloſed with him in a moment, and wreſting the other piſtol from his

gripe, turned him out into the court yard, to the conſolation of his two dependents.

By this time, Pipes and the two poſtilions had taken poſſeſſion of the ſtables, without being oppoſed by the coachman and his deputy, who quietly ſubmitted to the authority of their new ſovereign: But the noiſe of the piſtol had alarmed Mrs. Pickle, who, running down ſtairs, with the moſt frantic appearance, attended by two maids and the curate, who ſtill maintained his place of chaplain and ghoſtly director in the family, would have aſſaulted our hero with her nails, had not ſhe been reſtrained by her attendants. Though they prevented her from uſing her hands, they could not hinder her from exerciſing her tongue, which ſhe wagged againſt him with all the virulence of malice. She aſked, if he was come to butcher his brother, to inſult his father's corpſe, and triumph in her affliction; ſhe beſtowed upon him the epithets of ſpendthrift, jail-bird, and unnatural ruffian; ſhe begged pardon of God for having brought ſuch a monſter into the world, accuſed him of having brought his father's gray hairs with ſorrow to the grave; and affirmed, that, were he to touch the body, it would bleed at his approach.

Without pretending to refute the articles of this ridiculous charge, he allowed her to ring out her alarm; and then calmly replied, that if ſhe did not quietly retire to her chamber, and behave as became a perſon in her preſent ſituation, he ſhould inſiſt upon her removing to another lodging without delay; for he was determined to be maſter in his own family. The lady, who, in all probability, expected that he would endeavour to appeaſe her with all the tenderneſs of filial ſubmiſſion, was ſo much exaſperated at his cavalier behaviour, that her conſtitution could not ſupport the tranſports of her ſpirits; and ſhe was carried off by her women in a fit, while the officious clergyman was diſmiſſed after his pupil, with all the circumſtances of diſgrace.

Our hero having thus made his quarters good, took poſſeſſion of the beſt apartment in the houſe, and ſent notice of his arrival to Mr. Clover, who, with his wife, viſited him in leſs than an hour, and was not a little ſurpriſed to find him ſo ſuddenly ſettled in his father's houſe.

The meeting of Julia and her brother was extremely pathetic. She had always loved him with uncommon tenderneſs, and looked upon him as the ornament of her family; but ſhe had heard of his extravagancies with regret, and though ſhe conſidered the ſtories that were circulated at his expence, as the malicious exaggerations of his mother and her darling ſon, her apprehenſion had been grievouſly alarmed by an account of his impriſonment and diſtreſs, which had been accidentally conveyed to that country by a gentleman from London, who had been formerly of his acquaintance; ſhe could not, therefore, without the moſt tender emotions of joy, ſee him, as it were, reſtored to his rightful inheritance, and re-eſtabliſhed in that ſtation of life which ſhe thought he could fill with dignity and importance.

After their mutual expreſſions of affection, ſhe retired to her mother's chamber, with a view to make a ſecond offer of her ſervice and attendance, which had been already rejected with ſcorn ſince her father's death; while Peregrine conſulted his brother-in-law about the affairs of the family, ſo far as they had fallen within his cognizance and obſervation.

Mr. Clover told him, that, though he was never favoured with the confidence of the defunct, he knew ſome of his intimates, who had been tampered with by Mrs. Pickle, and even engaged to ſecond the remonſtrances by which ſhe had often endeavoured to perſuade her huſband to ſettle his affairs by a formal will; but that he had from time to time evaded their importunities with ſurpriſing excuſes of procraſtination, that plainly appeared to be the reſult of invention and deſign, far above the ſuppoſed pitch of his capacity; a circumſtance from which Mr. Clover concluded, that the old gentleman imagined his life would not have been ſecure, had he once taken ſuch a ſtep as would have rendered it unneceſſary to the independence of his ſecond ſon. He moreover obſerved, that, in conſequence of this information, he no ſooner heard of Mr. Pickle's death, which happened at the club, than he went directly with a lawyer to his houſe, before any cabal or conſpiracy could be formed againſt the rightful heir; and, in preſence of witneſſes provided for the purpoſe, ſealed up all the papers of the

deceaſed, after the widow had, in the firſt tranſports of her ſorrow and vexation, fairly owned, that her huſband had died inteſtate.

Peregrine was extremely well ſatisfied with this intelligence, by which all his doubts were diſpelled; and having cheerfully ſupped with his friends on a cold collation, which his brother-in-law had brought in his chariot, they retired to reſt, in different chambers, after Julia had met with another repulſe from her capricious mother, whoſe overflowing rage had now ſubſided into the former channel of calm inveteracy.

Next morning the houſe was ſupplied with ſome ſervants from the garriſon, and preparations were made for the funeral of the deceaſed. Gam having taken lodgings in the neighbourhood, came with a chaiſe and cart to demand his mother, together with his own clothes, and her perſonal effects.

Our hero, though he would not ſuffer him to enter the door, allowed his propoſal to be communicated to the widow, who eagerly embraced the opportunity of removing, and was, with her own baggage, and that of her beloved ſon, conveyed to the place which he had prepared for her reception. Thither ſhe was followed by her woman, who was deſired by Peregrine to aſſure her miſtreſs, that until a regular proviſion could be ſettled upon her, ſhe might command him, in point of money, or any other accommodation in his power.

CHAPTER CV.

He performs the laſt offices to his father, and returns to London, upon a very intereſting deſign.

SUITS of mourning being provided for himſelf, his friends and adherents, and every other previous meaſure taken ſuitable to the occaſion, his father was interred, in a private manner, in the pariſh church; and his papers being examined, in preſence of many perſons of honour and integrity, invited for that purpoſe, no will was found, or any other deed, in favour of the ſecond ſon, though it

appeared by the marriage ſettlement, that the widow was entitled to a jointure of five hundred pounds a-year. The reſt of his papers conſiſted of Eaſt India bonds, South Sea annuities, mortgages, notes, and aſſignments, to the amount of fourſcore thouſand ſeven hundred and ſixty pounds, excluſive of the houſe, plate and furniture, horſes, equipage and cattle, with the garden and park adjacent, to a very conſiderable extent.

This was a ſum that even exceeded his expectation, and could not fail to entertain his fancy with the moſt agreeable ideas. He found himſelf immediately a man of vaſt conſequence among his country neighbours, who viſited him with compliments of congratulation, and treated him with ſuch reſpect as would have effectually ſpoiled any young man of his diſpoſition, who had not the ſame advantages of experience as he had already purchaſed at a very extravagant price. Thus ſhielded with caution, he bore his proſperity with ſurpriſing temperance; every body was charmed with his affability and moderation. When he made a circuit round the gentlemen of the diſtrict, in order to repay the courteſy which he owed, he was careſſed by them with uncommon aſſiduity, and adviſed to offer himſelf as a candidate for the county at the next election, which, they ſuppoſed, would ſoon happen, becauſe the preſent member was in a declining ſtate of health. Nor did his perſon and addreſs eſcape unheeded by the ladies, many of whom did not ſcruple to ſpread their attractions before him, with a view of captivating ſuch a valuable prize; nay, ſuch an impreſſion did this legacy make upon a certain peer, who reſided in this part of the country, that he cultivated Pickle's acquaintance with great eagerneſs, and, without circumlocution, offered to him in marriage his only daughter, with a very conſiderable fortune.

Our hero expreſſed himſelf upon this occaſion as became a man of honour, ſenſibility, and politeneſs; and frankly gave his lordſhip to underſtand, that his heart was already engaged. He was pleaſed with the opportunity of making ſuch a ſacrifice to his paſſion for Emilia, which, by this time, inflamed his thoughts to ſuch a degree of impatience, that he reſolved to depart for London with all poſſible ſpeed; and for that purpoſe induſtriouſly employ-

ed almoſt every hour of his time in regulating his domeſtic affairs. He paid off all his father's ſervants, and hired others, at the recommendation of his ſiſter, who promiſed to ſuperintend his houſehold in his abſence: He advanced the firſt half-yearly payment of his mother's jointure; and as for his brother Gam, he gave him divers opportunities of acknowledging his faults, ſo as that he might have anſwered to his own conſcience for taking any ſtep in his favour; but that young gentleman was not yet ſufficiently humbled by misfortune, and not only forbore to make any overtures of peace, but alſo took all occaſions to ſlander the conduct and revile the perſon of our hero, being, in this practice, comforted and abetted by his righteous mamma.

Every thing being thus ſettled for the preſent, the triumvirate ſet out on their return to town in the ſame manner with that in which they had arrived in the country, except in this ſmall variation, that Hatchway's chaiſe-companion was now the valet de chambre refitted, inſtead of Pipes, who, with another lacquey, attended them on horſeback. When they had performed two thirds of their way to London, they chanced to overtake a country ſquire, on his return from a viſit to one of his neighbours, who had entertained him with ſuch hoſpitality, that (as the lieutenant obſerved), he rolled himſelf almoſt gunwale to every motion of his horſe, which was a fine hunter; and when the chaiſes paſſed him at full ſpeed, he ſet up the ſportman's hollow, in a voice that ſounded like a French horn, clapping ſpurs to Sorrel at the ſame time, in order to keep up with the pace of the machine.

Peregrine, who was animated with an uncommon flow of ſpirits, ordered his poſtilion to proceed more ſoftly; and entered into converſation with the ſtranger, touching the make and mettle of his horſe, upon which he deſcanted with ſo much learning, that the ſquire was aſtoniſhed at his knowledge. When they approached his habitation, he invited the young gentleman and his company to halt, and drink a bottle of his ale; and was ſo preſſing in his ſolicitation, that they complied with his requeſt. He accordingly conducted them through a ſpacious avenue, that extended as far as the highway, to the gate of a large *chateau*, of a moſt noble and venerable appearance, which in-

duced them to alight and view the apartments, contrary to their firſt intention of drinking a glaſs of his October at the door.

The rooms were every way ſuitable to the magnificence of the outſide, and our hero imagined they had made a tour through the whole ſweep, when the landlord gave him to underſtand that they had not yet ſeen the beſt apartment of the houſe, and immediately led them into a ſpacious dining-room, which Peregrine did not enter without giving manifeſt ſigns of uncommon aſtoniſhment. The pannels all round were covered with portraits at full length, by Vandyke; and not one of them appeared without a ridiculous tye periwig, in the ſtyle of thoſe that uſually hang over the ſhops of two-penny barbers. The ſtrait boots in which the figures had been originally painted, and the other circumſtances of attitude and drapery, ſo inconſiſtent with this monſtrous furniture of the head, exhibited ſuch a ludicrous appearance, that Pickle's wonder, in a little time, gave way to his mirth, and he was ſeized with a violent fit of laughter, which had well nigh deprived him of his breath.

The ſquire, half pleaſed and half offended at this expreſſion of ridicule, "I know (ſaid he), what makes you laugh ſo woefully; You think it ſtrange to zee my vore-fathers booted and ſpurred, with huge three-tailed periwigs on their pates. The truth of the matter is this: I could not abide to zee the pictures of my vamily with a parcel of looſe hair hanging about their eyes, like zo many colts; and zo I employed a painter vellow from Lundon to clap decent periwigs upon their ſkulls, at the rate of vive ſhillings a head, and offered him three ſhillings apiece to furniſh each with an handſome pair of ſhoes and ſtockings: But the raſcal, thinking I muſt have 'em done at any price after their heads were covered, haggled with me for vour ſhillings a picture; and zo, rather than be impoſed upon, I turned him off, and ſhall let 'em ſtand as they are, till zome more reaſonable brother of the bruſh comes round the country."

Pickle commended his reſolution, though, in his heart, he bleſſed himſelf from ſuch a barbarous Goth; and, after they had diſpatched two or three bottles of his beer, they

ful, and, ſaluting Mrs. Gauntlet, aſked pardon for his neglect; obſerving that ſuch rudeneſs was excuſable, conſidering the long and unhappy exile which he had ſuffered from the jewel of his ſoul.—Then turning to Emilia, "I am come, Madam (ſaid he), to claim the performance of your promiſe, which I can produce under your own fair hand: You may, therefore, lay aſide all ſuperfluous ceremony and ſhyneſs, and crown my happineſs without farther delay; for, upon my ſoul! my thoughts are wound up to the laſt pitch of expectation, and I ſhall certainly run diſtracted, if I am doomed to any term of probation."

His miſtreſs having by this time recollected herſelf, replied, with a moſt exhilarating ſmile, "I ought to puniſh you for your obſtinacy with the mortification of a twelvemonth's trial; but it is dangerous to tamper with an admirer of your diſpoſition, and therefore, I think, I muſt make ſure of you while it is in my power." "You are willing then to take me for better for worſe, in preſence of heaven and theſe witneſſes?" cried Peregrine kneeling, and applying her hand to his lips. At this interrogation, her features ſoftened into an amazing expreſſion of condeſcending love; and, while ſhe darted a ſide-glance that thrilled to his marrow, and heaved a ſigh more ſoft then Zephyr's balmy wing, her anſwer was, "Why—ay—— and heaven grant me patience to bear the humours of ſuch a yoke-fellow." "And may the ſame powers (replied the youth), grant me life and opportunity to manifeſt the immenſity of my love.—Meanwhile, I have eighty thouſand pounds, which ſhall be laid immediately in your lap."

So ſaying, he ſealed the contract upon her lips, and explained the myſtery of his laſt words, which had begun to operate upon the wonder of the two ſiſters. Sophy was agreeably ſurpriſed with the account of his good fortune; nor was it, in all probability, unacceptable to the lovely Emilia; though, from this information, ſhe took an opportunity to upbraid her admirer with the inflexibility of his pride, which (ſhe ſcrupled not to ſay), would have baffled all the ſuggeſtions of his paſſion, had it not been gratified by this providential event.

Matters being thus happily matured, the lover begged that immediate recourſe might be had to the church, and

his happineſs aſcertained before night. But the bride objected with great vehemence to ſuch precipitation, being deſirous of her mother's preſence at the ceremony; and ſhe was ſeconded in her opinion by her brother's wife. Peregrine, maddening with deſire, aſſaulted her with the moſt earneſt entreaties, repreſenting, that, as her mother's conſent was already obtained, there was ſurely no neceſſity for a delay, that muſt infallibly make a dangerous impreſſion upon his brain and conſtitution. He fell at her feet, in all the agony of impatience; ſwore that his life and intellects would actually be in jeopardy by her refuſal; and, when ſhe attempted to argue him out of his demand, began to rave with ſuch extravagance, that Sophy was frightened into conviction; and Godfrey enforcing the remonſtrances of his friend, the amiable Emilia was teized into compliance.

After breakfaſt the bridegroom and his companion ſet out for the Commons for a licence, having firſt agreed upon the houſe at which the ceremony ſhould be performed, in the lodgings of the bride; and the permiſſion being obtained, they found means to engage a clergyman, who undertook to attend them at their own time and place. Then a ring was purchaſed for the occaſion; and they went in ſearch of the lieutenant, with whom they dined at a tavern, and not only made him acquainted with the ſteps they had taken, but deſired that he would ſtand godfather to the bride: An employment which Jack accepted with demonſtrations of particular ſatisfaction; till chancing to look into the ſtreet, and ſeeing Cadwallader approach the door, in conſequence of a meſſage they had ſent to him by Pipes, he declined the office in favour of the ſenior; who was accordingly ordained for that purpoſe, on the ſuppoſition that ſuch a mark of regard might facilitate his concurrence with a match, which otherwiſe he would certainly oppoſe, as he was a profeſſed enemy to wedlock, and, as yet, ignorant of Peregrine's intention.

After having congratulated Pickle upon his ſucceſſion, and ſhook his two friends by the hand, the miſanthrope aſked whoſe mare was dead, that he was ſummoned in ſuch a plaguy hurry from his dinner, which he had been fain to gobble up like a cannibal? Our hero gave him to

underſtand, that they had made an appointment to drink tea with two agreeable ladies, and were unwilling that he ſhould loſe the opportunity of enjoying an entertainment which he loved ſo much.—Crabtree, ſhrivelling up his face like an autumn leaf at this intimation, curſed his complaiſance, and ſwore they ſhould keep their aſſignation without him; for he and letchery had ſhook hands many years ago.

The bridegroom, however, likening him unto an old coachman, who ſtill delights in the ſmack of the whip, and dropping ſome flattering hints of his manhood, even at theſe years, he was gradually prevailed upon to accompany them to the place of rendezvous; where, being uſhered into a dining-room, they had not waited three minutes, when they were joined by the parſon, who had obſerved the hour with great punctuality.

This gentleman no ſooner entered the room, than Cadwallader, in a whiſper to Gauntlet, aſked if that was not the cock-bawd; and, before the captain could make any reply, "What an unconſcionable whoremaſter the rogue is! (ſaid he), ſcarce diſcharged from confinement, and ſweetened with a little freſh air, when he wenches with a pimp in canonicals in his pay."—The door again opened, and Emilia broke in upon them, with ſuch dignity of mien, and divinity of aſpect, as inſpired every ſpectator with aſtoniſhment and admiration. The lieutenant, who had not ſeen her ſince her charms were ripened into ſuch perfection, expreſſed his wonder and approbation in an exclamation of "Add's zooks! what a glorious galley!" and the miſanthorpe's viſage was inſtantly metamorphoſed into the face of a mountain goat. He licked his lips inſtinctively, ſnuffed the air, and ſquinted with a moſt horrible obliquity of viſion.

The bride and her ſiſter being ſeated, and Hatchway having renewed his acquaintance with the former, who recogniſed him with particular civility, Peregrine withdrew into another apartment with his friend Crabtree, to whom he imparted the deſign of this meeting; which the latter no ſooner underſtood, than he attempted to retreat, without making any other reply than that of "Pſhaw! rot your matrimony! can't you put your neck in the nooſe, without my being a witneſs of your folly?"

The young gentleman, in order to vanquiſh this averſion, ſtepped to the door of the next room, and begged the favour of ſpeaking with Emilia, to whom he introduced the teſty old bachelor, as one of his particular friends, who deſired to have the honour of giving her away. The bewitching ſmile with which ſhe received his ſalute, and granted his requeſt, at once overcame the diſapprobation of the miſanthrope, who, with a relaxation in his countenance, which had never been perceived before that inſtant, thanked her in the moſt polite terms for ſuch an agreeable mark of diſtinction. He accordingly led her into the dining-room, where the ceremony was performed without delay; and after the huſband had aſſerted his prerogative on her lips, the whole company ſaluted her by the name of Mrs. Pickle.

I ſhall leave the ſenſible reader to judge what paſſed at this juncture, within the boſoms of the new-married couple: Peregrine's heart was fired with inexpreſſible ardour and impatience; while the tranſports of the bride were mingled with a daſh of diffidence and apprehenſion. Gauntlet ſaw it would be too much for both, to bear their preſent tantalizing ſituation till night, without ſome amuſement to diverge their thoughts; and therefore propoſed to paſs part of the evening at the public entertainments in Marybone-gardens, which were at that time frequented by the beſt company in town. The ſcheme was reliſhed by the diſcreet Sophy, who ſaw the meaning of the propoſal, and the bride ſubmitted to the perſuaſion of her ſiſter; ſo that, after tea, two coaches were called, and Peregrine was forcibly ſeparated from his charmer during the conveyance.

The new-married couple and their company having made ſhift to ſpend the evening, and ſupped on a ſlight collation in one of the boxes, Peregrine's patience was almoſt quite exhauſted; and taking Godfrey aſide, he imparted his intention to withdraw in private from the ſea-wit of his friend Hatchway, who would otherwiſe retard his bliſs with unſeaſonable impediments, which, at preſent, he could not poſſibly bear. Gauntlet, who ſympathized with his impatience, undertook to intoxicate the lieutenant with bumpers to the joy of the bride, and, in the mean time, deſired Sophy to retire with his ſiſter,

From her habitation they proceeded homewards at an eaſy pace, and, amidſt the acclamations of the whole pariſh, entered their own houſe, where Emilia was received in the moſt tender manner by Mr. Clover's wife, who had provided every thing for her eaſe and accommodation, and, next day, ſurrendered unto her the management of her own houſehold affairs.

END OF PEREGRINE PICKLE.

Sophy, bluſhing like Aurora or the goddeſs of health, and ſending forth emanations of beauty unparalleled: She was complimented upon her change of ſituation by all preſent, and by none more warmly than by old Crabtree, who declared himſelf ſo well ſatisfied with his friend's fortune, as to be almoſt reconciled to that inſtitution, againſt which he had declaimed during the beſt part of his life.

An expreſs was immediately diſpatched to Mrs. Gauntlet, with an account of her daughter's marriage; a townhouſe was hired, and a handſome equipage ſet up, in which the new-married pair appeared at all public places, to the aſtoniſhment of our adventurer's fair-weather friends, and the admiration of all the world: For, in point of figure, ſuch another couple was not to be found in the whole united kingdom. Envy deſpaired, and detraction was ſtruck dumb, when our hero's new acceſſion of fortune was conſigned to the celebration of public fame: Emilia attracted the notice of all obſervers, from the pert Templar to the Sovereign himſelf, who was pleaſed to beſtow encomiums upon the excellence of her beauty. Many perſons of conſequence, who had dropped the acquaintance of Peregrine in the beginning of his decline, now made open efforts to cultivate his friendſhip anew; but he diſcouraged all theſe advances with the moſt mortifying diſdain; and one day when the nobleman, whom he had formerly obliged, came up to him in the drawing room, with the ſalutation of "Your ſervant Mr. Pickle," he eyed him with a look of ineffable contempt, ſaying, "I ſuppoſe your lordſhip is miſtaken in your man," and turned his head another way, in preſence of the whole court.

When he had made a circuit round all the places frequented by the beau-monde, to the utter confuſion of thoſe againſt whom his reſentment was kindled, paid off his debts, and ſettled his money-matters in town, Hatchway was diſmiſſed to the country, in order to prepare for the reception of his fair Emilia. In a few days after his departure the whole company (Cadwallader himſelf included) ſet out for his father's houſe, and, in their way, took up Mrs. Gauntlet the mother, who was ſincerely rejoiced to ſee our hero in the capacity of her ſon-in-law.

THE

REGICIDE:

OR,

JAMES I. OF SCOTLAND.

A TRAGEDY.

—Τὸν δ' ὑμνοποιὸν, αὐτὸς ἐν τίκτῃ μέλη,
Χειρσὶ τίκτων.— EURIP. IKETIΔ.

Hunc——————
Anxietate carens animus facit, omnis acerbi
Impatiens, cupidus ſilvarum, aptuſque bibendis
Fontibus Aonidum.—— JUVENAL.

PREFACE.

WHATEVER reluctance I have to trouble the public with a detail of the mortifications I have ſuffered in my attempts to bring the enſuing performance on the ſtage, I think it a duty incumbent upon me to declare my reaſons for preſenting it in this extraordinary manner; and, if the explanation ſhall be found either tedious or trifling, I hope the candid reader will charge my impertinence upon thoſe who drove me to the neceſſity of making ſuch an ineffectual appeal.

Beſides, I flatter myſelf, that a fair repreſentation of the uſage I have met with, will be as a beacon to caution other inexperienced authors againſt the inſincerity of managers; to which they might otherwiſe become egregious dupes, and, after a cajoling dream of good fortune, wake in all the aggravation of diſappointment.

Although I claim no merit for having finiſhed a Tragedy at the age of eighteen, I cannot help thinking myſelf entitled to ſome ſhare of indulgence, for the humility, induſtry, and patience I have exerted during a period of ten years, in which this unfortunate production hath been expoſed to the cenſure of critics of all degrees, and, in conſequence of their ſeveral opinions, altered, (and I hope) amended, times without number.

Had ſome of thoſe who were pleaſed to call themſelves my friends, been at any pains to deſerve the character, and told me ingeniouſly what I had to expect in the capacity of an author, when I firſt profeſſed myſelf of that venerable fraternity, I ſhould, in all probability, have ſpared

myſelf the incredible labour and chagrin I have ſince undergone: But, as early as the year 1739, my play was taken into the protection of one of thoſe little fellows who are ſometimes called great men; and, like other orphans, neglected accordingly.

Stung with reſentment, which I miſtook for contempt, I reſolved to puniſh this barbarous indifference, and actually diſcarded my patron; conſoling myſelf with the barren praiſe of a few aſſociates, who, in the moſt indefatigable manner, employed their time and influence in collecting from all quarters obſervations on my piece, which, in conſequence of thoſe ſuggeſtions, put on a new appearance almoſt every day, until my occaſions called me out of the kingdom.

—Soon after my return, I and my production were introduced to a late patentee, of courteous memory, who (reſt his ſoul!) found means to amuſe me a whole ſeaſon, and then declared it impracticable to bring it on till next year; adviſing me to make my application more early in the winter, that we might have time to concert ſuch alterations as ſhould be thought neceſſary for its ſucceſsful appearance on the ſtage.—But I did not find my account in following this wholeſome advice; for, to me, he was always leſs and leſs at leiſure. In ſhort, after ſundry promiſes, and numberleſs evaſions, in the courſe of which he practiſed upon me the whole art of procraſtination, I demanded his final anſwer, with ſuch obſtinacy and warmth, that he could no longer reſiſt my importunity, and refuſed my tragedy in plain terms.—Not that he mentioned any material objections to the piece itſelf, but ſeemed to fear my intereſt was not ſufficient to ſupport it in the repreſentation: affirming, that no dramatic compoſition, however perfect, could ſucceed with an Engliſh audience by its own merit only, but muſt entirely depend upon a faction raiſed in its behalf.—Incenſed at this unexpected declaration, I reproached him bitterly for having trifled with me ſo long; and, like my brother Bays, threatened to carry my performance to the other houſe.

This was actually my intention, when I was given to underſtand by a friend, that a nobleman of great weight had expreſſed an inclination to peruſe it; and that, as intereſt was requiſite, I could not do better than gratify his deſire with all expedition. I committed it accordingly to the care of my counſellor, who undertook to give me a good account of it in leſs than a fortnight: But four months elapſed before I heard any tidings of my play; and then it was retrieved by pure accident (I believe) from the moſt diſhonourable apartment of his lordſhip's houſe.

Enraged at the behaviour of this ſupercilious peer, and exceedingly mortified at the miſcarriage of all my efforts, I wreaked my reſentment upon the innocent cauſe of my diſgraces, and forthwith condemned it to oblivion, where, in all probability, it would have forever ſlept, like a miſerable abortion, had not a young gentleman of learning and taſte waked my paternal ſenſe, and perſuaded me not only to reſcue it from the tomb, where it had lain two whole years, but alſo to new-model the plan, which was imperfect and undigeſted before, and mould it into a regular tragedy, confined within the unities of the drama.

Thus improved, it fell into the hands of a gentleman who had wrote for the ſtage, and happened to pleaſe him ſo much, that he ſpoke of it very cordially to a young nobleman, ſince deceaſed, who, in a moſt generous manner, charged himſelf with the care of introducing it to the public, and, in the mean time, honoured me with his own remarks, in conformity to which it was immediately altered, and offered by his lordſhip to the new manager of Drury-lane theatre. It was about the latter end of the ſeaſon when this candid perſonage, to whom I owe many obligations for the exerciſes of patience he has ſet me, received the perform-

ance, which, ſome weeks after, he returned, aſſuring my friend that he was pre-engaged to another author, but if I could be prevailed upon to reſerve it till the enſuing winter, he would bring it on. In the interim my noble patron left London, whither he was doomed never to return; and the conſcientious manager, next ſeaſon, inſtead of fulfilling his own promiſe and my expectation, gratified the town with the production of a play, the fate of which every body knows.

I ſhall leave the reader to make his reflections on this event, and proceed to relate the other particulars of fortune that attended my unhappy iſſue, which in the ſucceeding ſpring, had the good luck to acquire the approbation of an eminent wit, who propoſed a few amendments, and recommended it to a perſon, by whoſe influence I laid my account with ſeeing it appear at laſt, with ſuch advantage as ſhould make ample amends for all my diſappointments.

But here, too, I reckoned without my hoſt. The maſter of Covent Garden theatre bluntly rejected it, as a piece altogether unfit for the ſtage; even after he had told me, in preſence of another gentleman, that he believed he ſhould not venture to find fault with my performance, which had gained the good opinion of the honourable perſon who approved and recommended my play.

Baffled in every attempt, I renounced all hopes of its ſeeing the light, when a humane lady of quality interpoſed ſo urgently in its behalf, with my worthy friend the other manager, that he very complaiſantly received it again, and had recourſe to the old myſtery of protraction, which he exerciſed with ſuch ſucceſs, that the ſeaſon was almoſt conſumed before he could afford it a reading. My patience being by this time quite exhauſted, I deſired a gentleman, who intereſted himſelf in my concerns, to go and expoſtulate with the vaticide: And indeed this piece of friendſhip he performed with ſo much zeal, upbraiding him with his evaſive and preſumptuous behaviour, that the ſage politician was enraged at his reprimand, and in the mettle of his wrath pronounced my play a wretched piece, deficient in language, ſentiment, character, and plan. My friend, who was ſurpriſed at the hardineſs and ſeverity of this ſentence, aſking how he came to change his opinion, which had been more favourable when the tragedy was firſt put into his hands, he anſwered that his opinion was not altered, neither had he ever uttered an expreſſion in its favour.

This was an unlucky aſſertion—For the other immediately produced a letter which I had received from the young nobleman two years before beginning with theſe words—

"Sir I have received Mr. L——'s anſwer; who ſays, he thinks your play has undubitable merit, but has prior promiſes to Mr. T————n, as an honeſt man, cannot be evaded."——And concluding thus: "As the manager has promiſed me the choice of the ſeaſon next year, if you'll be adviſed by me, reſt it with me."

After having made ſome remarks ſuitable to the occaſion, my friend left him to chew the cud of reflection, the reſult of which was, a meſſage to my patroneſs, importing (with many expreſſions of duty) that neither the circumſtances of his company, nor the advanced ſeaſon of the year, would permit him to obey her command, but if I would wait till next winter, and during the ſummer make ſuch alterations as I had agreed to, at a conference with ſome of his principal performers, he would aſſuredly put my play in rehearſal, and in the mean time give me an obligation in writing, for my further ſatisfaction. I would have taken him at his word, without heſitation, but was perſuaded to diſpenſe with the proffered ſecurity, that I might not ſeem to doubt the influence

or authority of her ladyſhip. The play, however, was altered and preſented to this upright director, who renounced his engagement, without the leaſt ſcruple, apology, or reaſon aſſigned.

Thus have I in the moſt impartial manner (perhaps too circumſtantially) diſplayed the conduct of thoſe playhouſe managers with whom I have had any concern, relating to my tragedy: And whatever diſputes have happened between the actors and me, are ſuppreſſed as frivolous animoſities unworthy of the reader's attention.

Had I ſuffered a repulſe when I firſt preſented my performance, I ſhould have had cauſe to complain of my being excluded from that avenue to the public favour, which ought to lie open to all men of genius; and how far I deſerve that diſtinction, I now leave the world to decide; after I have, in juſtice to myſelf, declared that my hopes of ſucceſs were not derived from the partial applauſe of my own friends only, but inſpired (as ſome of my greateſt enemies know) by the approbation of perſons of the firſt note in the republic of taſte, whoſe countenance, I vainly imagined, would have been an effectual introduction to the ſtage.

Be that as it will, I hope the unprejudiced obſerver will own, with indignation and diſdain, that every diſappointment I have endured, was an accumulated injury; and the whole of my adverſary's conduct, a ſeries of the moſt unjuſtifiable equivocation and inſolent abſurdity: For, though he may be excuſable in refuſing a work of this kind, either on account of his ignorance or diſcernment, ſurely neither the one nor the other can vindicate his diſſimulation and breach of promiſe to the author.

Abuſe of prerogative, in matters of greater importance, prevails ſo much at preſent, and is ſo generally overlooked, that it is almoſt ridiculous to lament the ſituation of authors, who muſt either at once forego all opportunities of acquiring reputation in dramatic poetry, or humble themſelves ſo, as to ſooth the pride and humour, the petulance, of a mere Goth, who, by the moſt prepoſterous delegation of power, may become the ſole arbiter of this kind of writing.

Nay, granting that a bard is willing to proſtitute his talents ſo ſhamefully, perhaps he may never find an occaſion to practiſe this vile condeſcenſion to advantage: For, after he has gained admiſſion to a patentee (who is often more difficult of acceſs than a ſovereign prince), and even made ſhift to remove all other objections, an unſurmountable obſtacle may be raiſed by the manager's avarice, which will diſſuade him from hazarding a certain expence on an uncertain iſſue, when he can fill his theatre without running any riſk, or diſobliging his principal actors, by putting them to the trouble of ſtudying new parts.

Beſides, he will be apt to ſay within himſelf, "If I muſt entertain the town with variety, it is but natural that I ſhould prefer the productions of my friends, or of thoſe who have any friends worth obliging, to the works of obſcure ſtrangers, who have nothing to recommend them but a doubtful ſuperiority of merit, which, in all likelihood, will never riſe in judgment againſt me."

That ſuch have been the reflections of patentees, I believe no man of intelligence and veracity will deny; and I will venture to affirm, that, on the ſtrength of intereſt or connection with the ſtage, ſome people have commenced dramatic authors, who otherwiſe would have employed their faculties in exerciſes better adapted to their capacity.

After what has been ſaid, any thing by way of application would be an inſult on the underſtanding of the public, to which I owe and acknowledge the moſt indelible obligation for former favours, as well as for the uncommon encouragement I have received in the publication of the following play.

PERSONS OF THE DRAMA.

KING OF SCOTLAND.
ANGUS.
DUNBAR.
RAMSAY.
ATHOL.
STUART.

GRIME.
CATTAN.
QUEEN.
ELEONORA.
Guards, Attendants, &c.

Scene.——A Convent in Perth.

ACT I.

SCENE I.——*A Convent in Perth.*

ANGUS, DUNBAR.

Dun. BUT that my duty calls, I would decline
Th' unwelcome office. Now, when juſtice waves
Her flaming ſword, and loudly claims her due,
Thus to arreſt her arm, and offer terms
Of peace to traitors, who avow their crime,
Is to my apprehenſion weak, and ſuits
But little with the majeſty of kings.——
Why ſleeps the wonted valour of our prince?
Angus. Not to th' enſanguin'd field of death alone
Is Valour limited: She ſits ſerene
In the delib'rate council; ſagely ſcans
The ſource of action; weighs, prevents, provides,
And ſcorns to count her glories, from the feats
Of brutal force alone,—
—What frenzy were it
To riſk our fortune on th' unſure event
Of one occurrence, naked as we are
To unforeſeen diſaſter, when the terms
We proffer, may retard th' impending blow?
—Better to conquer by delay: The rage
Of Athol's fierce adherents, fluſh'd with hope
Of plunder and revenge, will ſoon abate,
And ev'ry hour bring ſuccour to our cauſe.

Dun. Well ha'ſt thou taught me, how the piercing eye
Of calm ſagacity excels the dint
Of headſtrong reſolution.——Yet, my ſoul
Pants for a fair occaſion to revenge
My father's wrongs on Athol's impious head!
Yes, Angus, while the blood of March revolves
Within my veins, the traitor ſhall not find
His perfidy forgot.——But what of this?
What are my private injuries, compar'd
To thoſe he meditates againſt the ſtate!
Againſt a prince with ev'ry virtue grac'd
That dignifies the throne, to whom the ties
Of kindred and allegiance could not bind
His faithleſs heart: Not ev'n the ſacred bond
Of friendſhip unreſerv'd!—For well thou know'ſt,
The king ſecurely liſt'ned to his voice,
As to an oracle.

Ang. 'Twas there indeed
He triumph'd in his guile!—Th' unwary prince,
Sooth'd by his falſe profeſſions, crown'd his guilt
With boundleſs confidence; and little thought
That very confidence ſupply'd his foe
With means to ſhake his throne!—While Athol led
His royal kinſman thro' the dang'rous path
Of ſudden reformation, and obſerv'd
What murmurs iſſu'd from the giddy crowd.
Each popular commotion he improv'd
By ſecret miniſters: and diſavow'd
Thoſe very meaſures he himſelf devis'd!
Thus cheriſh'd long by his flagitious arts,
Rebellion glow'd in ſecret, till at length
His ſcheme mature, and all our loyal thanes
At their own diſtant homes repos'd ſecure,
The flame burſt out. Now from his native hills,
With his accomplice Grime, and youthful heir,
Impet'ous Stuart, like a ſounding ſtorm
He ruſhes down with five revolting clans;
Diſplays a ſpurious title to the crown,
Arraigns the juſtice of this monarch's ſway,
And by this ſudden torrent, means, no doubt,
To ſweep him from the throne.

Dun. Aſpiring villain!
A fit aſſociate has he choſe: A wretch
Of ſoul more ſavage breathes not vital air
Than Grime: But Stuart, 'till of late, maintain'd
A fairer fame.

Ang. A cheriſh'd hope expires
In his diſhonour too!---While Stuart's ear
Was deaf to vicious counſel, and his ſoul
Remain'd unſhaken, by th' enchanting lure
Which vain ambition ſpread before his eye,
He bloom'd the pride of Caledonia's youth,
In virtue, valour, and external grace:
For thou, ſole rival of his fame, waſt train'd
To martial deeds, in climes remote.

Dun. O Thane!
Whatever wreathes from danger's ſteely creſt
My ſword hath won; whatever toils ſuſtain'd
Beneath the ſultry noon, and cold damp night,
Could ne'er obtain for me one genial ſmile
Of her, who bleſs'd that happy rival's vows
With mutual love!---Why ſhould I dread to own
The tender throbbings of my captive heart!
The melting paſſion which has long inſpir'd
My breaſt for Eleonora, and implore
A parent's ſanction to ſupport my claim?

Ang. Were ſhe more fair and gentle than ſhe is,
And to my partial eye, nought e'er appear'd
So gently fair, I would approve thy claim
To her peculiar ſmiles.

Dun. Then will I ſtrive
With unremitted ardour, to ſubdue
Her coy reluctance; while I ſcorn the threats
Of frantic jealouſy that flames unrein'd
In Stuart's breaſt!---But ſee! the fair one comes,
In all the pride of dazzling charms array'd.

SCENE II.

ANGUS, DUNBAR, ELEONORA.

Eleon. Something of moment, by a freſh diſpatch
Imparted to the king, requires in haſte
The preſence of my ſire,

Ang. Forbear a while
Thy parley with the foe; and here attend
Our conſultation's iſſue. [*Exit Ang.*

SCENE III.

DUNBAR, ELEONORA.

Dun. Ill it ſuits
A ſoldier's tongue, to plead the cauſe of love,
In phraſe adapted to the tender theme:
But truſt me, beauteous wonder! when I ſwear,
Not the keen impulſe, and impatient hope
Of glory, glowing in the warrior's breaſt,
With more awaken'd tranſport fill'd my ſoul
When the fierce battle rag'd, than that I feel
At thy approach!—My tongue has oft reveal'd
The dictates of my heart; but thou, averſe,
With cold diſdain, haſt ever chill'd my hopes,
And ſcorn'd my proffer'd vows!—

Eleon. O youth, beware!
Let not the flow'ry ſcenes of joy and peace,
That faithleſs paſſion to the view preſents,
Enſnare thee into woe!----Thou little know'ſt
What miſchief lurks in each deceitful charm;
What griefs attend on love.

Dun. Keen are the pangs
Of hapleſs love, and paſſion unapprov'd:
But where conſenting wiſhes meet, and vows
Reciprocally breath'd, confirm the tie,
Joy rolls on joy, an inexhauſted ſtream!
And virtue crowns the ſacred ſcene with peace!

Eleon. Illuſion all! the phantoms of a mind
That o'er its preſent fate repining, courts
The vain reſource of Fancy's airy dreams.
War is thy province—War be thy purſuit.

Dun. O! thou would tell me, I am ſavage all—
Too much eſtrang'd to the ſoft arts of life,
To warm thy breaſt!—Yes, war has been my ſchool—
War's rough ſincerity, unſkill'd in modes
Of peaceful commerce----Soften'd not the leſs
To pious truth, humanity, and love.

Eleon. Yes :---I were envious to refuſe applauſe,
When ev'ry mouth is open'd in thy praiſe.---
I were ungrateful not to yield thee more,
Diſtinguiſh'd by thy choice ; and tho' my heart
Denies thee love, thy virtues have acquir'd
Th' eſteem of Eleonora.

Dun. O ! thy words
Would fire the hoary hermit's languid ſoul
With ecſtaſies of pride !---How then ſhall I,
Elate with ev'ry vainer hope, that warms
Th' aſpiring thought of youth, thy praiſe ſuſtain
With moderation ?——Cruelly benign !
Thou haſt adorn'd the victim ; but, alas !
Thou likewiſe giv'ſt the blow !
—Tho' Nature's hand
With ſo much art has blended ev'ry grace
In thy enchanting form, that ev'ry eye
With tranſport views thee, and conveys unſeen
The ſoft infection to the vanquiſh'd ſoul,
Yet wilt thou not the gentle paſſion own,
That vindicates thy ſway !----

Eleon. O gilded curſe!
More fair than roſy morn, when firſt ſhe ſmiles
O'er the dew-brighten'd verdure of the ſpring !
But more deceitful, tyrannous, and fell
Than Syrens, tempeſts, and devouring flame !
May I ne'er ſicken, languiſh, and deſpair
Within thy dire domain !---Liſten, ye powers !
And yield your ſanction to my purpos'd vow---
—If e'er my breaſt—— [*Kneeling.*

Dun. For ever let me pine
In ſecret miſery, divorc'd from hope !
But ah, forbear ! nor forfeit thy own peace,
Perhaps in one raſh moment.——

SCENE IV.

DUNBAR, ELEONORA, HERALD.

Her. ———From the tower
That fronts the hills, due north, a moving hoſt
Is now deſcry'd ; and, from the ſouthern gate,
A cloud of duſt is ſeen to roll, the gleam

Of burniſh'd arms, oft thro' the duſky ſphere
Salutes the dazzled eye;—a loyal band
With valiant Ramſay, from the banks of Tweed,
That haſtens to our aid. The firſt, ſuppos'd
The rebel train of Athol. By command
Of Angus, I attend thee, to demand
An audience of the foe.

Dun. I follow ſtraight. [*Exit Herald.*

Whate'er is amiably fair—Whate'er
Inſpires the gen'rous aim of chaſte deſire,
My ſoul contemplates and adores in thee!
Yet will I not with vain complainings vex
Thy gentle nature. My unblemiſh'd love
Shall plead in my behalf. [*Exit Dunbar.*

SCENE V.

Eleon. Adieu, brave youth!
Why art thou doom'd to ſuffer fruitleſs pains?
And why, alas! am I the deſtin'd wretch
That muſt inflict them?—Agonizing thought!
I yielded up my fond believing heart
To him who baſely left it, for the charms
Of treacherous ambition!—hapleſs Stuart!
How art thou chang'd! how loſt! thy cruel fate,
Like a falſe harlot, ſmiles thee into ruin!

SCENE VI.

Enter STUART, *diſguiſed like a prieſt.*

STUART, ELEONORA.

Stuart. The mighty ſchemes of empire ſoar too high
For your diſtinction, daughter. Simple woman
Is weak in intellect, as well as frame,
And judges often from the partial voice
That ſoothes her wiſhes moſt. [*Diſcovering himſelf.*

Eleon. Ha, frantic youth!
What guilty purpoſe leads thy daring ſteps
To this forbidden place?—Art thou not come
Beneath that ſacred veil, the more to brave
Th' avenging hand of Heav'n?

Stuart. No—that I tread
The paths of danger, where each boſom pants
With keen revenge againſt me, ſpeaks aloud
The fervour of my love—My love miſplac'd!
Elſe, would'ſt thou not receive the gen'rous proof
With anger and diſdain.

Eleon. Have I not cauſe
To drive thee from my heart?—Haſt thou not chas'd
All faith, and truth, and loyalty from thine?
Say, haſt thou not conſpir'd againſt thy prince?
A prince! who cheriſh'd thee with parent's zeal,
With friendſhip honour'd thee, and ev'ry day
With bounteous favour crown'd thy riſing wiſh?

Stuart. Curſe on his arts!—his aim was to enſlave
Th' aſpiring ſoul, to ſtifle and repreſs
Th' energing dictates of my native right,
To efface the glowing images within,
Awak'd by glory, and retain by fraud
The ſceptre he uſurps!

Eleon. Inſidious charge!
As feeble as unjuſt! for, clear as day
In courſe direct——

Stuart. In idle argument
Let us not now conſume the precious hour;
The middle ſtream is paſs'd; and the ſafe ſhore
Invites our dauntleſs footſteps—Yonder ſun,
That climbs the noon-tide arch, already ſees
Twelve thouſand vaſſals, marching in the train
Of warlike Athol; and before the ſhades
Of ev'ning deepen, Perth's devoted walls
Will ſhake before them—Ere the tempeſt roars,
I come to ſnatch thee from th' impending ſtorm—

Eleon. O impotent of thought!—O! dead to ſhame!
Shall I for pompous infamy forego
Th' internal peace that virtue calls her own?

Stuart. Or, ſay thy love, inconſtant as the wave,
Another object claims. Falſe—perjur'd maid!
I mark'd thy minion, as he charm'd thine ear
With grov'ling adulation. Yes, I ſaw
Thy looks, in artful languiſhment, diſcloſe
Thy yielding ſoul, and heard thy tongue proclaim
The praiſes of Dunbar.

When valiant Athol haſtens at the head
Of warlike thouſands, to aſſert our cauſe?

Ang. The cauſe of treaſon never was confin'd
To deeds of open war; but ſtill adopts
The ſtab of crouching murder. Thy revolt,
The ſtern contraction of thy ſullen brow,
And this diſguiſe, apoſtate! ſpeak thee bent
On fatal errand.

Stuart. That thou ſeeſt me here
Unarm'd, alone, from Angus might obtain
A fair interpretation—Stuart's love
Pleads not in myſtic terms; nor are my vows
To Eleonora, cancel'd or unknown——
Vows by thyſelf indulg'd, ere Envy yet,
Or folly had induc'd thee, to embrace
The fortunes of our foe. Thy foul reproach
My ſoul retorts on thee! and mark, proud lord,
Revenge will have its turn!—

Ang. Ha! muſt I bear
A beardleſs traitor's inſults?—'tis not mine
To wage a fruitleſs war of words with thee,
Vain-glorious ſtripling. While thine aims were juſt,
I ſeal'd thy title to my daughter's love;
But now, begrim'd with treaſon, as thou art,
By heav'n! not diadems and thrones ſhall bribe
My approbation!—but the king himſelf
Shall judge thy conduct!—Guards—

SCENE VIII.

Enter ELEONORA, *who kneels.*

——O! let me thus
Implore compaſſion, at a parent's knees,
Who ne'er refus'd——

Ang. Convey him hence.
[*Stuart is led off.*
Ariſe—
Remember, Eleonora, from what ſource
Thine origin is drawn. Thy mother's ſoul
In purity excell'd the ſnowy fleece
That clothes our northern hills!—her youthful charms,
Her artleſs bluſh, her look ſeverely ſweet,

Her dignity of mien and ſmiles of love
Survive in thee—Let me behold thee too
Her honour's heireſs——— [*Exit Angus.*

SCENE IX.

Eleon. Yes—I will adhere
To this ill-omen'd honour! ſacrifice
Life's promis'd joys to its auſtere decree;
And vindicate the glories of my race,
At the ſad price of peace!—If Athol's arm
(Which heav'n avert)! to treaſon add ſucceſs,
My father's death will join his ſov'reign's fall!
And if the cauſe of royalty prevail,
Each languid hope with Stuart muſt expire!—
From thought to thought, perplex'd, in vain I ſtray,
To pining anguiſh doom'd, and fell diſmay!

ACT II.——Scene continues.

ANGUS, DUNBAR.

Dun. By heav'n it glads me, that my ſword ſhall find
An ample field to-day. The king arous'd,
Chafes like a lion in the toils betray'd!
Ang. I mark'd his indignation, as it roſe
At Athol's proud reply, from calm concern
To anxious tumult, menacing diſdain,
And overboiling wrath. But ſay, my friend,
How move the rebels?—Are their ranks diſpos'd
By military ſkill?—Or come they on
In undiſtinguiſh'd crowds?—
Dun. In concourſe rude
They ſwarm undiſciplin'd—all arm'd alike
With ſword and target. On their firſt aſſault
(Fearleſs indeed and headlong)! all their hopes
Of conqueſt muſt depend. If we, unbroke,
Suſtain their onſet; little ſkill'd in war,
To wheel, to rally, and renew the charge,
Confuſion, havock and diſmay will ſeize
Th' aſtoniſh'd rout.

Ang. What numbers bring they on?
Dun. Ten thouſand, as I gueſs.
Ang. Ours ſcarce amount
To half the number: Yet, with thoſe, we mean
To hazard an encounter. Thou, mean while,
Shall viſit ev'ry paſſage, ſound th' alarm,
And man the city-walls. Here I attend
The king—and lo! he comes. [*Exit Dunbar.*

SCENE II.

KING, ANGUS.

King. —The commonweal
Has been conſulted. Tenderneſs and zeal
Became the parent. Thoſe have nought avail'd,—
Now, let correction ſpeak the king incens'd!
Ang. Not without cauſe, my liege, ſhall dread rebuke
Attend your royal wrath. What reign ſhall 'ſcape
Rebellion's curſe, when your paternal ſway
Has hatch'd the baneful peſt?
King. Let Heaven decide
Between me and my foes. That I would ſpare
The guiltleſs blood which muſt our quarrel dye,
No other proof requires, than my advance
To reconcilement—oppoſite perhaps
To my own dignity. But I will riſe
In vengeance mighty! and diſpel the clouds
That have bedim'd my ſtate.
Ang. The odds are great
Between the numbers: But our cauſe is juſt:
Our ſoldiers regularly train'd to war,
And not a breaſt among us entertains
A doubt of victory.
King. O valiant Thane!
Experienc'd oft, and ever truſty found!
Thy penetrating eye, and active zeal,
Firſt brought this foul conſpiracy to light;
And now thy faithful vaſſals firſt appear
In arms for my defence!---Thy recompence
My love ſhall ſtudy.
Ang. Blotted be my name
From honour's records, when I ſtand aloof,

Regardleſs of the danger that ſurrounds
The fortunes of my prince!

King. I know thee well.
Mean time, our care muſt be, to obviate,
With circumſpection and preventive ſkill,
Their numbers. In unequal conflict joins
Th' unwieldy ſpear that loads the borderer,
With the broad targe and expeditious ſword:
The loyal band that from the hills of Lorn
Arriv'd, ſhall in our front advance, and ſtand
With targe to targe, and blade to blade oppos'd;
The ſpears extended form the ſecond line,
And our light archers hover to and fro,
To gall their flanks. Whatever accident
In battle ſhall befal, thy vigilance
Will remedy. Myſelf will here remain
To guard the town, and with a ſmall reſerve,
(If need requires) thine exigence ſupply.

Ang. With joy, the glorious taſk I undertake! [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.

DUNBAR, RAMSAY.

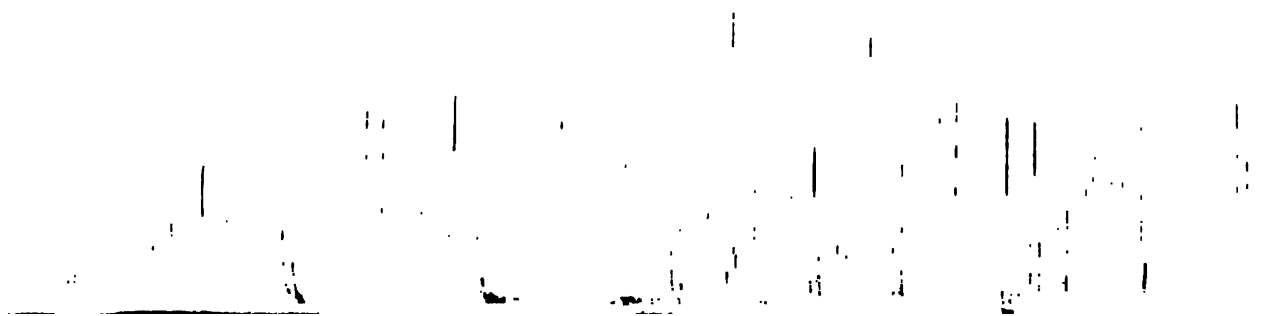
Ram. They halt, and occupy the narrow paſs
Form'd by the river and th' impending hill;
With purpoſe, as I deem, to charge our hoſt
On the ſmall plain that ſkirts the town.

Dun. 'Tis well.
Thus hemm'd, their uſeleſs numbers will involve
Themſelves in tumult, to our arms ſecure
An eaſy conqueſt, and retard their flight.
To Angus hie thee ſtraight with this advice.
My taſk perform'd, I wait the king's command
In this appointed place. [*Exit Ramſay.*

SCENE IV.

ELEONORA, DUNBAR.

Eleon. I fought thee youth.—
Ere yet this dreadful criſis ſhall decide
The public fate, let us to private woe
Devote one moment!—Tell me, brave Dunbar,



ity, not rejoice at Stuart's fate.
uart. To pity!—Torture! am I fall'n ſo low!—
recreant!—move thy pity!—Hell untie
e ſlaviſh manacles, that I may ſcourge
wretched arrogant!—
Dun. True courage ſcorns
ent her proweſs in a ſtorm of words:
to the valiant, actions ſpeak alone:
let my deeds approve me. I am come
ive thee inſtant freedom.
Stuart. Mean'ſt thou death?
ll be free then. An apt miniſter
uſurper has ordain'd to perpetrate
ecret murders.
Dun. Why wilt thou belie
own intelligence?—Thou know'ſt my ſword
ne'er accuſtom'd to the bravo's ſtab;
he deſigns of him ſo falſely ſtyl'd
er, ever ſully'd with a ſtain
uelty or guile. My purpoſe is,
ock thy fetters off, conduct thee ſafe
out the city-confines, and reſtore thee
erty and Athol.—
Stuart. Fawning coward!
—thou reſtore me!—thou unbind my chains!
ible!—Thy fears that I may 'ſcape,
ultures gnaw thee!—
Dun. When the battle joins,
ſhalt be anſwer'd.—
Stuart. When the battle joins!—
ay diſſembler!—Sooner would'ſt thou beard
on in his rage, than fairly meet
dour on the plan!
Dun. Ha! who art thou,
ſhould dread thy threats?—by Heav'n's high throne!
et thee in a deſert, to thy teeth
im thy treachery, and with my ſword
e thy faithleſs heart!—Meanwhile, my ſteps
guide thee to the field.
[*Stuart is unchained, and preſented with a ſword.*
Stuart. No!—lightning blaſt me
come thy debtor, proud Dunbar!

Wilt thou not, from the hurry of the day,
One moment ſnatch to hear me, and condole
The anguiſh of my ſoul?

Dun. O Eleonora!
Sooner ſhall the parch'd traveller refuſe
The gelid fountain, than my raptur'd ſoul
The muſic of thy tongue!—What grief profanes
Thy ſpotleſs boſom?—happy! far above
The pride of conquerors, were I to eaſe
Thy ſorrow's pangs!—

Eleon. Thy gen'rous heart alone
Can brook the enterpriſe—

Dun. O! taſk my love;
That I, more ſwift than gales that ſweep the plain,
May fly to thy relief!

Eleon. Then ſummon up
Thoſe elevated thoughts that lift the ſoul
To virtue's higheſt pinnacle; the boon
My miſery demands, will crave them all!

Dun. Be it to brave the menaces of death,
In ſhape however horrid, ſo my faith
And love remain inviolate, my heart
Beats with unuſual ardour; and demands
The teſt, impatient!—

Eleon. Friendleſs and forlorn
In fetters Stuart lies!—

Dun. Ha!

Eleon. From the ſnares
Of gloomy fate releaſe him.

Dun. Cruel maid!—
Nay, let me call thee barbarous! in ſpite
Of adoration. Could thy mind ſuggeſt
No forward ſlave, to ſet thy lover free,
But a deſpairing rival?—'Tis not giv'n
Th' impaſſion'd ſoul of man to execute
A deed ſo fatal to its own repoſe!

Eleon. I ſought not—witneſs ye celeſtial powers!
To aggravate thy pain. My mind, perplex'd,
Revolv'd in ſilent woe, nor could unload
Her burden to another. Thou alone,
Haſt won my fair opinion and my truſt;
And to thy word indebted, honour claims

Th' engagement all her own.

Dun. Yet, with reſerve
Was that impawn'd, my loyalty and love
Were ſacred ev'n from that; nor can I looſe
His chains, without an injury to both!

Eleon. Cold—unaſpiring is the love that dwells
With tim'rous caution; and the breaſt untouch'd
By glory's godlike fervour that retains
The ſcruples of diſcretion. Let the winds,
That have diſpers'd thy promiſe, ſnatch thy vows!

Dun. Shall I, through raſh enthuſiaſm, wed
Eternal anguiſh? Shall I burſt aſunder
The bonds of awful juſtice, to preſerve
The ſerpent that has poiſon'd all my peace!
No, Eleonora!—blaſted be———

Eleon. Take heed!
Nor, by an oath precipitate, involve
Thy fate beyond reſource: For know, Dunbar,
The love of Stuart, with his guilt abjur'd,
This morn, my ſolemn vow to Heav'n appeal'd
Hath ſever'd us for ever.——

Dun. Then, I'm ſtill!
Still as the gentle calm, when the huſh'd wave
No longer foams before the rapid ſtorm!——
Let the young traitor periſh, and his name
In dark oblivion rot.——

Eleon. Shall I, alas!
Supinely ſavage, from my ears exclude
The cries of youthful woe?—of woe entail'd
By me too!——If my heart denies him love,
My pity, ſure, may flow!——Has he not griefs
That wake ev'n thy compaſſion?——Say, Dunbar,
Unmov'd could'ſt thou ſurvey th' unhappy youth
(Whom but this morn beheld in pride of hope
And pow'r magnificent)! ſtretch'd on the ground
Of a damp dungeon, groaning with deſpair!
With not one friend his ſorrows to divide,
And cheer his lone diſtreſs?

Dun. Can I reſiſt
So fair a motive, and ſo ſweet a tongue!
When thy ſoft heart with kind compaſſion glows,
Shall I the tender ſentiment repreſs?——

No!---let me rather hail the ſocial pang,
And ev'ry ſelfiſh appetite ſubdu'd,
Indulge a flame ſo gen'rous and humane!——
Away with each emotion that ſuggeſts
A rival favour'd, and a traitor freed!
My love unbounded reigns, and ſcorns to own
Reflection's narrow limits!——Yes, my fair,
This hour he ſhall be free.——— [*Exit Dunbar*

SCENE V.

Eleon. O wond'rous power
Of love beneficent!—O gen'rous youth!
What recompence (thus bankrupt as I am)!
Shall ſpeak my grateful ſoul!——A poor return
Cold friendſhip renders to the fervid hope
Of fond deſire! and my invidious fate
Allows no more.——But let me not bewail,
With avarice of grief, my private woe;
When pale with fear, and harraſs'd with alarm,
My royal miſtreſs, ſtill benign to me,
The zealous tender of my duty claims. [*Exit.*

SCENE VI.

Diſcovers STUART *in chains.*

Stuart. Curſe on my headſtrong paſſion!—I have earn'd
The wages of my folly!——Is it thus
My faithleſs deſtiny requites my hope?

SCENE VII.

STUART, DUNBAR.

Stuart. Ha! 'com'ſt thou to inſult my chains?——
'Twas well
My unpropitious demon gave me up
To your reſentment, tamely.——
Dun. To exult
Ev'n o'er an enemy oppreſs'd, and heap
Affliction on the afflicted, is the mark
And the mean triumph of a daſtard ſoul.
'Tis what Dunbar diſdains. Perhaps, I come

To pity, not rejoice at Stuart's fate.
Stuart. To pity!—Torture! am I fall'n ſo low!—
Ha! recreant!—move thy pity!—Hell untie
Theſe ſlaviſh manacles, that I may ſcourge
This wretched arrogant!—
Dun. True courage ſcorns
To vent her proweſs in a ſtorm of words:
And, to the valiant, actions ſpeak alone:
Then let my deeds approve me. I am come
To give thee inſtant freedom.
Stuart. Mean'ſt thou death?
I ſhall be free then. An apt miniſter
Th' uſurper has ordain'd to perpetrate
His ſecret murders.
Dun. Why wilt thou belie
Thy own intelligence?—Thou know'ſt my ſword
Was ne'er accuſtom'd to the bravo's ſtab;
Nor the deſigns of him ſo falſely ſtyl'd
Uſurper, ever ſully'd with a ſtain
Of cruelty or guile. My purpoſe is,
To knock thy fetters off, conduct thee ſafe
Without the city-confines, and reſtore thee
To liberty and Athol.—
Stuart. Fawning coward!
Thou—thou reſtore me!—thou unbind my chains!
Impoſſible!—Thy fears that I may 'ſcape,
Like vultures gnaw thee!—
Dun. When the battle joins,
Thou ſhalt be anſwer'd.—
Stuart. When the battle joins!—
—Away diſſembler!—Sooner would'ſt thou beard
The lion in his rage, than fairly meet
My valour on the plan!
Dun. Ha! who art thou,
That I ſhould dread thy threats?—by Heav'n's high throne!
I'll meet thee in a deſert, to thy teeth
Proclaim thy treachery, and with my ſword
Explore thy faithleſs heart!—Meanwhile, my ſteps
Shall guide thee to the field.
[*Stuart is unchained, and preſented with a ſword.*
Stuart. No!—lightning blaſt me
If I become thy debtor, proud Dunbar!

Thy nauſeous benefits ſhall not enſlave
My free-born will. Here, captive as I am,
Thy laviſh'd obligation ſhall not buy
My friendſhip!—No! nor ſtifle my revenge!

Dun. Alike unpleaſant would it be to me,
To court thy love, or deprecate thy hate:—
What I have proffer'd, other motives urg'd—
The gift is Eleonora's.—

Stuart. Sacred powers!
Let me not underſtand thee—Thou haſt rous'd
My ſoul's fury!—In the blood that warms
Thine heart, perfidious, I will ſlake mine ire.

Dun. In all my conduct, inſolent of heart!
What haſt thou mark'd ſo abject and ſo mean,
That thy foul tongue its licence thus avows?
To boundleſs paſſion ſubject, as thyſelf,
Wild tumult oft my reaſon overwhelms!—
Then tempt me not too far, leſt blindfold wrath
Tranſport my ſoul, and headlong ruin cruſh
Thy pride, ev'n here!—

Stuart. In this accurſed place
Let me be ſhackled—rivetted with bolts,
Till the ruſt gnaw my carcaſe to the bone,
If my heart throbs not for the combat, here!—
Ev'n here, where thou art lord!—Ha! do'ſt thou ſhake?
By Heav'n, thy quiv'ring lip and haggard look
Confeſs pale terror and amaze!—

Dun.—Away!—
Away, lewd railer!—not thy ſland'rous throat,
So fruitful of invectives, ſhall provoke me
To wreak unworthy vengeance on thee, ſafe
In thy captivity:—But ſoon as war
Shall cloſe th' encount'ring hoſts, I'll find thee out—
Aſſert my claim to Eleonora's love,
And tell thee what thou art.

Stuart. I burn!—I rage!
My fell revenge conſumes me!—But no more—
Thou ſhalt not 'ſcape me—Goaded by my wrongs,
I'll haunt thee through the various ſcenes of death!—
Thou ſhalt be found!—

Dun. I triumph in that hope. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VIII. *Changes.*

KING, QUEEN, *attended.*

King. Courageous Angus ſhall not be o'erpower'd—
Myſelf will bring him aid.—

Queen. Alas! my prince!

King. What means the gentle partner of my heart?
Diſmiſs thy fears. This day will diſſipate
The cauſe of thy diſmay. Ev'n now I go
To pluck the wreath of victory, and lay
Freſh laurels in thy lap.

Queen. Ah! why let in
A train of harpy ſorrows to my breaſt!—
—Ah! why in your own precious life, expoſe
Your kingdom's ſafety, and your conſort's peace!
—Let me reſtrain you from the field to-day.
There is no fame—no glory to be won
From a revolter's brow.—

King. The public weal
Commands to arm—diſhonour taint my name,
When I reject the call!—

Queen. Ill-omen'd call!
That like the raven's croak, invades my quiet!
O! would to Heaven, our minutes ſmoothly roll'd
In humble ſolitude, with meek-ey'd peace!
Remote from royalty, and all the cares
That brood around the throne!—

King. No, let us ſcorn
Unfeeling eaſe, and private bliſs forego,
When public miſery implores our aid.
What dignity of tranſport feels the prince,
Who, from the fangs of fierce oppreſſive power,
A people reſcues?

Queen. What a dreadful hoſt
Of dangers 'circle him!

King. Diſeaſe confers
The ſtamp of value upon health; and glory
Is the fair child of peril. Thou thyſelf
My conduct wilt applaud, ſoon as thy mind
Its native calm regains, and reaſon ſways
Uncheck'd by fear——Secure till my return
Remain within, and ev'ry thought indulge

Foreboding my ſucceſs.—

Queen. Adieu—Adieu!

Heav'n crown valour with a happy wreath. [*Exit Queen.*

King, to an attendant. Swift, hie thee to Dunbar, and bid him lead

The choſen citizens——

Enter Ramſay.

SCENE IX.

KING *attended*, RAMSAY.

Ram. O fatal chance!

The traitor Grime, with a ſelected band,
(While Angus, preſs'd on ev'ry ſide, ſuſtains
Th' unequal fight) a ſecret path purſu'd
Around the hills, and pouring all at once,
Surpris'd the eaſtern gate!—the citizens
With conſternation ſmote, before his arms
In rout diſorder'd fly!—

King. Ha! then the wheel
Of fate full circle rolls to cruſh me down!
Nor leaves one pauſe for conduct!—Yet I'll bear
My fortunes like a king—haſte and collect
The ſcatter'd parties—Let us not ſubmit
Ere yet ſubdu'd—to arms! [*Drawing.*

Ram. Alas! my prince!

The convent is beſet—Hark!, while we ſpeak
The gates are burſt—behold—

King. We muſt prevent
The pangs of lingering miſery, and fall
With honour, as we liv'd—

SCENE X.

KING *attended*, RAMSAY. GRIME *with followers burſting in.*

King. What bold contempt
Of majeſty, thus rudely dares intrude
Into my private ſcenes?

Grime. The hour is fled,
That ſaw thy wanton tyranny impoſe
The galling yoke—Yes, I'm come to wreſt

The proſtituted ſceptre from thy hand,
And drag thee fetter'd to the royal throne
Of Walter, whom I ſerve.

King. Outrageous wretch!
Grown old in treachery! whoſe ſoul untam'd,
No mercy ſoftens, and no laws reſtrain!
Thy life thrice forfeited, my pity thrice
From juſtice hath redeem'd; yet art thou found
Still turbulent—a rugged rebel ſtill,
Unaw'd and unreclaim'd!—

Grime. That I yet breathe
This ambient air, and tread this earth at will,
Not to thy mercy but thy dread I owe.
Wrong'd as I was—my old poſſeſſions reft
By thy rapacious power, my limbs enchain'd
Within a lothſome dungeon, and my name
Thy loud reproach through all the groaning land;
Thou durſt not ſhed my blood!—the purple ſtream
Had ſwell'd—a tide of vengeance! and o'erwhelm'd
The proud oppreſſor.—

King. Traitor to thy prince,
And foe perverſe to truth!—how full thy crimes,
Thy doom how juſt—my pardon how humane,
Thy conſcious malice knows—But let me not
Degrade my name, and vindicate to thee
The juſtice of my reign.

Grime. Vain were th' attempt,
With artifice of words, to ſooth my rage,
More deaf to mercy, than the famiſh'd wolf
That tears the bleating kid!—My ſtarv'd revenge
Thy blood alone can ſatiate!—Yield thee then!
Or ſink beneath mine arm.

King. Heav'n ſhall not ſee
A deed ſo abject vilify my name—
While yet I wield this ſword, and the warm blood
Still ſtreams within my veins; my courage ſoars
Superior to a ruffian's threats.

Grime. Fall on,
And hew them piece meal.

[*King, Ramſay, and attendants drive off Grime and his followers; but are afterwards overpowered and diſarmed.*

Grime. Wilt thou yet maintain
Thy dignity of words?—Where are thy ſlaves,
Thy ſubjects, guards, and thunder of thy throne,
Reduc'd uſurper?—Guard theſe captives hence.
[*Exeunt King, Ramſay, &c. guarded.*

SCENE XI.

Enter a SOLDIER *to* GRIME.

Sold. A troop of horſemen have poſſeſs'd the gate
By which we gain'd the city.
Grime. Blaſt them hell!
We muſt retreat another way, and leave
Our aim unfiniſh'd!—Our victorious ſwords
At leaſt ſhall guard the treaſure they have won.
When the fierce parent-lion bites our chain,
His whelps forlorn an eaſy prey remain.

ACT III.

SCENE I.

QUEEN, ELEONORA, CAPTAIN.

Queen. What from the battlements haſt thou deſcry'd?
Capt. Nothing diſtinct, my queen. Involv'd in clouds
Impervious to the view, the battle long
Continued doubtful, 'midſt the mingling ſounds
Of trumpets, neighing ſteeds, tumultuous ſhouts
Of fierce aſſailants, doleful cries of death,
And clattering armour; till at length, the noiſe
In diſtant murmurs dy'd. O'er all the plain,
Now a dread ſtillneſs reigns!
Queen. Then all is loſt!
Why pauſes ruin, and ſuſpends the ſtroke!
Is it to lengthen out affliction's term,
And feed productive woe? Where ſhall the groans
Of innocence deſerted find redreſs!
Shall I exclaim to Heav'n?—Already Heav'n
Its pity and protection hath withdrawn!
Earth yield me refuge then!—give me to lie
Within thy cheerleſs boſom!—there, put off

Th' uneaſy robe of being—there, lay down
The load of my diſtreſs!

Eleon. Alas! my queen,
What conſolation can the wretched bring!
How ſhall I, from my own deſpair, collect
Aſſuaſive balm!—Within my lonely breaſt
Mute ſorrow and deſpondence long have dwelt!
And while my ſire, perhaps, this inſtant bleeds,
The dim, exhauſted fountains of my grief,
Can ſcarce afford a tear!

Queen. O luxury
Of mutual ill!—Let us enjoy the feaſt!
To groan re-echo groan, in concert raiſe
Our lamentation; and when ſorrow ſwells
Too big for utterance, the ſilent ſtreams
Shall flow in common!—When the ſilent ſtreams
Forbear to flow, the voice again ſhall wail!
O my loſt lord!—O ſave him—ſave him powers!

Eleon. Is there no gentle remedy to ſooth
The ſoul's diſorder; lull the jarring thoughts,
And with fair images amuſe the mind?
—Come, ſmiling hope—divine illuſion! come
In all thy pride of triumph o'er the pangs
Of miſery and pain!

Queen. Low—low indeed
Have our misfortunes plung'd us; when no gleam
Of wand'ring hope, how vain ſoe'er or falſe,
Our invocation flatters!—When—O when
Will death deliver me?—Shall I not reſt
Within the peaceful tomb, where I may ſleep
In calm oblivion, and forget the wrecks
Of ſtormy life!—No ſounds diſturb the grave,
Of murder'd huſbands!—Or the diſmal ſcream
Of infants periſhing!—Ha! whither leads
Imagination!—Muſt ye periſh then,
Ye tender bloſſoms?—Muſt the lofty oak
That gave you life, and ſhelter'd you from harm,
Yield to the traitor's axe?—O agony
Of fond diſtraction!

Eleon. Ha!—behold where comes
The warlike ſon of March!—What, if he brings
The news of victory!

Queen. My ſoul, alarm'd
With eagerneſs and terror, waits her doom

SCENE II.

QUEEN, ELEONORA, DUNBAR.

Queen. Say, youth, how fares the king!
Dun. Fair princeſs, hail!
To you my duty and my ſpeed were bent—
Your royal conſort triumphs.
Queen. Lives he then!
Lives he, deliver'd from the fatal ſnares
Which had enclos'd him!
Dun. To their hills repell'd,
The vanquiſh'd rebels curſe his conqu'ring arm—
He bade me fly before him to the queen,
With the glad tidings cheer her drooping ſoul,
And bear his kindeſt wiſhes to the ſhrine
Himſelf will ſoon adore.
Queen. Will he then come
And wipe the tear of ſorrow from my cheek!
Ah, no!—thy pity flatters me in vain!
Dun. Let me not dally with my queen's diſtreſs.
What were it, but to lift incumbent woe,
That it might fall more grievous. By the faith
Of my allegiance, hither ſpeeds the king,
By love attended, and by conqueſt crown'd.
Queen. O welcome meſſenger! How ſweetly ſounds
Thy prelude! Thus, the warbler of the morn,
To the ſick wretch who moan'd the tedious night,
Brings balmy ſlumber, eaſe, and hope, and health!
O wond'rous deſtiny!
Eleon. Thus, on my queen
May fortune ever ſmile! May bliſs to bliſs
Succeed, a tranquil ſcene! Say, noble youth,
Returns my ſire in ſafety from the field?
Dun. Safe as thy fondeſt filial wiſh can form.
In war's variety, mine eyes have ſeen
Variety of valour and of ſkill;
But ſuch united excellence of both,
Such art to baffle and amuſe the foe,
Such intrepidity to execute

Repeated efforts, never, ſave in him,
My obſervation trac'd! Our monarch's acts
My feeble praiſe would fully and profane.
Eleon. Thy words, like genial ſhowers to the parch'd earth,
Refreſh my languid ſoul!
Queen. The trumpet ſwells!
My conqueror approaches! Let me fly
With ecſtaſy of love into his arms!
He comes! the victor comes!

SCENE III.

KING, QUEEN, ELEONORA, DUNBAR.

King, embracing the Queen. My better part!
My ſoul's chief reſidence! my love! my queen!
Thou haſt been tender overmuch, and mourn'd
Ev'n too profuſely!
Queen. Celebrate this hour,
Ye ſongs of angels! and ye ſons of earth,
Keep feſtival! My monarch is return'd!
I fold him in theſe arms! I hear his voice—
His love ſoft chiding!
King. O ye powers benign!
What words can ſpeak the rapture of my ſoul!
Come to my breaſt, where, cheriſh'd by my love,
Thy fair idea rooted, bloſſoms forth,
And twines around my heart!
Queen. Myſterious fate!
My wiſhes are complete! Yet I muſt aſk
A thouſand things, impertinently fond!
How did you 'ſcape? What angel's hand, my king,
Preſerv'd you from deſtruction?
King. Heav'n, indeed,
Eſpous'd my cauſe, and ſent to my relief
The ſon of March, who, with a choſen few,
Deliver'd me from Grime: Thence to the field
We ſpeeded, and accompliſh'd what the ſword
Of Angus had well nigh achiev'd before.
Queen to Dun. How ſhall acknowledgment enough reward
Thy worth unparalleled?

King. Now, by my throne!
Not my own iſſue ſhall engroſs me more
Than thou, heroic youth! Th' inſulting foe,
In ſpite of freſh ſupplies, with ſlaughter driven
To the ſteep hills that bound the plain, have ſent
An herald, in their turn, to ſue for peace.
An audience have I promis'd. Ere the hour
Arrives, I will retire, and in the bath
Refreſh my weary'd limbs.

[*Exeunt King, Queen, attendants.*

SCENE IV.

DUNBAR, ELEONORA.

Eleon. Renown, to-day,
Has laviſh'd all her honours on thy head.

Dun. What boots it that my fortune decks me thus
With unſubſtantial plumes, when my heart groans
Beneath the gay capariſon, and love
With unrequited paſſion wounds my ſoul!

Eleon. Is unpropitious love unknown to me?
To me for ever doom'd (alas)! to nurſe
The ſlow-conſuming fire.

Dun. Heav'ns! what are all
The boaſted charms that with ſuch wond'rous power
Attach thee to my rival? Far from me
Be the vain arrogance of pride, to vaunt
Excelling talents; yet I fain would learn
On what admir'd accompliſhment of Stuart
Thy preference is fix'd.

Eleon. Alas! Dunbar,
My judgment, weak and erring as it is,
Too well diſcerns on whom I ſhould beſtow
My love and my eſteem. But truſt me, youth,
Thou little know'ſt how hard it is to wean
The mind from darling habits long indulg'd!——
I know that Stuart ſinks into reproach,
Immers'd in guilt, and, more than once, ſubdu'd
By thy ſuperior merit and ſucceſs:
Yet even this Stuart (for I would not wrong
Thine expectation) ſtill retains a part
Of my compaſſion—nay, I fear, my love!

Unhappy thoſe who hazard their deſigns
On her without reſerve!—

Grime. Our plan purſu'd
A purpoſe more aſſur'd:—With conqueſt crown'd,
Our aim indeed a fairer wreath had worn:
But that deny'd, on terms of darker hue
Our ſwords ſhall force ſucceſs!—

Athol. Th' approaching ſcene
Demands our utmoſt art!—not with tame ſighs
To bend before his throne, and ſupplicate
His clemency, like ſlaves; nor to provoke,
With pride of ſpeech, his anger half appeas'd:
But with ſubmiſſion mingle (as we ſpeak)
A conſcious dignity of ſoul, prepar'd
For all events.

Grime. Without the city walls,
The ſouthern troops encamp'd, already fill
The feſtal bowl, to celebrate the day.—

Athol. By Heav'n! their fluſh'd intemperance will yield
Occaſion undiſturb'd. For while they lie
With wine and ſleep o'erwhelm'd, the clans that lurk
Behind th' adjacent hills, ſhall in the dark
Approach the gate, when our aſſociate Cattan
Commands the guard; then introduc'd by him,
We take with eaſe poſſeſſion of the town,
And hither move unmark'd.

Grime. Here, if we fail,
May my ſhrunk ſinew never more unſheath
My well-try'd dagger; nor my hungry hate
Enjoy the ſav'ry ſteam of hoſtile gore!

Athol. How my fir'd ſoul anticipates the joy!
I ſee me ſeated in the regal chair,
Enthron'd by Grime, the partner of my power!—
But this important enterpriſe demands
More ſecret conference.—The ſword of Stuart
Will much avail:—But his unpractic'd youth,
To doubts and ſcruples ſubject, hitherto
Declines our laſt reſolve.—

Grime. It ſhall be mine
To rouſe his paſſion to the pitch requir'd.—
But ſoft!—who comes?—Ten thouſand curſes load
Th' ambitious ſtripling!

Enter DUNBAR.

Dun. By the king's command,
I come to guide you to the throne.

Athol. 'Tis well. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VIII.

Diſcovers the KING *ſeated*, ANGUS, Attendants.

Enter ATHOL, GRIME, *introduced by* DUNBAR.

King. It is not well—it is not well we meet
On terms like theſe!—I ſhould have found in Athol
A truſty counſellor and ſteady friend!
And better would it ſuit thy rev'rend age,
Thy ſtation, quality, and kindred blood,
To huſh ill-judging clamour, and cement
Divided factions to my throne again,
Than thus embroil the ſtate.—

Athol. My preſent aim
Is to repair, not widen more the breach
That diſcord made between us: this, my liege,
Not harſh reproaches, or ſevere rebuke,
Will ere effectuate:—No—let us rather,
On terms which equally become us both,
Our int'reſts reunite.

King. Hah!—reunite!
By Heav'n, thy proud demeanor more befits
A ſov'reign than a ſubject!—Reunite!
How durſt thou ſever from thy faith, old lord!
And with an helmet load that hoary head
To wage rebellious war!

Athol. The ſword of Athol
Was never drawn but to redreſs the wrongs
His country ſuffer'd.

King. Dar'ſt thou to my face
Impeach my conduct, baffled as thou art,
Ungrateful traitor? Is it thus thy guilt
My clemency implores?

Athol. Not yet ſo low
Has fate reduc'd us, that we need to crawl
Beneath your footſtool: In our camp remain
Ten thouſand vig'rous mountaineers, who long

Their honours to retrieve.

King, riſing haſtily. Swift hie thee to them,
And lead thy fugitive adherents back!
Away.—Now by the mighty ſoul of Bruce!
Thou ſhalt be met. And if thy ſavage clans
Abide us in the plain, we ſoon will tread
Rebellion into duſt. Why move ye not?
Conduct them to their camp.

Athol. Forgive, my prince,
If, on my own integrity of heart
Too far preſuming, I have gall'd the wound
Too much inflam'd already. Not with you,
But with your meaſures ill-adviſ'd I warr'd:
Your ſacred perſon, family, and throne,
My purpoſe ſtill rever'd.

King. O wretched plea!
To which thy blaſted guilt muſt have recourſe!
Had thy deſign been laudable, thy tongue
With honeſt freedom boldly ſhould have ſpoke
Thy diſcontent. Ye live not in a reign
Where truth, by arbitrary pow'r depreſs'd,
Dares not maintain her ſtate. I charge thee, ſay
What lawleſs meaſures has my pow'r purſu'd?

Athol. I come to mitigate your royal wrath
With ſorrow and ſubmiſſion; not to ſum
The motives which compell'd me to the field.

King. I found your miſerable ſtate reduc'd
To ruin and deſpair: Your cities drench'd
In mutual ſlaughter, deſolate your plains:
All order baniſh'd, and all arts decay'd:
No induſtry, ſave what with hands impure
Diſtreſs'd the commonwealth: No laws in force,
To ſcreen the poor, and check the guilty great;
While ſqualid famine join'd her ſiſter fiend,
Devouring peſtilence, to curſe the ſcene!—
I came—I toil'd—reform'd—redreſs'd the whole:
And lo! my recompence!—But I relapſe.—
What is your ſuit?

Athol. We ſue, my liege, for peace.

King Say, that my lenity ſhould grant your prayer,
How, for the future, ſhall I reſt aſſur'd
Of your allegiance?

Athol. Stuart ſhall be left
The pledge of our behaviour.
King. And your arms
Ere noon to-morrow, ſhall be yielded up.
Athol. This too ſhall be perform'd.
King. Then mark me, thane.
Becauſe the loins, from whence my father ſprung,
On thee too life beſtow'd, enjoy the gift.
I pardon what is paſt. In peace conſume
The winter of thy days. But if ye light
Th' extinguiſh'd brand again, and brave my throne
With new commotions—By th' Eternal Pow'r!
No future guile, ſubmiſſion, or regard,
Shall check my indignation! I will pour
My vengeance in full volley; and the earth
Shall dread to yield you ſuccour or reſource!
Of this no more. Thy kinſman ſhall remain
With us an hoſtage of thy promis'd faith.
So ſhall our mercy with our prudence join,
United brighten, and ſecurely ſhine.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.

Stuart. THIS ſolitude but more foments deſpair!
Recals, compares, and to th' inceſſant pangs
Of ſpite, revenge, and ſhame, condemns my ſoul!
O! what a miſerable ſlave am I!
Precipitated from the tow'ring hope
Of eagle-ey'd ambition, to th' abyſs
Of mutt'ring horror, curs'd from thought to thought!
—Hah, Jealouſy!—I feel th' infernal power!
Her hiſſing ſnakes arouſe, her torch inflames
My maddening ſoul!—Yes, if he thus permits
My feet to range at will, my vengeful hand
Will ſoon requite him. [*Enter Grime.*

SCENE II.

STUART, GRIME.

Grime. Wherefore thus alone?
Thy noble kinſman, who now parted hence,
Obſerves a ſullen cloud o'erhang thy brow.
Since from the dungeon to his wiſh reſtor'd,
A mute averſion to his love, ſecludes
Thy lonely ſteps—

Stuart. Yes,—thou thyſelf haſt nam'd
The cauſe accurs'd!—ha, from the dungeon freed!—
And freed by whom!—there's poiſon in the thought!
—Am I not hoſtage of my uncle's ſhame?

Grime. Thou dwell'ſt on that too much. Few live exempt
From diſappointment and diſgrace, who run
Ambition's rapid courſe. Inur'd to pain,
The harden'd ſoul, at laſt, forgets to feel
The ſcourge of fate; and fearleſs ruſhes on
To deeds advent'rous.

Stuart. Who ſhall frame th' attempt
That Stuart dreads t' achieve?—Not peſtilence,
Not raging ſeas, nor livid flames can bound
My dauntleſs undertaking!—Tell me, Grime,
For thou waſt train'd to feats of horrid proof,
Since not the voice of Heav'n itſelf can lure
My honour back again—what pow'r of hell
Shall I invoke to deepen my revenge?

Grime. Ha! Didſt thou ſay, revenge?—Hail, ſable pow'r,
To me more dear than riches or renown!
What gloomy joy to drench the dagger deep
In the proud heart of him who robb'd my fame!
My fortune thwarted, or eſſay'd by fraud
To poiſon my delights?

Stuart. Ha! thou haſt rous'd
The ſcorpion-thought that ſtings me!—
—Mark me, Grime,—
Our baffled cauſe could not alarm me thus:
If conqueſt for the foe declar'd to-day,
Our arms again the vagrant might compel,
And chain her to our ſide. But know, my love

Has been defrauded! Eleonora's heart
That wretch invades—That raviſher, who cropp'd
My budding fame, and ſunk me to reproach!
He, whom my jealouſy, in all its rage,
Hath ſingled for deſtruction!

Grime. He ſhall die!

Stuart. Yes, he ſhall die!—He ſhall be flea'd—impal'd!
And his torn bowels thrown to beaſts of prey;
My ſavage hate ſhall on his tortures feed!
I will have vengeance!

Grime. Would'ſt thou have it full,
Include his patrons.

Stuart. Ha!—What—ſhall my arm
Unſheath the ſecret ſteel!

Grime. Yes.—Strike at once,
For liberty, ambition, and revenge.
Let the proud tyrant yield his haughty ſoul;
And all his offspring ſwell the ſanguine ſtream.
Let Angus periſh too.

Stuart. O wond'rous plan
Of unreſtrain'd barbarity!—It ſuits
The horrors of my boſom!—All!—What, all?
In ſlaughter'd heaps—The progeny and ſire!
To ſluice them in th' unguarded hour of reſt!
Infernal ſacrifice!—dire, ev'n too dire
For my deſpair! To me what have they done
To merit ſuch returns?—No, my revenge
Demands the blood of one, and he ſhall fall.

Grime. It ſhall ſuffice: Dunbar ſhall bleed alone.
But let us ſeize him on the verge of bliſs;
When the fond maid's enkindling looks confeſs
The flames of baſhful love; when eager joy,
And modeſt fear, by turns exalt the bluſh
To a more fervid glow; when Eleonora
Unfolds Elyſium to his raptur'd view,
And ſmiles him to her arms.

Stuart. Hah! Lightning ſcorch
Thy tongue, blaſphemer! Sooner may this globe
Be hurl'd to the profound abyſs of hell!—
But vain are words. This is no place—remember
He ſhall not triumph thus! Thou haſt bely'd him—
He means it not. Nor will the ſyren ſmile—

No, Grime, ſhe dares not ſmile him to her arms!
Grime. Reproach, or mute diſguſt, is the reward
Of candid friendſhip, that diſdains to hide
Unpalatable truth!—I tell thee, youth,
Betroth'd by Angus to Dunbar, ſhe yields
Her plighted faith, this hour.—But ſee!—the maid
Moves hitherward alone!—
Stuart. Haſte, leave me, Grime!
My ſoul is up in arms!—my vengeance boils!
Love, jealouſy, implacable deſpair
In tempeſts wheel.—
Grime. Thou ſhalt not tarry here!—
Thy frantic rage may raſhly overturn
Our whole deſign!—
Stuart. Let me not urge again
Thy ſwift departure!—hence—I come anon.—
[*Exit Grime*

SCENE III.

STUART, ELEONORA.

Stuart. When laſt we parted, love had reconcil'd
Our mutual jealouſies! and breath'd anew
The ſoul of harmony within our breaſts.—
Haſt thou not, ſince that period, entertain'd
One adverſe thought to conſtancy and me?
Eleon. Say, who inveſted thee with pow'r ſupreme
O'er Eleonora's conduct; that thou com'ſt
With frowning aſpect, thus, to judge my fame?—
Haſt thou not forfeited all claim to me?
Have I not ſeen thee ſtray from honour's path?
And ſhall my love be to the breaſt confin'd
Where treaſon in her darkeſt hue preſides!
No!—let me wipe thee, blotted as thou art,
From my abhorrent thoughts!—
Stuart. Not all this pride
Of mimic virtue—not th' aſſembled hoſt
Of female wiles, how exquiſite ſoe'er,
Shall ſhelter thee, deceiver!—What new ſtain
Defiles my boſom, ſince the morning ſaw
Thy tenderneſs o'erflow; and heard thy tongue
Seduce me to thy faithleſs arms again?

Eleon. Is this the teſtimony of thy love?
This thy aſſerted honour! to revile
Defenceleſs innocence?—But this will aid
My duty—to forget thee. Do'ſt thou aſk
What recent outrage has eſtrang'd my heart?—
There needed none. The meaſure of thy guilt
Was full enough before. Yet thou haſt heap'd
Offences to exceſs: In battle fought
Againſt thy king; and fought, with lifted arm,
My father's life—ungrateful as thou art!
Know then, the honour of my name forbids
Our fates to join; and it ſhall ne'er be ſaid,
That Eleonora, loſt to glory, took
A traitor to her bed!—

Stuart. Perfidious witch!
Thy charms ſhall not avail thee; for I come
Th' avenging miniſter of broken faith!
To claim the promis'd fruitage of my love—
Or—mark me—puniſh with thy guilty blood,
Thy perjury and fraud!—

Eleon. Wilt thou attempt
To gain by menaces, what the ſoft ſigh
Of plaintive anguiſh would implore in vain?
Here ſtrike—and let thy ruthleſs poignard drink
The blood of Douglas, which has often flow'd
In virtue's cauſe; and ev'ry ſoil enrich'd,
From wintry Scania to the ſacred vale
Where Labanon exalts his lofty brow.

Stuart. Egregious ſorc'reſs!—give me back my peace—
Bid yeſterday return, that ſaw my youth
Adorn'd in all its ſplendor, and elate
With gen'rous pride and dignity of ſoul!—
Ere yet thy ſpells had diſcompos'd my brain,
Unſtrung my arm, and laid me in the duſt,
Beneath a rival's feet!

Eleon. Hear all ye powers!
He claims of me, what his own conſcious guilt
Hath robb'd him of. And do'ſt thou look for peace
In my afflicted boſom? There, indeed
Thine image dwells with ſolitude and care,
Amidſt the devaſtation thou haſt made! [*Weeps.*

Stuart. O crocodile!—Curſe on theſe faithleſs drops!

Which fall but to enſnare!—Thy ſpecious words
Shall ſooner lull the ſounding ſurge, than check
The fury that impels me!—Yet—by Heav'n,
Thou art divinely fair! and thy diſtreſs
With magic ſoftneſs ev'ry charm improves!—
Wer't thou not falſe as hell, not paradiſe
Could more perfection boaſt!—O! let me turn
My fainting eyes from thy reſiſtleſs face;
And from my ſenſe exclude the ſoothing ſound
Of thy enchanting tongue!—Yet—yet renounce
Thine infidelity—To thine embrace
Receive this wanderer—this wretch forlorn!—
Speak peace to his diſtracted ſoul; and eaſe
The tortures of his boſom!

Eleon. Hapleſs youth!
My heart bleeds for thee!—careleſs of her own,
Bleeds o'er thy ſorrows! 'mid the flinty rocks
My tender feet would tread to bring thee balm:
Or, unrepining, tempt the pathleſs ſnow!—
O! could my death recal thy baniſh'd quiet!
Here would I kneel, a ſuppliant to Heav'n,
In thy behalf; and offer to the grave
The price of thy repoſe!—Alas! I fear
Our days of pleaſure are for ever paſt!

Stuart. O thou haſt joy and horror in thy gift!
And ſway'ſt my ſoul at will!—bleſs'd in thy love,
The memory of ſorrow and diſgrace,
That preys upon my youth, would ſoon forſake
My raptur'd thought, and hell ſhould plot in vain
To ſever us again!—O let me claſp thee,
Thou charm ineffable!

Eleon. Forbear, fond youth,
Our unrelenting deſtiny hath rais'd
Eternal bars between us!

Stuart. Hah!—what bars?

Eleon. A ſacrifice demanded by my ſire—
A vow——

Stuart. Perdition!—Say what vow, raſh maid?

Eleon. A fatal vow! that blaſts our mutual love—

Stuart. Infernal vipers gnaw thy heart!—A vow!—
A vow that to my rival gives thee up!
Shall he then trample on my ſoul at laſt!—

Mock my revenge and laugh at my deſpair!
Ha!—ſhall he rifle all thy ſweets at will,
And riot in the tranſports due to me?
Th' accurſed image whirls around my brain!—
He pants with rapture!—Horror to my ſoul!
He ſurfeits on delight!—

Eleon. O gentle Heav'n!
Let thy ſoft mercy on his ſoul deſcend
In dews of peace!—Why roll with fiery gleam
Thy ſtarting eye-balls!—Why on thy pale cheek
Trembles fell rage!—and why ſuſtains thy frame
This univerſal ſhock?—Is it, alas!
That I have ſworn, I never will be thine?—
True, this I ſwore!—

Stuart. Ha!—never to be mine!
Th' awaken'd hurricane begins to rage!—
Be witneſs, Heav'n, and earth, and hell! ſhe means
To glad the boſom of my foe!—Come then
Infernal vengeance! aid me to perform
A deed that fiends themſelves will weep to ſee! [*Draws*
Thus, let me blaſt his full-bloom'd——

Enter Dunbar, who interpoſes.

SCENE IV.

DUNBAR, STUART, ELEONORA.

Dun. Ruffian, hold
Thy deſp'rate hand!—What fury 'ſcap'd from hell,
Inſpires thy rage to wanton in the blood
Of ſuch excelling goodneſs?—

Stuart. Infamy
Like mine, deface the glories of thy name!
What buſy demon ſent thee hither, now,
My vengeance to defeat?—The hour is come—
The hour is come at laſt, that muſt decide
For ever our pretenſions!

Dun. Whatſoe'er
Thy hate could meditate againſt my life
My nature might forgive: But this attempt
Diveſts my ſoul of mercy—

Stuart. Guide my point,
Ye powers of darkneſs, to my rival's heart,
Then take me to yourſelves. [*They fight.*

Eleon. Reſtrain—reſtrain
Your mutual frenzy!—Horror!—help—behold—
Behold this miſerable boſom!—plunge
Your poignards here; and in its fatal ſource
Your enmity aſſuage!—

Stuart falling. It will not be—
Thy fortune hath eclips'd me, and the ſhades
Of death environ me. Yet, what is death
When honour brings it, but th' eternal ſeal
Of glory, never—never to be broke!
O thou haſt ſlain me in a dreadful hour!
My vengeance fruſtrated—my proſpect curs'd
With thy approaching nuptials! and my ſoul
Diſmiſs'd in all her—Eleonora!—Oh!— [*Dies.*

SCENE V.

DUNBAR, ELEONORA.

Dun. Ah! wherefore doſt thou wring thy tender hands
In woeful attitude?—ah! wherefore lift
Thy ſtreaming eyes to heav'n; while the deep groan
Dilates thy lab'ring breaſt?

Eleon. This is too much—
This is too much to bear—thou haſt deſtroy'd
My laſt remains of peace!

Dun. And was thy peace
Depoſited in him?—In him who rais'd
His impious hand to kill thee!—Is it well
To mourn his fall, and thus accuſe the blow
That reſcu'd thee from death?

Eleon. I blame not thee,
No, Heav'n forbid!—I blame not my protector—
Yet thy protection has undone me quite!
And I will mourn—for ever mourn the hour—
Th' ill-omen'd hour, that on thy ſword conferr'd
Such terrible ſucceſs—How pale appear
Theſe clay-cold cheeks where grace and vigour glow'd!
O diſmal ſpectacle!—How humble now
Lies that ambition which was late ſo proud!—
Did he not call me with his lateſt breath!—
He would have ſaid—but cruel fate controul'd
His fault'ring tongue!—He would have ſaid, "For thee,
"For thee, falſe maid, I periſh undeplor'd!"

O! hadſt thou known how obſtinately true
My heart remain'd to thee, when thy own guilt,
My duty, and thy rival's worth, conſpir'd
To baniſh thee from thence, thy parting ſoul
Would have acquitted---nay, perhaps, bewail'd
My perſecuted truth!

Dun. O turn thine eyes
From the ſad object!—Turn thy melting thoughts
From the diſaſt'rous theme, and look on me---
On me who would with ecſtaſy reſign
This wretched being, to be thus embalm'd
With Eleonora's tears!—Were I to fall
Thy pity would not thus lament my fate!

Eleon. Thy death, ſuch lamentation would not move,
More envy'd than bemoan'd;---thy memory
Would ſtill be cheriſh'd; and thy name ſurvive
To lateſt ages, in immortal bloom---
Ah, 'tis not ſo with him!—He leaves behind
No dear remembrance of unſully'd fame!
No monument of glory, to defy
The ſtorms of time!—Nought but reproach and ſhame!
Nought, but perpetual ſlander, brooding o'er
His reputation loſt!—O fearful ſcene
Of dire exiſtence, that muſt never cloſe!

SCENE VI.

ANGUS *entering*, ELEONORA, DUNBAR, *attendants*.

Ang. What ſound of female woe—Ha! Stuart ſlain!
Alas! I fear thou art the fatal cauſe! [*To Eleonora.*

Eleon. Too well my father has divin'd the cauſe
Of their unhappy ſtrife!—Wherefore, ye powers!
Am I to miſery deliver'd up!
What kindred crime, alas! am I decreed
To expiate, that misfortunes fall ſo thick
On my poor head!

Ang. to Dun. How durſt your lawleſs rage
Profane this ſacred place with private brawl?

Dun. By heav'n! no place, how much ſoe'er rever'd,
Shall ſcreen th' aſſaſſin, who, like him, would aim
The murd'rous ſteel at Eleonora's breaſt!

Ang. Ha!—were his aims ſo mercileſs?—Too juſt

The vengeance that o'ertook him! But the event
With this unſtable juncture ill accords!
Remove the body. Thou meanwhile retire,
Thy preſence may awake, or aggravate
The rage of Athol. [*The body is removed.*
Dun. Therefore I obey.
And O thou lovely mourner! who now droop'ſt
Like the ſpread roſe beneath th' inclement ſhower,
When next we meet, I hope to ſee thee bloom
With vernal freſhneſs, and again unfold
Thy beauties to the ſun! [*Exit Dunbar.*

SCENE VII.

ANGUS, ELEONORA.

Ang. Let us, my child,
Lament with ſteadineſs, thoſe ills that flow
From our miſhap; yet therefore not aſcribe
To ſelf-demerit, impotently griev'd,
The guilt of accident. Thou haſt enough
Denoted thy concern—Let me not think
Thy ſorrow hath eſpous'd a traitor's cauſe.
Eleon. Ah! what avails to me, the hard-won palm
Of fruitleſs virtue?—Will it lull to reſt
Internal anguiſh?—Will it yield me peace?
Ang. Thy indiſcreet affliction ſhall not plead
Againſt thee, with me, now. Remember this,
If thou art weak enough to harbour ſtill
A guilty flame; to thy aſſiſtance call
That noble pride and dignity of ſcorn,
Which warms, exalts, and purifies the ſoul—
But I will truſt thee to thyſelf. Withdraw;
For Athol comes, and on his viſage low'rs
A ſtorm of wrath. [*Exit Eleonora.*

SCENE VIII.

ANGUS, ATHOL.

Athol. Are theſe the fair effects
Of our ſubmiſſion!—Theſe, the promis'd fruits
Of amity reſtor'd!—To violate
The laws of hoſpitality—To guide

The midnight murderer's inhuman blow,
And ſacrifice your gueſts!

Ang. That Athol mourns
This unforeſeen ſeverity of fate,
I marvel not. My own paternal ſenſe
Is wak'd by ſympathy; and I condole
His intereſting loſs. But thus to tax
Our blameleſs faith with traiterous deſign,
Not with our pure integrity conforms,
Nor with thy duty, thane.

Athol. Ha! who art thou,
That I ſhould bear thy cenſure and reproof?
Not proteſtation, nor th' affected air
Of ſympathy and candour, ſhall amuſe
My ſtrong conception, nor elude the cry
Of juſtice and revenge!

Ang. Had juſtice crav'd,
With rigid voice, the debt incurr'd by thee,
How had'ſt thou far'd? Say, what hath plac'd thy deeds
Above my cenſure? Let this day's event
Proclaim how far I merit thy diſdain.
That my humanity is miſconceiv'd,
Not much alarms my wonder: Conſcious fraud
Still harbours with ſuſpicion. Let me tell thee—
The fate of Stuart was ſupremely juſt.
Th' untimely ſtroke his ſavage heart prepar'd
Againſt the guiltleſs breaſt of Eleonora,
Avenging Heav'n retorted on himſelf.

Athol. I thought where all thy probity would end,
Diſguis'd accomplice!—But remember, lord,
Should this blood-ſpotted bravo 'ſcape, ſecure
In thy protection, or th' unjuſt extent
Of regal pow'r, by all my wrongs! I'll ſpread
The ſeeds of vengeance o'er th' affrighted land,
And blood ſhall anſwer blood!

Ang. How far thy threats
Are to be fear'd, we know.—But ſee, the king!

SCENE IX.

KING, ANGUS, ATHOL.

King. Tell me, proud thanes, why are ye found oppos'd

In loud revilings? You that ſhould promote,
By fair example, unity and peace!
Athol. Have I not cauſe to murmur and complain?
Stuart, the lateſt gift and deareſt pledge
Of love fraternal, ſooth'd my bending age:
Him hath the unrelenting dagger torn
From my parental arms; and left, alas!
This ſapleſs trunk, to ſtretch its wither'd boughs
To you for juſtice!—Juſtice then I crave.
King. To ſend the injur'd unredreſs'd away,
How great ſoe'er th' offender, or the wrong'd
Howe'er obſcure, is wicked---weak and vile:
Degrades, defiles, and ſhould dethrone a king!
Say freely, thane, who has aggriev'd thee thus,
And, were he dear as her who ſhares our throne,
Thou ſhalt have ample vengeance.
Athol. Then I charge
The ſon of March with perfidy and murder.
Ang. Were I with mean indifference to hear
Th' envenom'd tongue of calumny traduce
Defenceleſs worth, I ſhould but ill deſerve
Your royal confidence. Dunbar has ſlain
The kinſman of this thane; yet fell he not
By murder, cowardice, or foul deſign.
The ſword of Stuart was already drawn
To ſacrifice my daughter, when Dunbar,
By Heav'n directed hither, interpos'd,
Redeem'd the trembling victim, and repell'd
His rival's fury on his hapleſs head.
Athol. Muſt I refer me to the partial voice
Of an invet'rate foe?—No, I reject
The tainted evidence, and rather claim
The combat proof. Enfeebled are my limbs
With age that creeps along my nerves unſtrung.
Yet ſhall the juſtice of my cauſe recal
My youthful vigour, rouſe my loit'ring blood,
Swell every ſinew, ſtrengthen ev'ry limb,
And crown me with ſucceſs. Behold my gage—
I wait for juſtice.
King. Juſtice ſhalt thou have—
Nor ſhall an equitable claim depend
On ſuch precarious iſſue. Who ſhall guard

The weak from violence, if brutal force
May vindicate oppreſſion? Truth alone
Shall rule the fair deciſion, and thy wrongs,
If thou art wrong'd, in my unbias'd ſway
Shall find a juſt avenger.—Let Dunbar
Appear when urg'd, and anſwer to the charge. [*To Angus.*

[*Exeunt King, Angus.*

SCENE X.

ATHOL, GRIME.

Athol. Curſe on the ſmooth diſſembler!—Welcome, Grime.
My ſoul is wrought to the ſublimeſt rage
Of horrible revenge!—If aught remain'd
Of cautious ſcruple, to the ſcatt'ring winds
I give the phantom. May this carcaſe rot,
A loathſome banquet to the fowls of heav'n,
If ere my breaſt admit one thought to bound
The progreſs of my hate!

Grime. What means my prince?

Athol. Th' unhappy youth is ſlain!

Grime. Ha!—Hell be prais'd— [*Aſide.*
He was a peeviſh ſtripling, prone to change.
Vain is condolance. Let our ſwords be ſwift
To ſate his hov'ring ſhade. I have conferr'd
With truſty Cattan, our deſign explain'd,
And his full aid ſecur'd. To-night he rules
The middle watch. The clans already move
In ſilence o'er the plain.

Athol. Come, then, ye powers
That dwell with night, and patronize revenge!
Attend our invocation, and confirm
Th' exterminating blow!—My boughs are lopp'd,
But they will ſprout again: My vig'rous trunk
Shall flouriſh from the wound my foes have made,
And yet again project an awful ſhade.

ACT V.

SCENE I.

KING, QUEEN, DUNBAR.

Queen. O! this was more than the ill-forted train
Of undetermin'd fancy—This convey'd
No looſe imperfect images: but all
Was dreadfully diſtinct! as if the hand
Of Fate had wrought it. Profit by thoſe ſigns—
Your guardian angel dictates. O, my prince!
Let not your blind ſecurity diſgrace
The merit of your prudence.

King. No, my queen,
Let us avoid the oppoſite extremes
Of negligence ſupine, and proſtrate fear.
Already hath our vigilance perform'd
What caution juſtifies: And for thy dream;
As ſuch conſider it—The vain effect
Of an imagination long diſturb'd.
Life, with ſubſtantial ills, enough is curs'd:
Why ſhould we then, with frantic zeal, purſue
Unreal care; and with illuſive form,
Which our own teeming brain produc'd, affright
Our reaſon from her throne?

Queen. In all your courſe
Of youthful glory, when the guiding hand
Of warlike Henry led you to the field;
When my ſoul ſuffer'd the ſucceſſive pangs
Of fond impatience and repreſſive fear;
When ev'ry reeking meſſenger from France,
Wreath'd a new garland for Albania's prince,
And ſhook my boſom with the dreadful tale
That ſpoke your praiſe; ſay, did my weak deſpair
Recal you from the race? Did not my heart
Eſpouſe your fame, and patiently await
The end of your career?—O! by the joys
I felt at your return, when ſmiling love
Secure, with rapture reign'd—O! [illegible]
Which ſeldom plead; indulge
Aroufe your conqu'ring troo

The convent with a choſen band. The ſoul
Of treaſon is abroad!

King. Ye ruling powers!
Let me not wield the ſceptre of this realm,
When my degen'rate breaſt becomes the haunt
Of haggard fear. O! what a wretch is he,
Whoſe fev'rous life, devoted to the gloom
Of ſuperſtition, feels th' inceſſant throb
Of ghaſtly panic! In whoſe ſtarted ear
The knell ſtill deepens, and the raven croaks!

Queen. Vain be my terrors, my preſages vain—
Yet with my fond anxiety comply,
And my repoſe reſtore! Not for myſelf,
Not to prolong the ſeaſon of my life,
Am I thus ſuppliant! Ah no! for you,
For you whoſe being gladdens and protects
A grateful people—You, whoſe parent boughs
Defend your tender offspring from the blaſts
That ſoon would tear them up! For you, the ſource
Of all our happineſs and peace, I fear! [*Kneels.*

King. Ariſe, my queen—O! thou art all compos'd
Of melting piety and tender love!
Thou ſhalt be ſatisfied.—Is ev'ry guard
By Angus viſited?

Dun. Ev'n now, my liege,
With Ramſay and his troop, he ſcours the plain.

King. Still watchful o'er his charge.—The lib'ral hand
Of bounty will have nothing to beſtow,
Ere Angus ceaſe to merit!—Say, Dunbar,
Who rules the nightly watch?

Dun. To Cattan's care
The city guard is ſubject.

King. I have mark'd
Much valour in him. Hie thee to him, youth,
And bid him with a choſen few ſurround
The cloiſters of the convent; and remain
Till morn full ſtreaming ſhall relieve his watch.
[*Exit Dunbar.*
Thus ſhall repoſe, with glad aſſurance, waft
Its balmy bleſſing to thy troubled breaſt. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.

GRIME, CATTAN.

Grime. Thus far, brave Cattan, fortune ſeems inclin'd
To recompenſe us for the day's diſgrace.
Our band, conceal'd within the cloiſters, wait
With eagerneſs and joy th' auſpicious hour,
To perpetrate the deed. It now remains
To regulate our conduct, and to each
His ſhare of this great enterpriſe aſſign.
If Angus lives, in vain our arms devote
The uſurper and his progeny to death:
His power and principles will ſtill ſupply
Freſh obſtacles, which all our future efforts
Can ne'er ſurmount.

Cat. Then let our ſwords prevent
All further oppoſition, and at once
Diſmiſs him to the ſhades.

Grime. Thine be the taſk—
I know with what juſt indignation burns
Thy gen'rous hate, againſt the partial thane,
Who, to thine age and ſervices, preferr'd
A raw unpractis'd ſtripling.

Cat. Ha!—no more.
The bare remembrance tortures me!—O Grime!
How will my ſoul his mortal groans enjoy!

Grime. While we within perform th' intrepid blow,
To his apartment thou ſhalt move alone;
Nor will pretence be wanting: Say, thou bring'ſt
Intelligence important, that demands
His inſtant ear:—Then ſhalt thou find thy foe
Unarm'd and unattended. Need my tongue
Inſtruct thee further?

Cat. No, let my revenge
Suggeſt what follows.—By the pow'rs of hell!
I will be drunk with vengeance!

Grime. To thy guard
Meanwhile repair, and watch till he returns
With Ramſay from the plain. But ſee! they come,
We muſt avoid them, and retire unſeen. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.

An Apartment.

ANGUS, RAMSAY.

Ang. By Heav'n it much alarms me!—Wide o'er all
The duſky plain, by the fires half extinct,
Are ſeen the ſoldiers, roll'd in heaps confus'd,
The ſlaves of brutal appetite.—Save thoſe
Beneath thy diſcipline, ſcarce one remains
From the contagion free.

Ram. When we return'd
Fatigu'd from battle, numbers brought, unaſk'd,
Refreſhments for the wounded from the town:
Thence the temptation ſpread from rank to rank,
And few reſiſted.

Ang. But that I conſult
My king's tranquillity, and would not wake
Th' affrighted citizens with an alarm,
An hundred trumpets ſhould this inſtant raiſe
Their brazen throats together, and arouſe
Th' extended ſluggards.—Go, my valiant friend,
And with thy uninfected troop attend
To ev'ry motion of th' uncertain night. [*Exit Ramſay.*

SCENE IV.

ANGUS.

Now the loud tempeſt of the toilful day
Subſides into a calm; and yet my ſoul
Still labours through the ſtorm!—By day or night,
In florid youth, or mellow age, ſcarce fleets
One hour without its care!—Not ſleep itſelf
Is ever balmy; for the ſhadowy dream
Oft bears ſubſtantial woe!

SCENE V.

ANGUS, CATTAN.

Cat. My noble lord,
Within the portal as I kept my watch,
Swift gliding ſhadows, by the glimmering moon,
I could perceive in forms of armed men,

Poſſeſs the ſpace that borders on the porch.—
I queſtioned thrice; they yielded no reply:
And now the ſoldiers, rang'd in cloſe array,
Wait your command.

Ang. Quick, lead me to the place—
Foul treaſon is at work!—

Cat. It were not good
To venture forth unarm'd;—Courageous thane,
Receive this dagger.— [*Attempts to ſtab Angus, who wreſts the dagger from him, and kills him.*

Ang. Ha, perfidious ſlave!
What means this baſe attempt?—Thou ſhalt not 'ſcape.

Cat. Curſe on my feeble arm that fail'd to ſtrike
The poignard to thy heart!—How like a dog
I tamely fall deſpis'd!

Ang. Fell ruffian! ſay,
Who ſet thee on?—This treachery, I fear,
Is but the prelude to ſome dreadful ſcene!—

Cat. Juſt are thy terrors.—By the infernal gulf
That opens to receive me! I would plunge
Into the abyſs with joy, could the ſucceſs
Of Athol feaſt my ſenſe!
[*A noiſe of claſhing ſwords, and ſhrieks.*
—Hah!—now the ſword
Of ſlaughter ſmokes!—Th' exulting thane ſurveys
Th' imperial ſcene; while grimly ſmiling Grime,
With purple honours deck'd.—

Ang. Tremendous powers!

Cat. O'er the fall'n tyrant ſtrides— [*Dies.*

Ang. Heav'n ſhield us all!
Amazing horror chills me!—Ha, Dunbar!
Then treaſon triumphs!—O my ſon! my ſon!

SCENE VI.

ANGUS, DUNBAR *wounded.*

Dun. I ſought thee, noble thane, while yet my limbs
Obey their lord.—I ſought thee, to unfold
My zealous ſoul, ere yet ſhe takes her flight—
Stretch'd on the ground, theſe eyes beheld the king
Transfix'd a lifeleſs corſe! and ſaw this arm

Too late to ſave—too feeble to avenge him!—
Ang. Weep, Caledonia, weep!—thy peace is ſlain—
Thy father and thy king!—O! this event,
Like a vaſt mountain, loads my ſtagg'ring ſoul,
And cruſhes all her pow'rs!—But ſay, my friend,
If yet thy ſtrength permits, how this befel.
Dun. A band of rebels, glean'd from the defeat
By Athol, lurk'd behind th' adjacent hills:
Theſe, faithleſs Cattan, favour'd by the night,
Admitted to the city, join'd their power
With his corrupted guard, and hither led them
Unmark'd, where ſoon they enter'd unoppos'd.—
Alarm'd, I ſtrove—but ſtrove, alas! in vain,
To the ſad ſcene ere I could force my way,
Our monarch was no more! Around him lay
An heap of traitors, whom his ſingle arm
Had ſlain before he fell.—Th' unhappy queen,
Who, to defend her conſort's, had oppos'd
Her own defenceleſs frame, expiring, pour'd
Her mingling blood in copious ſtream with his!
Ang. Illuſtrious victims!—O diſaſtrous fate!
Unfeeling monſters! execrable fiends!
To wanton thus in royal blood!
Dun. O thane!
How ſhall I ſpeak the ſequel of my tale!
How will thy fond parental heart be rent
With mortal anguiſh, when my tongue relates
The fate of Eleonora!
Ang. Ha!—my fears
Anticipate thy words!—O ſay, Dunbar,
How fares my child!
Dun. The ſhades of endleſs night
Now ſettle o'er her eyes!—heroic maid!
She to th' aſſaulted threſhold bravely ran,
And, with her ſnowy arms, ſupply'd a bolt
To bar their entrance:—But the barb'rous crew
Broke in impetuous, cruſh'd her ſlender limb,
When Grime, his dagger brandiſhing, exclaim'd,
Behold the ſorc'reſs, whoſe accurſed charms
Betray'd the youth, and whoſe invet'rate fire
This day revers'd our fortune in the field!—
This for revenge!—then plung'd it in her breaſt!—

Ang. Infernal homicide!—

Dun. There—there, I own,
He vanquiſh'd me indeed!—What though I ruſh'd
Through many a wound, and in th' aſſaſſin's heart
Imbru'd my faithful ſteel.—But ſee, where comes,
By her attendants led, the bleeding fair!

SCENE VII.

ANGUS, DUNBAR, ELEONORA *wounded, and ſupported.*

Eleon. Here ſet me down—vain is your kind concern.
Ah! who with parent tenderneſs will bleſs
My parting ſoul, and cloſe my beamleſs eyes!
Ah! who defend me, and with pious care
To the cold grave commit my pale remains! [*Swoons.*

Ang. O miſery!—look up—thy father calls—
[*Embracing her.*

Eleon. What angel borrows that paternal voice!
Ha! lives my father!—Ye propitious powers!
He folds me in his arms—Yes, he ſurvives
The havock of this night!—O let me now
Yield up my fervent ſoul with raptur'd praiſe!
For Angus lives t' avenge his murder'd prince,
To ſave his country, and protract his blaze
Of glory farther ſtill!

Ang. And is it thus
The melting parent claſps his darling child!
My heart is torn with agonizing pangs
Of complicated woe!

Dun. The public craves
Immediate aid from thee.—But I wax weak.—
Our infant king, ſurrounded in the fort,
Demands thy preſent help.—

Ang. Yes, loyal youth,
Thy glorious wounds inſtruct me what I owe
To my young ſov'reign, and my country's peace!
But how ſhall I ſuſtain the rav'nous tribe
Of various griefs, that gnaw me all at once?
My royal maſter falls, my country groans,
And cruel fate has raviſh'd from my ſide
My deareſt daughter, and my beſt-lov'd friend!

Dun. Thy praiſe ſhall be thy daughter; and thy friend

Survive unchang'd in ev'ry honeſt breaſt.
Ang. Muſt we then part for ever!—What a plan
Of peaceful happineſs my hope had laid
In thee and her!—alas! thou fading flower,
How faſt thy ſweets conſume!—come to my arms,
That I may taſte them ere they fleet away!
[*Embracing her.*
O exquiſite diſtreſs!
Eleon. For me, my father,
For me let not the bootleſs tear diſtil.—
Soon ſhall I be with thoſe who reſt ſecure
From all th' inclemencies of ſtormy life.
Ang. Adieu, my children!—never ſhall I hear
Thy cheering voice again!—a long farewel!
[*Exit Angus.*

SCENE VIII.

DUNBAR, ELEONORA.

Dun. Soon ſhall our ſhort'ned race of life be run.—
Our day already haſtens to its cloſe;
And night eternal comes.—Yet, though I touch
The land of peace, and backward view, well pleas'd,
The toſſing wave from which I ſhall be free,
No reſt will greet me on the ſilent ſhore,
If Eleonora ſends me hence unbleſs'd.
Eleon. Diſtemper'd paſſion, when we parted laſt,
Uſurp'd my troubled boſom, and Dunbar
With horror was beheld: But reaſon now
With genial mildneſs beams upon my ſoul,
And repreſents thee juſtly, as thou art,
The tend'reſt lover, and the gentleſt friend.
Dun. O tranſport, to my breaſt unknown before!
Not the ſoft breeze, upon its fragrant wings,
Wafts ſuch refreſhing gladneſs to the heart
Of panting pilgrims, as thy balmy words
To my exhauſted ſpirits!—but, alas!
Thy purple ſtream of life forſakes apace
Its precious channels!—on thy poliſh'd cheek
The blowing roſes fade; and o'er thine eyes
Death ſheds a miſty languor!
Eleon. Let me lean

Upon thy friendly arm—Yet, O retire!
That guilty arm!—Say, did it ne'er rebel
Againſt my peace?—But let me not revolve
Thoſe ſorrows now.—Were Heav'n again to raiſe
That once-lov'd head that lies, alas! ſo low!
And from the verge of death my life recal,
What joy could viſit my forlorn eſtate,
Self-doom'd to hopeleſs woe!

Dun. Muſt I then wander,
A penſive ſhade, along the dreary vale,
And groan for ever under thy reproach!

Eleon. Ah no! thou faithful youth, ſhall I repay
Thy love and virtue with ungrateful hate?
Theſe wounds that waſte ſo laviſhly thy life,
Were they not all receiv'd in my defence?
May no repoſe embrace me in the tomb,
If my ſoul mourns not thy untimely fall
With ſiſter woe!—Thy paſſion has not reap'd
The ſweet returns its purity deſerv'd.

Dun. A while forbear, pale miniſter of fate,
Forbear a while; and on my raviſh'd ear
Let the laſt muſic of this dying ſwan
Steal in ſoft blandiſhment, divinely ſweet!
Then ſtrike th' unerring blow.——

Eleon. That thus our hopes,
Which bloſſom'd num'rous as the flow'ry ſpring,
Are nipp'd untimely, ere the ſun of joy
Matur'd them into fruit, repine not, youth.—
Life hath its various ſeaſons, as the year;
And after cluſt'ring autumn—but I faint—
Support me nearer—in rich harveſt's rear
Bleak winter muſt have lagg'd.—Oh! now I feel
The leaden hand of death lie heavy on me.—
Thine image ſwims before my ſtraining eye.—
And now it diſappears.—Speak—bid adieu
To the loſt Eleonora.—Not a word!—
Not one farewel!—Alas! that diſmal groan
Is eloquent diſtreſs!—Celeſtial powers
Protect my father, ſhow'r upon his——Oh! [*Dies.*

Dun. There fled the pureſt ſoul that ever dwelt
In mortal clay!—I come, my love! I come—
Where now the roſy tincture of theſe lips!

The ſmile that grace ineffable diffus'd!
The glance that ſmote the ſoul with ſilent wonder!
The voice that ſooth'd the anguiſh of diſeaſe,
And held attention captive!—Let me kiſs
This pale deſerted temple of my joy!
This, chaſtity, this, thy unſpotted ſhade
Will nor refuſe.—I feel the griſly king—
Through all my veins he ſhivers like the north—
O Eleonora! as my flowing blood
Is mix'd with thine—So may our mingling ſouls
To bliſs ſupernal wing our happy——Oh! [*Dies.*

SCENE THE LAST.

ANGUS, RAMSAY, ATHOL, &c. *Priſoners.*

Ang. Bright deeds of glory hath thine arm achiev'd,
Courageous Ramſay; and thy name ſhall live
For ever in the annals of renown.
—But ſee, where ſilent as the noon of night
Theſe lovers lie!—reſt—reſt ill-fated pair!
Your dear remembrance ſhall for ever dwell
Within the breaſt of Angus; and his love
Oft with paternal tears bedew your tomb!

Ram. O fatal ſcene of innocence deſtroy'd.

Ang. to Athol. O bloody author of this night's miſhap!
Whoſe impious hands are with the ſacred blood
Of majeſty diſtain'd!—Contemplate here
The havock of thy crimes! and then bethink thee,
What vengeance craves.

Athol. With inſolence of ſpeech
How dares thy tongue licentious, thus inſult
Thy ſov'reign, Angus?—Madly hath thy zeal
Eſpous'd a ſinking cauſe. But thou may'ſt ſtill
Deſerve my future favour.

Ang. O thou ſtain
Of fair nobility!—thou bane of faith!
Thou woman-killing coward, who haſt crept
To the unguarded throne, and ſtabb'd thy prince!
What hath thy treaſon, blaſted as it is,
To bribe the ſoul of Angus to thy views?

Athol. Soon ſhalt thou rue th' indignity now thrown
On me thy lawful prince. Yes, talking lord,
The day will ſoon appear, when I ſhall riſe

In majeſty and terror, to aſſert
My country's freedom; and at laſt avenge
My own peculiar wrongs. When thou, and all
Thoſe grov'ling ſycophants, who bow'd the knee
To the uſurper's arbitrary ſway,
Will fawn on me. Ye temporizing ſlaves!
Unchain your king; and teach your humble mouths
To kiſs the duſt beneath my royal feet. [*To the guard.*
Ang. The day will ſoon appear!—Day ſhall not thrice
Return, before thy carcaſe be caſt forth,
Unbury'd, to the dogs and beaſts of prey.
Or, high-exalted putrify in air,
The monument of treaſon.
Athol. Empty threat!
Fate hath foretold that Athol ſhall be crown'd.
Ang. Then hell hath cheated thee. Thou ſhalt be
crown'd——
An iron crown, intenſely hot, ſhall gird
Thy hoary temples; while the ſhouting crowd
Acclaims thee king of traitors.
Athol. Lakes of fire!—
Ha! ſaid'ſt thou lord!—a glowing iron crown
Shall gird my hoary temples!—Now I feel
Myſelf awake to miſery and ſhame!
Ye ſceptres, diadems, and rolling trains
Of flatt'ring pomp, farewel!—Curſe on thoſe dreams
Of idle ſuperſtition, that enſnare
Th' ambitious ſoul to wickedneſs and woe!
Curſe on thy virtue, which hath overthrown
My elevated hopes! and may deſpair
Deſcend in peſtilence on all mankind!
Ang. Thy curſe juſt Heav'n retorts upon thyſelf!
To ſeparate dungeons lead the regicides.
[*Exit guard with the priſoners.*
From thirſt of rule what dire diſaſters flow!
How flames that guilt ambition taught to glow!
Wiſh gains on wiſh, deſire ſurmounts deſire;
Hope fans the blaze, and Envy feeds the fire:
From crime to crime aſpires the madd'ning ſoul;
Nor laws, nor oaths, nor fears its rage controul;
Till Heav'n at length awakes, ſupremely juſt,
And levels all its tow'ring ſchemes in duſt!

THE

REPRISAL:

OR,

THE TARS OF OLD ENGLAND.

A COMEDY OF TWO ACTS.

FIRST PERFORMED AT THE THEATRE-ROYAL IN DRURY-LANE, IN 1757.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

HEARTLY, *a young gentleman of Dorſetſhire, in love with* Harriet.
BRUSH, *his ſervant.*
CHAMPIGNON, *commander of a French frigate.*
OCLABBER, *an Iriſh Lieutenant in the French ſervice.*
MACLAYMORE, *a Scotch enſign in the French ſervice.*
LYON, *lieutenant of an Engliſh man of war.*
HAULYARD, *a midſhipman.*
BLOCK, *a ſailor.*

HARRIET, *a young lady of Dorſetſhire, betrothed to* Heartly.

Soldiers, Sailors, &c.

SCENE——*on board a French ſhip lying at anchor on the coaſt of Normandy.*

PROLOGUE.

An ancient ſage, when death approach'd his bed,
Conſign'd to Pluto his devoted head;
And, that no fiend might hiſs, or prove uncivil,
With vows and pray'rs, he fairly brib'd the devil:
Yet neither vows nor prayers, nor rich oblation,
Could always ſave the ſinner—from damnation.
Thus authors, tottering on the brink of fate,
The critic's rage with prologues deprecate;
Yet oft the trembling bard implores in vain,
The wit profeſs'd turns out a dunce in grain:
No plea can then avert the dreadful ſentence,
He muſt be damn'd—in ſpite of all repentance.

Here juſtice ſeems from her ſtraight line to vary,
No guilt attends a fact involuntary;
This maxim the whole cruel charge deſtroys,
No poet ſure was ever dull—by choice.
So pleads our culprit in his own defence,
You cannot prove his dullneſs is—prepenſe.
He means to pleaſe—he owns no other view;
And now preſents you with—a ſea ragout.
A diſh—howe'er you reliſh his endeavours,
Replete with a variety of flavours:
A ſtout Hibernian, and ferocious Scot,
Together boil in our enchanted pot;
To taint theſe viands with the true fumet,
He ſhreds a muſty, vain, French—martinet.
This ſtale ingredient might our porridge mar
Without ſome acid juice of Engliſh tar.
To rouſe the appetite the drum ſhall rattle,
And the deſert ſhall be a bloodleſs battle.
What heart will fail to glow, what eye to brighten
When Britain's wrath arous'd begins to lighten!
Her thunders roll—her fearleſs ſons advance,
And her red enſigns wave o'er the pale flow'rs of France.
Such game our fathers play'd in days of yore,
When Edward's banners fann'd the Gallic ſhore;
When Howard's arm Eliza's vengeance hurl'd,
And Drake diffus'd her fame around the world:
Still ſhall that godlike flame your boſom fire,
The gen'rous ſon ſhall emulate the fire:
Her ancient ſplendour England ſhall maintain,
O'er diſtant realms extend her genial reign,
And riſe—th' unrivall'd empreſs of the main.

ACT I.

SCENE I.

HEARTLY, BRUSH.

Bruſh. WELL, if this be taking diverſion on the water, God ſend me ſafe on Engliſh ground! and if ever I come in ſight of the ſea again, may a wat'ry grave be my portion: Firſt, to be terrified with the thoughts of drowning: Secondly, to be toſſed and tumbled about like a foot-ball: Thirdly to be drench'd with ſea-water: Fourthly, to be ſtunk to death with pitch and tar and the ſavoury ſcent of my fellow-ſufferers: Fifthly, to be racked with perpetual puking, till my guts are turned inſide out: And

ſixthly, and laſtly, to be taken priſoner and plundered by the French.

Heartly. Enough——Enough.——

Bruſh. Enough!—aye, and to ſpare—I wiſh I could give part to thoſe who envy my good fortune: But, how will the good Lady Bloomwell moralize when ſhe finds her daughter Miſs Harriet is fallen into the hands of Monſieur de Champignon!

Heartly. No more—that reflection alarms me!—yet I have nothing to fear—as there is no war declared, we ſhall ſoon be releaſed; and, in the mean time, the French will treat us with their uſual politeneſs.

Bruſh. Pox on their politeneſs! ah maſter! commend me to the blunt ſincerity of the true ſurly Britiſh maſtiff: The raſcallion that took my purſe bowed ſo low, and paid me ſo many compliments, that I ventured to argue the matter, in hopes of convincing him he was in the wrong; but he ſoon ſtopped my mouth with a vengeance, by clapping a cocked piſtol to my ear, and telling me he ſhould have the honour to blow my brains out: Another of thoſe polite gentlemen begged leave to exchange hats with me: A third fell in love with my ſilver ſhoe-buckles: Nay, that very individual nice buttock of beef, which I had juſt begun to ſurvey with looks of deſire, after the diſmal evacuation I had undergone, was raviſhed from my ſight by two famiſhed French wolves, who beheld it with equal joy and aſtoniſhment.

Heartly. I muſt confeſs they plundered us with great dexterity and diſpatch; and even Monſieur de Champignon, the commander, did not keep his hands clear of the pillage, an inſtance of rapaciouſneſs I did not expect to meet with in a gentleman and an officer. Sure he will behave as ſuch to Harriet!

Bruſh. Faith! not to flatter you, Sir, I take him to be one of thoſe fellows who owe their good fortune to nothing leſs than their good works: He firſt rifled your miſtreſs, and then made love to her with great gallanty; but you was in the right to call yourſelf her brother; if he knew you were his rival, you might paſs your time very diſagreeably.

Heartly. There are two officers on board, who ſeem to diſapprove of his conduct; they would not be concerned

in robbing us, nor would they ſuffer their ſoldiers to take any ſhare of the prey, but condoled Harriet and me on our misfortune, with marks of real concern.

Bruſh. You mean Lieutenant Oclabber and Enſign Maclaymore, a couple of damned renegadoes!—you lean upon a broken reed, if you truſt to their compaſſion.

Heartly. Oclabber I knew at Paris, when I travelled with my brother, and he then bore the character of an honeſt man and a brave officer: The other is an Highlander, excluded, I ſuppoſe, from his own country on account of the late rebellion; for that reaſon, perhaps, more apt to pity the diſtreſſed. I ſee them walking this way in cloſe conference—While I go down to the cabin to viſit my dear Harriet, you may lounge about and endeavour to overhear their converſation. [*Exeunt:*

SCENE II.

OCLABBER, MACLAYMORE.

Ocl. Arrah, for what?—I don't value Monſieur de Champignon a rotten potatoe; and when the ſhip goes aſhore, I will be after aſking him a ſhivel queſtion, as I told him to his face, when he turned his back upon me in the cabin.

Macl. Weel, weel, Maiſter Oclabber, I wonna tak upon me to ſay a'together ye'er in the wrang; but ye ken ther's a time for a' things; and we man gang hooly and fairly, while we're under command.

Ocl. You may talk as you plaiſe, Mr. Maclaymore—you're a man of learning, honey. Indeed, indeed I am always happy when you are ſpaiking, whether I am aſleep or awake a gra. But, by my ſhoul, I will maintain, after the breath is out of my body, that the Engliſh pleaſure boat had no right to be taken before the declaration of war; much more the priſoners to be plundered, which you know is the prerogative of pirates and privateers.

Macl. To be ſure, the law of nations does na preſcind that privilege in actual war: For ye ken, in ancient times, the victor teuk the *ſpolia opima;* and in my country to this very day, we follow the auld practice, *pecudum prædas agere.* But then, ye man take notice, nae gentleman

wad plunder a leddy—awa', awa'!—fie for ſhame! and a right ſonſy damſel too. I'm ſure it made my heart wae to ſee the ſaut brine come happin o'er her winſome cheeks.

Ocl. Devil burn me! but my bowels wept ſalt water to ſee her ſweet face look ſo ſorrowful!—och! the delicate creature!—ſhe's the very moral of my own honey, dear Sheelah o'Shannaghan, whom I left big with child in the county of Fermenaghan, grammachree!—Ochone, my dear Sheelah! Look here, ſhe made me this ſword-belt, of the ſkin of a ſea-wolf that I ſhot at the mouth of the Shannon; and I gave her at parting a nun's diſcipline to keep her ſweet fleſh in order—oh! my dear honey captain, cried ſhe, I ſhall never do penance, but I will be thinking of you. Ah! poor Sheelah, ſhe once met with a terrible misfortune gra: We were all a merry-making at the caſtle of Ballyclough: And ſo Sheelah having drank a cup too much, honey, fell down ſtairs out of a window. When I came to her, ſhe told me, ſhe was ſpeechleſs; and by my ſhoul it was tree long weeks before ſhe got upon her legs again: Then I compoſed a lamentation in the Iriſh tongue—and ſung it to the tune of Drimmendoo; but a friend of mine, of the order of Shaint Francis, has made a relation of it into Engliſh, and it goes very well to the words of Elen-a-Roon.

Macl. Whether is't an elegy or an ode?

Ocl. How the devil can it be odd, when the verſes are all even?

Macl. Gif it be an elegy, it muſt be written in the *carmen elegiacum*; or, gif it be an ode, it may be monocolos, dicolos, tetraſtrophos, or, perhaps, it's looſe iambics.

Ocl. Arra, upon my conſcience, I believe it is ſimple ſhambrucks, honey. But, if you'll hold your tongue, you ſhall ſee with your own eyes.

SONG.

I.

Ye ſwains of the Shannon, fair Sheelah is gone,
Ye ſwains of the Shannon, fair Sheelah is gone,
Ochone my dear jewel,
Why was you ſo cruel,
Amidſt my companions to leave me alone?

II.

Though teague ſhut the caſement in Ballyclough hall;
Though teague ſhut the caſement in Ballyclough hall;
In the dark ſhe was groping;
And found it wide open;
Och! the devil himſelf could not ſtand ſuch a fall.

III.

In beholding your charms, I can ſee them no more,
In beholding your charms, I can ſee them no more:
If you're dead, do but own it;
Then you'll hear me bemoan it;
For in loud lamentations your fate I'll deplore.

IV.

Devil curſe this occaſion with tumults and ſtrife!
Devil curſe this occaſion with tumults and ſtrife!
O! the month of November,
She'll have cauſe to remember,
As a black letter day all the days of her life.

V.

With a rope I could catch the dear creature I've loſt!
With a rope I could catch the dear creature I've loſt!
But, without a diſmiſſion,
I'd loſe my commiſſion,
And be hang'd with diſgrace for deſerting my poſt.

Shall I never ſee you my lovely Sheelah, theſe ſeven long years? An it plaiſed God to bring us within forty miles of each other, I would never deſire to be nearer all the days of my life.

Macl. Hoot-fie! Captain Oclabber, whare's a' your philoſophy? did ye never read Seneca *de Conſolatione?* or Voluſenus, my countryman, *de Tranquillitate Animi?* I'ſe warrant we have left a bonny laſs too, in the braes of Lochaber—my yellow-hair'd deary that wont to meet me amang the hether: Heigh, ſirs! how ſhe grat and cried, "Waes my heart that we ſhould ſunder." Whiſht, what's a' that rippet? [*A noiſe of drums.*

Ocl. Arran-mon-deaul! they are beating our grenadier's march, as if the enemy was in view; but I ſhall fetch them off long enough before they begin to charge; or, by Shaint Patrick! I'll beat their ſkulls to a pancake.

Macl. to a bag-piper croſſing the ſtage. Whare are ye ga'ane with the mooſic, Donald?

Piper. Guid fait! an pleaſe your honour, the commander has ſent for her to play a ſpring tó the faſenach damſel; but her nain ſell wad na pudge the length of her tae, without your honour's order; and ſhe'll gar a'

the men march before her with the Britiſh flag and the reſt of the plunder.

Macl. By my ſaul! he's a gowk, and a gauky, to ettle at diverting the poor laſſy with the puppet-ſhow of her ain misfortune; but, howſomever, Donald, ye may gang and entertain her with a pibroch of Macreemon's compoſition; and, if ſhe has any taſte for mooſic, ye'll ſoon gar her forget her diſaſter.

Ocl. Arrah, now ſince that's the caaſe, I would not be guilty of a rude thing to the lady; and if it be done to compoſe her ſpirits, by my ſoul! the drum ſhall beat till ſhe's both deaf and dumb, before I tell it to leave off —but we'll go and ſee the proceſſion. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.

A PROCESSION.

[*Firſt the bagpipe—then a ragged dirty ſheet for the French colours—a file of ſoldiers in tatters—the Engliſh priſoners —the plunder, in the midſt of which is an Engliſh buttock of beef carried on the ſhoulders of four meagre Frenchmen. The drum followed by a crew of French ſailors.*]

CHAMPIGNON, HARRIET.

Champ. Madame, you ſee de fortune of de war—my fate be admirable capricieux—you be de priſonier of my arm—I be de cautive of your eye—by gar! my glorie turn to my diſgrace!

Har. Truly, I think ſo too—for nothing can be more diſgraceful than what you have done.

Champ. Den vat I ave done!—parbleu! I not underſtand vat you mean, Madam—I ave de honour to carry off one great victorie over de Englis.

Har. You have carried off an unarmed boat, contrary to the law of nations; and rifled the paſſengers in oppoſition to the dictates of juſtice and humanity—I ſhould be glad to know what a common robber could do worſe.

Champ. Common robber! Madam, your ſerviteur tres humble—de charm of your eſprit be as brilliant as de attraits of your perſonne: In one and t'oder you be per-

faitement adorable—ſouffrez den dat I preſent my art at your altar.

Har. If you have any heart to preſent, it muſt be a very ſtale ſacrifice—for my own part, I have no taſte for the *fumet*; ſo you had better keep it for the ladies of your own country.

Champ. Ah cruelle!—de ladies en France will felcite demſelves dat you renounce de tendre of Monſieur de Champignon. Madame de la ducheſſe—mais taiſons—alte la—et la belle marquiſe! ah quelles ames!—vanite apart, madam, I ave de honneur to be one man a bonnes fortunes. Diable m'emporte! till I rencountre your invincible eye, I ave alway de ſame ſucces in love as in war.

Har. I dare ſay you have been always equally lucky and wiſe.

Champ. A ma charmante;—dat is more of your bonte den of my merite—permettez donc, dat I amuſe you wid the tranſports of my flame.

Har. In a proper place, I believe, I ſhould find them very entertaining.

Champ. How you raviſh me, my princeſſe!—avouez donc, you 'ave de ſentiments for my perſonne—parbleu it is all your generoſite—dere is noting extraordinary in my perſonne, diable m'emporte! hai, hai. [*Cuts a caper.*

Har. Indeed, monſieur, you do yourſelf injuſtice; for, you are certainly the moſt extraordinary perſon I had ever the honour to ſee.

Champ. Ah, ah, madame! I die under the charge of your politiſſe—your approbation ave diſſipe de brouillard dat envelope my fantaſie—your ſmile inſpire me wid allegreſſe—allons! vive l'amour! la, la, la, la——

Har. What a delicate pipe! I find, monſieur! you're alike perfect in all your accompliſhments.

Champ. Madame, your ſlave eternellment—perſonnes of gout ave own dat me ſing de chanſonettes not altogeder too bad, before I ave de honour to receive one ball de piſtolet in my gorge, wen I board de Englis man of war, one, two, tree, four, ten year ago: I take poſſeſſion ſabre a la main; but, by gar, de ennemi be opiniatre!—dey refuſe to ſubmit, and carry me to Plimount—dere I apprehend your tongue, madame—dere

I dance, and ave de gallantries parmi les belles filles Angloiſes: I teaſh dem to love—they teaſh me to ſing your jollies vaudevilles. "A coblere dere vas, and he live in one ſtall." Hai, hai! how you taſte my talens, madame?

Har. Oh! you ſing enchantingly; and ſo natural, one would imagine you had been a cobler all the days of your life. Ha, ha, ha.

Champ. Hai, hai, hai; if you not flatter me, madame, I be more happy dan Charlemagne—but I ave fear dat you mocquez de moi—tell a me of grace, my princeſſe, vat ſort of lover you ſhooſe—I vil transform myſelf for your plaiſir.

Har. I will not ſay what ſort of lover I like; but I'll ſing what ſort of lover I deſpiſe

Champ. By gar, ſhe love me eperduement. [*Aſide.*

SONG.

I.

From the man whom I love, though my heart I diſguiſe,
I will freely deſcribe the wretch I deſpiſe,
And if he has ſenſe but to balance a ſtraw,
He will ſure take the hint from the picture I draw.

II.

A wit without ſenſe, without fancy a beau,
Like a parrot he chatters, and ſtruts like a crow:
A peacock in pride, in grimace a baboon,
In courage a hind, in conceit a gaſcoon.

III.

As a vulture rapacious, in falſehood a fox,
Inconſtant as waves, and unfeeling as rocks:
As a tiger ferocious, perverſe as an hog,
In miſchief an ape, and in fawning a dog.

IV.

In a word, to ſum up all his talents together,
His heart is of lead, and his brain is of feather:
Yet, if he has ſenſe but to balance a ſtraw,
He will ſure take the hint from the picture I draw.

Champ. Morbleu, madame, you ſing a marveilles—by gar, de figure be ver ſingulier.

SCENE IV.

HARRIET, CHAMPIGNON, HEARTLY.

Champ. Monſ. Artlie, I ave de honeur to be your moſt umble ſerviteur—mademoiſelle your ſiſter aves des per-

fections of an ange; but ſhe be cold as de albatre. You do me good office—I become of your alliance—you command my ſervice.

Heartly. I hope my ſiſter will ſet proper value upon your addreſſes: And you may depend upon my beſt endeavours to perſuade her to treat your paſſion as it deſerves.

Champ. As it deſerve!—mardy! dat is all I deſire—den I treat you as one prince. [*A ſervant whiſpers and retires.*] Comment! que m'importe—madame, I muſt leave you for one moment to de garde of Monſieur your broder; but I return in one twinkle. [*Exit.*

SCENE V.

HEARTLY, HARRIET.

Heartly. My dear Harriet, have you good nature enough to forgive me for having expoſed you to all theſe dangers and misfortunes?

Har. I can't but be pleaſed with an event which has introduced me to the acquaintance of the accompliſhed Champignon, ha, ha, ha!

Heartly. You can't imagine how happy I am to ſee you bear your misfortune with ſuch good humour, after the terror you underwent at our being taken.

Har. I was indeed terrible alarmed when a cannon ſhot came whiſtling over our heads; and not a little dejected when I found myſelf a priſoner? but I imagine all danger diminiſhes, or at leaſt loſes part of its terror, the nearer you approach it: And as for this Champignon, he is ſuch a contemptible fellow, that, upon recollection, I almoſt deſpiſe myſelf for having been afraid of him—O' my conſcience! I believe all courage is acquired from practice. I don't doubt but in time I ſhould be able to ſtand a battery myſelf.

Heartly. Well, my fair Thaleſtris, ſhould you ever be attacked, I hope the aggreſſor will fall before you—Champignon has certainly exceeded his orders, and we ſhall be releaſed as ſoon as a repreſentation can be made to the French court.

Har. I ſhould be loth to trouble the court of France with matters of ſo little conſequence. Don't you think

it practicable to perſuade the captain to ſet us at liberty? There is one figure in rhetoric which I believe he would hardly reſiſt.

Heartly. I gueſs your meaning, and the experiment ſhall be tried, if we fail of ſucceſs from another quarter. I intend to make myſelf known to Occlabber, with whom I was formerly acquainted, and take his advice. He and the Scotch enſign are at variance with Champignon, and diſapprove of our being made priſoners.

SCENE VI.

HEARTLY, HARRIET, BRUSH.

Heartly to Bruſh. Well, Sir, have you been fiſhing the bonny Scot: Have you caught any intelligence?

Bruſh. Sir, I have done your buſineſs—Captain Maclaymore and I have been drinking a bottle of four wine to the health of Miſs Harriet and your worſhip; in a word, he is wholly devoted to your ſervice.

Har. Pray, Mr. Bruſh, what method did you take to ingratiate yourſelf with that proud ſtalking Highlander?

Bruſh. I won his heart with ſome tranſient encomiums on his country. I affected to admire his plaid, as an improvement on the Roman toga; ſwore it was a moſt ſoldierly garb; and ſaid, I did not wonder to ſee it adopted by a nation equally renowned for learning and valour.

Heartly. Theſe inſidious compliments could not fail to undermine his loftineſs.

Bruſh. He adjuſted his bonnet, rolled his quid from one cheek to the other, threw his plaid over his left ſhoulder with an air of importance, ſtrutted to the farther end of the deck; then returning with his hard features unbended into a ghaſtly ſmile, "By my ſaul mon." ſays he, "ye're na fule; I ſee you ken ſoo weel how to mak proper diſtinctions—you and I man be better acquainted." I bowed very low in return for the great honour he did me—hinted, that though now I was in the ſtation of a ſervant, I had ſome pretenſions to family; and ſighing, cried *tempora mutantur, et nos mutamur in illis.*

Heartly. That ſcrap of Latin was a home thruſt—You ſee, ſirrah, the benefit of a charity ſchool.

Bruſh. Ay, little did I think, when I was flogged for neglecting my Accidence, that ever my learning would turn to ſuch account—Captain Maclaymore was ſurpriſed to hear me ſpeak Latin: Yet he found fault with my pronunciation. He ſhook me by the hand, though I was a little ſhy of that compliment, and ſaid he did not expect to find flowers under a nettle: But I put him in mind of the ſinget cat, for I was better than I was bonny—then he carried me to his cabin, where we might diſcourſe more freely; told me the captain was "a light-headed guſe," and expreſſed his concern at your captivity, which he ſaid was a flagrant infraction of the treaty of Aix la Chapelle.

Har. There, I hope, you backed his opinion with all your eloquence.

Bruſh. I extolled his underſtanding; intereſted his gallantry in the cauſe of a diſtreſſed lady; and, in order to cliniſh my remonſtrance, told him that my maſter's great grandmother's aunt was a Scotchwoman of the name of Macintoſh, and that Mr. Heartly piqued himſelf on the Highland blood that ran in his veins.

Heartly. I'm obliged to your invention for the honour of that alliance—I hope the diſcovery had a proper effect upon my couſin Maclaymore.

Bruſh. He no ſooner heard that particular, than he ſtarted up, crying, "What the deel ſay ye? Macintoſh! "—ſwunds mon! that's the name of my ain mither—"wha kens but Meſter Heartly and I may be coozens ſe-"venteen times removed?" Then he gave me a full account of his pedigree for twelve generations, and hawked up the names of his progenitors till they ſet my teeth on edge. To conclude, he has promiſed to give you all the aſſiſtance in his power, and even to favour our eſcape; for, over and above his other motives, I find he longs to return to his own country, and thinks a piece of ſervice done to an Engliſh gentleman may enable him to gratify that inclination.

Heartly. But what ſcheme have you laid for our eſcape?

Bruſh. The boat is along-ſide—our men are permitted to walk the deck—When the captain retires to reſt,

and the watch is relieving, nothing will be more eaſy than to ſtep on board of our own galley, cut the rope, hoiſt the ſails, and make the beſt of our way to Old England.

Heartly. But, you don't conſider that Monſieur de Champignon, if alarmed, may ſlip his cable and give us chaſe—nay, compliment us with a diſh of ſugar-plumbs that may be very hard of digeſtion.

Bruſh. There the friendſhip of Maclaymore will be of ſervice: For, as ſoon as our flight is known, he and his men, on pretence of being alert, will make ſuch a buſtle and confuſion, that nothing can be done until we are out of their reach; and then we muſt truſt to our own canvaſs and the trim of our veſſel, which is a prime ſailer.

Harriet. The project is feaſible, and may be the more practicable, if the Iriſh lieutenant can be brought to co-operate with the enſign.

Heartly. Odſo! there he comes—Bruſh, go and wait upon Miſs Harriet to her cabin, while I accoſt this Hibernian.

SCENE VII.

HEARTLY, OCLABBER.

Ocl. Your humble ſervant, Sir,—I hope the lady is plaiſed with her accommodation—don't you begin to be refreſhed with the French air blowing over the ſea?—upon my conſcience! now, it's ſo delicate and keen, that for my own part, honey, I have been as hungry as an Iriſh wolf dog ever ſince I came to this kingdom.

Heartly. Sir, I thank you for your kind inquiry—I am no ſtranger to the French air, nor to the politeneſs of Captain Oclabber.—What! have you quite forgot your old acquaintace?

Ocl. Acquaintance, honey—by my ſhoul! I ſhould be proud to recollect your countenance, though I never ſaw you before in the days of my life.

Heartly. Don't you remember two Engliſhmen at Paris, about three years ago, of the name of Heartly?

Ocl. Ub ub oo!—by Shaint Patrick, I remember you as well as nothing in the world—Arrah, now, whether is it your own ſelf or your brother?

When there are two lovers in the caaſe, 'tis natural to wiſh one of them away.—Come along with me, honey; we'll hold a council of war with Enſign Maclaymore—perhaps he may contrive mains to part you.—No man knows better how to make a ſoldierly retreat.

Bruſh. Soldierly or unſoldierly, it ſignifies not a button—ſo we do but eſcape; I ſhall be glad to get away at any rate, even if I ſhould fly like a thief from the gallows.

Ocl. Devil fire you, my dear! you're a wag—Arrah, who told you that my friend Maclaymore eſcaped from the gallows?—By my ſhoul! 'tis all *fortune de la guerre.*—Indeed, indeed, I would never deſire to command a better corps than what I could form out of the honeſt gentlemen you have hanged in England.

Heartly. I'm ſo confounded and perplexed, in conſequence of this unlucky diſcovery, that I can't ſtart one diſtinct thought, much leſs contribute to any ſcheme that requires cool deliberation.

Ocl. Array faith, my dear, we muſt leave thoſe things to wiſer heads—For my own part, I'm a ſoldier, and never burden my brain with unneceſſary baggage.

I won't pretend to lead, but I follow in the throng;
And as I don't think at all, I can never think wrong.

ACT II.

SCENE I.

A great noiſe and buſtle behind the ſcenes.

MACLAYMORE, CHAMPIGNON.

Champ. running upon the ſtage in a ridiculous diſhabille. Prenez garde qu'elle ne vous echappe!—aux armes!—Monſ. le Second—contre maitre—la chaloupe! la chaloupe!

Macl. overturning him, as if through miſtake. As I ſall anſwar, the folks are a' gaen daft!—deel ſtap out your een! I'm nae ſic midge but ye might a ſeen me in your porridge.

Champ. Ah meutrier! aſſaſſin! vous avez tue votre commandant!—holla ho! mes gens, a moi.

Macl. Hout, na! it canna be our commander Monſieur de Champignon, running about in the dark like a worricow!—Preſerve us a'! it's the vara mon—weel I wot, Sir, I'm right ſorry to find you in ſic a pickle—but wha thought to meet with you playing at blind Harry on deck?

Champ. riſing. Ventre ſaingris! my whole brain be derangee!—traitre! you be in de complot.

Macl. Traiter, me nae traiter! Meſter Champignon, or gude faith! you and I man ha' our kail through the reek.

Champ. Were be de priſoniers? tell a me dat—ha!—mort de ma vie! de Englis vaiſſeau!—de priſe! de priſoniers!—ſacrebleu! ma gloire! mes richeſſes! rendez moi les priſoniers—you be de enſeigne, you be de officier.

Macl. Troth, I ken foo weel I'm an officer—I wuſs ſome other people, who haud their heeds unco high, ken'd the reſpect due to an officer, we ſhould na be faſh'd with a' this din.

Champ. Tell a me au moment, were be Monſieur Artlie? were be de priſoniers? wat you beat my brains wid your ſottiſes?

Macl. Nay, ſin ye treat me with ſa little ceremony, I man tell you, Meſter Heartly was na committed to my charge, and ſae ye may gang and leuk after him; and as for priſoners, I ken of nae priſoners but your ain valet, whom you ordered to be put in irons this morning for ſupping part of your bouillon, and if the poor fallow had na done the deed, I think he muſt have ſtarved for want of victuals.

Champ. Morbleu! Monſieur Maclaimore, you diſtrait me wid your babil. I demand de Englis priſoniers—m' entendez vous?

Macl. Monſieur de Champignon, je vous entens bien—there was nae Engliſh priſoner here; for I man tell you, Sir, that if ever you had read *Grotius de Jure Belli ac Pacis*, or *Puffendorf de Officio Hominis et Civis*, ye wad a' ſeen he could na be in the predicament of a *captus in bello*, or an *obſes* or *vades*—for what? ye'll ſay—becauſe he was na teuk *flagrante bello*—*ergo* he was nae priſoner of war—now what ſays the learned Puffendorf?

Champ. Comment! you call be Puff-and-horf? ventre bleu! you be one impertinent.

Macl. What, what!—that's a paughty word, Sir—that's nae language for a gentleman—nae mair o' that, or guid faith we'll forget where we are.

Champ. Morbleu! you ave forget dat I be your general—your chief.

Macl. By my ſaul, mon, that's ſtrange news indeed—You my chief! you chief of the Maclaymores!

Champ. Oui, moi, ruſtre—moi qui vous parle.

Macl. Dinna ruſtre me, Sir, or deel dam my ſaul, but I'll wraſt your head aff your ſhoulders, if ye was the beſt Champignon in France. [*They draw, and fight.*

SCENE II.

OCLABBER, CHAMPIGNON, MACLAYMORE.

Ocl. Devil fire you, my lads! what's the maining of all this diſturbance?—o' my conſcience! there's no ſuch thing as reſting below—a man would lie as quiet at the bottom of the ſea—I've been abed theſe tree hours, but I could not cloſe an eye, gra; for you waked me before I fell aſleep. [*Pretending to diſcover Champignon.*] Arrah now, don't I dream, honey? What, is it your own ſelf Monſieur de Champignon, going to attack my enſign? By my ſhoul! that's not ſo ſhivil now, aboard of your own ſhip. Gentlemen, I put you both under arreſt in the king's name—you ſhall ſee one another locked in your cabins with your own hands; and then, if you cut one another's troats, by the bleſſed virgin! you ſhall be brought to a court-martial, and tried for your lives, agra.

Macl. ſheathing his ſword. Weel, weel, Sir—ye're my commanding officer; *tuum eſt imperare*—but, he and I ſall meet before mountains meet, that's a'.

Champ. to Ocl. Vat! you preſume to entremettre in mes affaires d'honeur—you have the hardieſſe to diſpute wid me de command of dis vaiſſeau de guerre?—tell a me if you know my condition, ha?

Ocl. Indeed, indeed my dear, I believe your preſent condition is not very ſavoury; but, if Enſign Maclaymore had made you ſhorter by the head, your condition would have been ſtill worſe; and yet upon my conſcience! I

have ſeen a man command ſuch a frigate as this, without any head at all.

Champ. Monſieur O-claw-bear, you mocquez de moi —you not ſeem to know my nobleſſe—dat I deſcend of de bonne famille—dat my progeniteurs ave bear de honourable cotte—de cotte of antiquite.

Ocl. By my ſhoul! when I knew you firſt, you bore a very old coat yourſelf, my dear; for it was thread-bare and out at elbows.

Champ. Ah! la mauvaiſe plaiſanterie.—Daignez, my goot lieutenant O-claw-bear, to onderſtand dat I ave de grands alliances—du bien—de rente—dat I ave regale des princes in my chateau.

Ocl. Och! I beg you chateau's pardon, grammachree! I have had the honour to ſee it on the banks of the Garonne—and by my ſoul! a very venerable building it was —aye, and very well bred to boot, honey; for it ſtood always uncovered; and never refuſed entrance to any paſſenger, even though it were the wind and the rain, gra.

Champ. You pretendez to know my famille, ha?

Ocl. By Shaint Patrick, I know them as well as the father that bore them. Your nephew is a begging brother of the order of Shaint Francis; Mademoiſelle, your ſiſter, eſpouſed an eminent ſavatier in the county of Bearne; and your own ſhelf, my dear, firſt mounted the ſtage as a charlatan, then ſerved the Count de Bardaſch for your diverſion, and now, by the king's favour, you command a frigate of twelve guns, lying at anchor within the province of Normandy.

Champ. Ah quelle mediſance!—que vous imaginez bien, Monſieur—but I vil repreſent your conduit to des marchaux of France; and dey vil convince you dat Monſieur de Champignon is one perſonne of ſome conſideration—un charlatan!—mardy! dat be ver plaiſant. Meſſieurs, ſerviteur—I go to give de neceſſaires ordres pour rattraper de Englis chaloupe—juſque au revoir—Charlatan!—Savatier!—Morte de ma vie. *Exit.*

SCENE III.

OCLABBER, MACLAYMORE.

Ocl. Faith and troth, my dear, you'll ſee the chaloupe far enough out of ſight by this time.

Macl. By my ſaul! captain, ye ſent him awa' with a flea in his bonnet—He'll no care to wreſtle anither fa' with you in a hurry—He had the wrang ſow by the lug.

Ocl. If he will be after playing at rubbers, he muſt expect to meet with bowls—pooh! I main, he muſt look to meet with bowls, if he will be playing at rubbers—arra man deaul! that's not the thing neither; but you know my maining, as the ſaying is.

Macl. Hoot aye—I'ſe warrant I ken how to gar your bools row right—and troth I canna help thinking but I played my part pretty weel for a beginner.

Ocl. For a beginner!—Devil fetch me, but you played like a man that jokes in earneſt: But your joke was like to cut too keen, honey, when I came to part you; and yet I came as ſoon as you tipped me the wink with your finger.

Macl. Let that flie ſtick i' the wa'—when the dirt's dry, it will rub out. But now we man tak care of the poor waff laſſy that's left under our protection, and defend her from the maggots of this daft Frenchman.

Ocl. I will be after confining him to his cabin, if he offers to touch a hair of her beard, agra.

Macl. It's now break of day—dinna ye ſee the bonny grey-eyed morn blinking o'er yon moſſy craig?—We'll e'en gang doun and tak a taſſe of whiſky together, and then ſee what's to be done for Miſs Harriet.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.

HARRIET, BRUSH.

Har. O Lord! I'm in ſuch a flutter—What was the meaning of all that noiſe?—Bruſh, are you ſure your maſter is out of all danger of being retaken?

Bruſh. Yes, yes, Madam, ſafe enough for this bout. The two land officers performed their parts to a miracle. My maſter and our people ſlipped into the boat, without being diſturbed by the centries, who were tutored for the purpoſe; and they were almoſt out of ſight, before Champignon was alarmed by a ſtarved Frenchman, whoſe hunger kept him awake: But now they have doubled the point of land, and in four hours or ſo will be in ſight of

ſweet Old England. I'm ſure I ſent many a wiſhful look after them.

Har. What! you are ſorry then for having ſtaid behind with me?

Bruſh. O! by no manner of means, Ma'am—to be ſure you did me an infinite deal of honour, Ma'am, in deſiring that I might be left, when you ſpoke to my maſter through the barricado; but yet, Ma'am, I have ſuch a regard for Mr. Heartly, Ma'am, that I ſhould be glad to ſhare all his dangers, Ma'am—though, after all is done and ſaid, I don't think it was very kind in him to leave his miſtreſs and faithful ſervant in ſuch a dilemma.

Har. Nay, don't accuſe your maſter unjuſtly. You know how unwillingly he complied with my requeſt. We could not gueſs what villanous ſteps this fellow, Champignon, might have taken to conceal his rapine, which Mr. Heartly will now have an opportunity to repreſent in its true colours.

Bruſh. Well—Heaven grant him ſucceſs, and that ſpeedily. For my own part, I have been ſo long uſed to his company, that I grow quite chicken-hearted in his abſence. If I had broke my leg two days ago, I ſhould not have been in this quandary. God forgive the man that firſt contrived parties of pleaſure on the water.

Har. Hang fear, Bruſh, and pluck up your courage. I have ſome ſmall ſkill in phyſiognomy, and can aſſure you it is not your fate to die by water—Ha! I ſee the captain coming this way—I muſt bear the brunt of another ſtorm.

Bruſh. Odſo! I'll run down to Lieutenant Oclabber, and his enſign, and give them notice, in caſe there ſhould be occaſion to interpoſe. [*Exit Bruſh.*

SCENE V.

CHAMPIGNON, HARRIET.

Champ. Madame, you pardon my preſomption dat I pay my devoirs in diſhabille—bot it be all for your ſervice. Monſieur your amant ave decampe ſans façon. I take de alarm, and make all my efforts to procure de plaiſir of ſeeing him again.—Ah! he be de gallant homme to abandon his maitreſſe!

Har. Is there no poſſibility of bringing him back?

Champ. By gar! it be tout a fait impoſſible. He ſteal comme one thief into de chaloupe, and vaniſh in de obſcurite!

Har. I'm heartily glad to hear it!

Champ. For vat you be glad, my princeſs, ha?

Har. That he's no longer in your power.

Champ. Bon!—juſte ciel!—how you make me happy to ſee you glad, Madame! la, la, la, ra, ra—Ventre bleu! he be one fugitif—if we rencontre again, revanche! revanche! la, la, la, ra, ra. Permettez donc, Madame, dat I ave de honeur to languiſſe before your feet—ave pitie of me—take my ſword—plongez dans my boſom. Ah! larron! perfide! la, la, la, ra, ra.

[*He ſings, kneels, and dances by turns.*

Monſieur Artlie is not in my power—bon—but, by gar, Madame, you know who is, hah!

Har. As for me, my ſex protects me. I am here, indeed a priſoner, and alone; but you will not, you dare not treat me with indignity.

Champ. Dare not!—Bravo—Shew to me de man vil ſay I dare not—ça, ha, hah! [*Capers about.*

Har. You're in ſuch a dancing humour, 'tis pity you ſhould want muſic. Shall I ſing you a ſong?

Champ. Ah cruelle! you gouverne vid ſoverain empire over my art—you rouſe me into one ſtorm—you ſing me into one calm.

SONG.

I

Let the nymph ſtill avoid, and be deaf to the ſwain,
Who in tranſports of paſſion affects to complain;
For his rage, not his love, in that frenzy is ſhown,
And the blaſt that blows loudeſt is ſoon overblown.

II.

But the ſhepherd whom Cupid has pierc'd to the heart,
Will ſubmiſſive adore, and rejoice in the ſmart;
Or in plaintive ſoft murmurs, his boſom-felt woe,
Like the ſmooth gliding current of rivers, will flow.

III.

Though ſilent his tongue, he will plead with his eyes,
And his heart own your ſway in a tribute of ſighs;
But, when he accoſts you in meadow or grove,
His tale is all tenderneſs, rapture, and love.

SCENE VI.

CHAMPIGNON, HARRIET, BRUSH.

Bruſh. News! news! there's an Engliſh man of war's boat along-ſide, with a flag of truce.

Champ. Comment!—Madame, you ave de bonté to retire to your cabane—I go dreſs myſelf, and give de audience. [*Exit Champignon.*

SCENE VII.

HARRIET, BRUSH.

Har. O Bruſh! Bruſh! how my little heart palpitates with fear and ſuſpenſe! What does the arrival of this boat portend?

Bruſh. Our deliverance from the hands of the Philiſtines, I hope. It could not arrive at a more ſeaſonable juncture; for my ſpirits are quite flagged—not that I am ſo much concerned on my own account, Ma'am—but I can't be inſenſible to your danger, Ma'am. I ſhould be an ungrateful wretch, if I did not feel for one that is ſo dear to Mr. Heartly, Ma'am.

Har. Really, Mr. Bruſh, you ſeem to have improved mightily in politeneſs, ſince you lived among theſe French gentlemen.

Bruſh. Lived, Ma'am—I have been dying hourly ſince I came aboard; and that politeneſs which you are pleaſed to mention, Ma'am, is nothing but ſneaking fear and hen-heartedneſs, which I believe (God forgive me) is the true ſource of all French politeneſs; a kind of poverty of ſpirit, or want of ſincerity. I ſhould be very proud to be drubbed in England for my inſolence and ill-breeding.

Har. Well, I hope you'll ſoon be drubbed to your heart's content. When we reviſit our own country, you ſhall have all my intereſt towards the accompliſhment of your wiſh. Meanwhile, do me the favour to make further inquiry about this ſame flag of truce, and bring an account of what ſhall paſs, to my cabin, where I ſhall wait for you with the utmoſt impatience. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VIII.

BLOCK, *and another Seaman.*

Block. Smite my limbs, Sam, if the lieftenant do clap her aboard, here is no plunder; nothing but rags and vermin, as the ſaying is. We ſhall ſhare nothing but the guns and the head-money, if you call thoſe heads that have no bodies belonging to 'um.—Mind that there ſcarecrow—ſee how his cloth hangs in the wind—Adzooks! the fellow has got no ſtowage; he's all upper-work and head-ſail: I'll be damn'd if the firſt hard ſquall don't blow him into the air like the peeling of an onion.

To him, BRUSH.

Heh?—how!—no ſure!—Yes faith but it is—Odſo! couſin Block, who thought to meet with you among the French?

Block. What cheer ho? How does mother Margery? Meet me among the French! Agad! I'd never deſire better paſtime, than to be among 'em with a good cutlaſh in my hand, and a brace of piſtols in my girdle. Why, look you, brother, hearing as how you and your miſtreſs were wind-bound, we are come along ſide to tow you into the offing.

Bruſh. The Lord reward you, couſin: But what if this damn'd Frenchman ſhould refuſe to part with us?

Block. Why then Lieftenant Lyon is a cruiſing to windward of that there head-land; he'll be along ſide in half a glaſs, fall under your ſtern, clap his helm a ſtarboard, rake you fore and aft, and ſend the Frenchman and every ſoul on board to the devil, in the turning of an hand-ſpike.

Bruſh. The devil he will! But, couſin, what muſt become of me then?

Block. Thereafter as it may be—You muſt take your hap, I do ſuppoſe. We ſailors never mind thoſe things. Every ſhot has its commiſſion, d'ye ſee—we muſt all die one time, as the ſaying is—if you go down now, it may ſave your going aloft another time, brother.

Bruſh. O! curſe your comfort.

Block. Heark ye, brother, this is a cold morning—have

you picked up never a runlet along ſhore? What d'ye ſay to a ſlug?

Bruſh. Slug!—O, I underſtand you.

[*Fetches a keg of brandy, which Block ſets to his head.*

Block. Right Nantz, ſtrike my top-ſails!—Odds heart! this is the only thing in France that agrees with an Engliſhman's conſtitution. Let us drink out their brandy, and then knock out their brains. This is the way to demoliſh the ſpirit of the French. An Engliſhman will fight at a minute's warning, brother; but a Frenchman's heart muſt be buoyed up with brandy. No more keg, no more courage.

Bruſh. T'other pull, couſin.

Block. Avaſt, avaſt—no more canvas than we can carry—we know the trim of our own veſſel—Smite my croſs trees! we begin to yaw already—Hiccup.

Bruſh. Odſo! our commander is coming upon deck to give audience to your midſhipman.

Block. Steady. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IX.

CHAMPIGNON, OCLABBER, MACLAYMORE, BRUSH, TOM HAULYARD, *an Engliſh midſhipman.*

Champ. Eh bien, Monſieur, qui ſouhaite il?

Haul. Anan, Monſeer ſweat ye!—Agad! I believe, if we come along ſide of you, we'll make you all ſweat.

Macl. That's mair than ye can tell, my lad—ye may gar me ſweet with fetching; but it's no in your breeks to gar me ſweet with fear.

Ocl. You may ſweat me after I'm dead, honey; but, by the bleſſed virgin! you ſhall not ſweat me alive; and ſo you may be after delivering your meſſage, gra.

Haul. If it wa'n't for ſuch as you that ſhow your own country the fore top-ſail, wold our enemy's cable, and man their quarters, they would never ride out the gale, or dare to ſhow their colours at ſea: But, howſomever, we'll leave that bowling i' the block, as the ſaying is. If ſo be as how that there Frenchman is commander of this here veſſel, I have orders from my officer to demand an Engliſh young woman, with all her baggage and thingumbobs, that he took yeſterday out of a pleaſure-boat,

belonging to one Mr. Heartly of Dorſetſhire, who ſlipped the painter this morning.

Champ. Mardy! de commiſſion be very peremptoire!—ecoute mon ami, vat you call Monſieur your commandant?

Haul. I don't take in your palaver, not I; and mayhap you don't know my lingo; but, agad! we'll ſoon make you underſtand plain Engliſh.

Ocl. Monſieur Champignon wants to know who is your commanding officer, honey.

Haul. Who ſhould it be, but Lieftenant Lyon of the Triton man of war of ſixty guns! as bold a heart as ever crack'd biſcuit.

Champ. Bon!—ſuppoſe dat I refuſe de command of Monſieur Lionne?

Haul. Suppoſe!—if you do, he'll run you along ſide, yard arm and yard arm, and blow you out of the water; that's all.

Champ. By gar! he vill find himſelf miſtaken; here is not vater for one ſixty gun ſhip *(aſide)*. Heark you me, Monſieur, vat is your name, tell Monſieur Lionne dat I am called Michel Sanſon Goluat de Champignon, Marquis de Vermiſſeau; dat I ave de honeur to ſerve de king; dat fear be one bagatelle of which I ave de mepris; dat I regard you ambaſſade as de galimatias; dat my courage ſuffice to attack one whole Englis eſcadre; and dat if Monſ. Lionne be diſpoſed to rendre moi un viſite, I ſhall ave de glorie to chaſtiſe his preſomption; ſo I permitte you go your way.

Macl. Diſſentio.—Bide you, Billy—there's nae clerk here, I trow—weel, Lieutenant Oclabber, I tak inſtruments in your haund againſt the proceedings of Captain Champignon, wha has incarcerate the Engliſh leddy, contrair to the law of nature and nations. Now, cocky, ye may gang about your buſineſs; when ye come back, I'ſe tauk with you in another ſtyle.

Ocl. For my own part, honey, I ſhall be after ſhowing you ſome diverſion in the way of my duty; but I taake you to witneſs that I have no hand in detaining the lady, wo is plaiſed to favour us with her company againſt her own conſent, gra.

Haul. Mayhap you may truſt to your ſhoal water—if

you do, you're taken all aback, brother; for Lieftenant Lyon commands a tender of twelve guns, and fifty ſtout hands, that draws leſs than this here frigate by the ſtreak —and—heh!—agad! yonder ſhe comes round the point with a flowing ſail—B'w'ye, Monſeer Champignon! all hands to quarters; up with your white rag; I doubt my officer and I will taſte ſome of your ſoup meagre by that time you pipe to dinner. [*Exit.*

SCENE X.

CHAMPIGNON, OCLABBER, MACLAYMORE, BRUSH.

Champ. Mort de ma vie! je ne vous attendois par ſitot, a quelle cote faut il que je me tourne? ſacrebleu! [*Aſide.*

Meſſieurs, I demand your counſeil; you proteſt againſt my conduite; if you tink me ave done de injuſtice, you vil find me tout a fait raiſonable; we render Mademoiſelle to de Englis; for I judge it bien mal-a-propos to engage de enemi, vere de ſpirit of contradiction reign among ourſelves.

Ocl. Faith and troth! my dear, the contradiction is all over; you have nothing to do but to ſtation your men; and as for Mr. Maclaymore and my own ſhelf, the Engliſh cannon may make our legs and arms play at loggerhead in the air, honey, but we'll ſtand by you for the glory of France, in ſpite of the devil and all his works, gra.

Macl. Never faſh your noddle about me; conſcience! I'ſe no be the firſt to cry barley.

Ocl. Enſign Maclaymore, I order you to go and take poſſeſſion of the forecaſtle with your diviſion, honey. I wiſh they may ſtand fire till you're all knock'd o' the head, gra; but I'm afraid they're no better than dunghills; for they were raiſed from the canaille of Paris. And now I'll go and put the young lady below water, where ſhe may laugh in her own ſleeve, gra; for if the ſhip ſhould be blown up in the engagement, ſhe is no more than a paſſenger, you know; and then ſhe'll be releaſed without ranſom.

Bruſh. God bleſs you, Captain Oclabber, for your generoſity to my poor lady: I was ordered by my maſter to give her cloſe attendance; and though I have a great

curioſity to ſee the battle, Miſs Harriet muſt by no means be left alone.

[*Exeunt Oclabber, Maclaymore, and Bruſh.*

SCENE XI.

Champ. Ventre ſaingris! que ferai-je! Je me ſens tout embrouille—ces autre Anglois ſont ſi precipites! que diable les etouffe. Allons! Aux armes! matelots—mes enfans! chardon—chiſon—ortie—fumiere—l'hibou—la faim—allons—vite, vite—aux armes!

[*A crew of tatterdemalions running up and down the deck in confuſion—the noiſe of cannon and muſketry.*

A mon bon dieu! ayez pitie de moi encore—qu' on m' apporte de l'eau de vie. Ah miſerable pecheur!—je ſuis mort!—je ſuis enterre!—ah! voila aſſez mes enfans—ceſſez—deſiſtez—il faut amener—Monſieur O-claw-bear—Lieutenant O-claw-bear!

SCENE XII.

Ocl. Holloa! [*Behind the ſcenes.*

Champ. Laiſſez—laiſſez—leave off your fire—de ennemi be too ſtrong—we ave abaiſſee le drapeau—I command you leave off—

Ocl. Leave off! arrah for what?

Champ. De ennemi vil accord no quartier.

Ocl. Devil burn your quarter!—what ſignifies quarter when we're all kill'd?—The men are lying along the deck like ſo many paiſe; and there is ſuch an abominable ſtench, gra—by my ſhoul! I believe they were all rotten before they died.

Coming upon the ſtage. Arrah mon deaul! I believe the Engliſh have made a compact with the devil to do ſuch execution; for my enſign has loſt all his men too but the piper, and they two have cleared the forecaſtle ſword in hand.

Bruſh in great trepidation. O Lord! Mr. Oclabber, your enſign is playing the devil—hacking and hewing about him like a fury; for the love of God interpoſe; my maſter is come aboard, and if they ſhould meet, there will be murder.

Ocl. By my ſhoul! I know he has a regard for Mr.

Heartly, and if he kills him, it will be in the way of friendſhip, honey; howſomever, if there's any miſchief done, I'll go and prevent it. [*Exit Oclabber.*

SCENE XIII.

CHAMPIGNON, *Lieuteuant* LYON, HEARTLY, HAULYARD, BRUSH, BLOCK, *and Engliſh ſailors.*

Champ. throwing himſelf on his knees and preſenting his ſword. Ah! miſericorde, Monſieur Artlie, quartier—quartier, pour l'amour de Dieu!

Heartly. I have no time to mind ſuch triſles—where is my Harriet!

Bruſh. I'll ſhow you the way to the poor ſoltary pigeon—maſter, this is a happy day!

[*Exeunt Heartly and Bruſh.*

SCENE XIV.

OCLABBER, MACLAYMORE, *Lieutenant* LYON, HAULYARD, CHAMPIGNON, &c.

Ocl. delivering his ſword. Gentlemen your's is the fortune of the day. You ought to be kind to us, for we have given you very little trouble. Our commander there is a very ſhivil perſon, gra; he don't turſt after the blood of his enemy. As for the ſoldiers, I ſhall ſay nothing; but upon my ſhoul! now they're the nimbleſt dead men I ever ſaw in the days of my life! about two minutes agone they were lying like ſo many ſlaughtered ſheep, and now they are all ſcamper'd off about their buſineſs.

Macl. As I ſall anſwer, it's a black burning ſhame! and I hope the king will order them to be decimated, that is, every tenth man to be hanged *in terrorem.*

Ocl. By my ſhalvation! if the king will take my advice, every ſingle man of them ſhall be decimated.

SCENE THE LAST.

To them HEARTLY, *leading in* HARRIET.

Heartly embracing Ocl. and Macl. Gentlemen, I'm heartily glad of having an opportunity to return, in ſome meaſure, the civilities you have ſhown to this young

lady. Mr. Lyon, I beg you'll order their ſwords to be reſtored; they were in no ſhape acceſſary to our grievances.

Ocl. receiving his ſword. Mr. Lyon, you're extremely polite; and I hope I ſhall never die till I have an opportunity to return the compliment. Madam, I wiſh you joy of our misfortune, with all my ſhoul.

Lyon. I a'n't uſed to make ſpeeches, Madam, but I'm very glad it was in my power to ſerve ſuch a fine lady, eſpecially as my old ſchool-follow Heartly is ſo much concerned in your deliverance. As for this fair-weather ſpark, Monſieur de Champignon, if he can't ſhow a commiſſion authoriſing him to make depredations on the Engliſh, I ſhall order him to be hoiſted up to the yard's arm by the neck, as a pirate, but if he can produce his orders, he ſhall be treated as a priſoner of war, though not before he has reſtored what he pilfered from you and Mr. Heartly.

Har. At that rate, I'm afraid I ſhall loſe an admirer. You ſee, Monſieur de Champignon, the old proverb fulfilled; "Hanging and marriage go by deſtiny;" yet I ſhould be very ſorry to occaſion even the death of a ſinner.

Champ. Madame, I implore your pitie and clemence; Monſieur Artlie, I am one pauvre miſerable not worth your revanche.

Enter Block drunk, with a portmanteau on his ſhoulder.

Block. Thus and no near—bear a hand, my hearts—

[*Lays it down, opens it, takes out and puts on a tawdry ſuit of Champignon's clothes.*

By your leave, Tinſey—Odds heart! theſe braces are ſo tort, I muſt keep my yards ſquare, as the ſaying is.

Lyon. Ahey! what the devil have we got here? how now, Block?

Block. All's fair plunder between decks—we ha'n't broke bulk, I'll aſſure you—ſtand clear—I'll ſoon overhaul the reſt of the cargo.

[*Pulls out a long leather queue with red ribbons.* What's here? the tiller of a monkey!—s'blood the fellow has no more brains than a noddy, to leave the red ropes hanging over his ſtern, whereby the enemy may board him on the poop.

[*The next thing that appears, is a very coarſe canvas ſhirt, with very fine laced ruffles.*

This here is the right trim of a Frenchman—all gingerbread-work, flouriſh and compliment aloft, and all rags and rottenneſs alow. [*Draws out a plume of feathers.* Adzooks! this is Mounſeer's vane, that, like his fancy, veers with every puff to all the points of the compaſs—Hark'ee, Sam—the nob muſt needs be damnably light that's rigg'd with ſuch a deal of feather. The French are ſo well fledg'd, no wonder they are ſo ready to fly.

[*Finds a pocket-glaſs, a paper of rouge and Spaniſh wool, with which he daubs his face.*

Swing the ſwivel-ey'd ſon of a whore! he fights under falſe colours, like a pirate—here's a lubberly dog, he dares not ſhow his own face to the weather.

Champ. Ah! Monſieur de Belokke, ave compaſſion—

Block. Don't be afraid, Frenchman—you ſee I have hoiſted your jacket, thof I ſtruck your enſign—we Engliſhmen never cut throats in cold blood: The beſt way of beating the French is to ſpare all their Shampinions—Odd's heart! I would all their commanders were of your trim, brother; we'd ſoon have the French navy at Spithead.

Lyon. But, in the meantime, I ſhall have you to the gangway, you drunken ſwab.

Block. Swab! I did ſwab the forcaſtle clear of the enemy, that I muſt confeſs.

Lyon None of your jaw, you lubber.

Block. Lubber!—man and boy, twenty years in the ſervice—lubber!—Ben Block was the man that taught thee, Tom Lyon, to hand, reef, and ſteer—ſo much for the ſervice of Old England; but, go thy ways, Ben, thy timbers are crazy, thy planks are ſtarted, and thy bottom is foul: I have ſeen the day when thou would'ſt have ſhown thy colours with the beſt o'un.

Lyon Peace, porpuſs.

Block. I am a porpuſs; for I ſpout ſalt-water d'ye ſee. I'll be damn'd if grief and ſorrow ha'n't ſet my eye-pumps a going.

Har. Come, Mr. Block, I muſt make you friends with Lieutenant Lyon. As he has been your pupil, he muſt

be an able navigator; and this is no time for our able ſeamen to fall out among themſelves.

Block. Why, look ye here, miſtreſs, I muſt confeſs, how, he's as briſk a ſeaman as ever greas'd a marlinſpike —I'll turn'un a-drift with e'er a he that reefed a foreſail —A will fetch up his leeway with a wet ſail, as the ſaying is—and as for my own part, d'ye ſee, I have ſtood by him with my blood—and my heart—and my liver, in all weathers—blow high—blow low.

Har. Well, I hope you'll live to ſee and ſail with him as an admiral.

Block. I doubt a muſt be hove down firſt, keel out of the water, miſtreſs, and be well ſcrubbed, d'ye ſee, then a may to ſea when a wool, and hoiſt the Union flag. ——Stand clear John Frenchman—"The Royal Sove- "reign of England will ride triumphant over the waves," as the ſong goes.

Lyon. And now for you, Monſieur Champignon.

Champ. Monſieur Lionne, I ave not altogether contradicted, but, perhaps, a little exceed my orders, which were to take one Engliſh chaloupe for intelligence.

Heartly. Well, I'm perſuaded Mr. Lyon will not be very ſevere in his ſcrutiny; and, to ſhow that we Engliſhmen can forgive injuries, and fight without malice, give me your hand—I can't part with my miſtreſs; but in other reſpects I am Monſieur de Champignon's humble ſervant.

Lyon. I was once taken by the French, who uſed me nobly. I'm a witneſs of their valour, and an inſtance of their politeneſs; but there are Champignons in every ſervice. While France uſes us like friends, we will return her civilities: When ſhe breaks her treaties, and grows inſolent, we will drub her over to her good behaviour—Jack Haulyard, you have got a ſong to the purpoſe, that won't I believe, be diſagreeable to the company.

SONG.

I.

Behold! my brave Britons, the fair ſpringing gale,
Fill a bumper and toſs off your glaſſes:
Buſs and part with your frolicſome laſſes;
Then aboard and unfurl the wide-flowing ſail.

CHORUS.

While Britiſh oak beneath us rolls,
And Engliſh courage fires our ſouls
To crown our toils, the fates decree
The wealth and empire of the ſea.

II.

Our canvas and cares to the winds we diſplay,
Life and fortune we cheerfully venture;
And we laugh, and we quaff, and we banter;
Nor think of to-morrow while ſure of to-day.

CHORUS.

While Britiſh, oak, &c.

III.

The ſtreamers of France at a diſtance appear!
We muſt mind other muſic than catches;
Man our quarters, and handle our matches:
Our cannon produce, and for battle prepare.

CHORUS.

While Britiſh oak, &c.

IV.

Engender'd in ſmoke and deliver'd in flame,
Britiſh vengeance rolls loud as the thunder!
Let the vault of the ſky burſt aſunder,
So victory follows with riches and fame.

CHORUS.

While Britiſh oak beneath us rolls,
And Engliſh courage fires our ſouls:
To crown our toils, the fates decree
The wealth and empire of the ſea.

EPILOGUE.

AYE— now I can with pleaſure look around,
Safe as I am, thank Heaven, on Engliſh ground—
In a dark dungeon to be ſtow'd away,
Midſt roaring, thund'ring, danger and diſmay;
Expos'd to fire and water, ſword, and bullet—
Might damp the heart of any virgin pullet---
I dread to think what might have come to paſs,
Had not the Britiſh Lyon quell'd the Gallic aſs—
By Champignon a wretched victim led
To cloiſter'd cell, or more deteſted bed,
My days in pray'r and faſting I had ſpent:
As nun or wife, alike a penitent.
His gallantry, ſo confident and eager,
Had prov'd a meſs of delicate ſoupe—maigre;
To bootleſs longings I had fallen a martyr:
But heav'n be prais'd, the Frenchman caught a tartar.
Yet ſoft—our author's fate you muſt decree:
Shall he come ſafe to port, or ſink at ſea?
Your ſentence, ſweet or bitter, ſoft or ſore,
Floats his frail bark, or runs it bump aſhore.
Ye wits above reſtrain your awful thunder:
In his firſt cruiſe, 'twere pity he ſhould founder,
[*To the gal.*
Safe from your ſhot he fears no other foe,
Nor gulf, but that which horrid yawns below,
[*To the pit.*
The braveſt chiefs, ev'n Hannibal and Cato,
Have here been tam'd with—pippin and potatoe.
Our bard embarks in a more Chriſtian cauſe;
He craves not mercy; but he claims applauſe.
His pen againſt the hoſtile French is drawn,
Who damns him, is no Antigallican.
Indulg'd with fav'ring gales and ſmiling ſkies,
Hereafter he may board a richer prize.
But if this welkin angry clouds deform,
[*Looking round the houſe.*
And hollow groans portend the approaching ſtorm:
Should the deſcending ſhow'rs of hail redouble,
[*To the gal.*
And theſe rough billows hiſs, and boil and bubble,
[*To the pit.*
He'll launch no more on ſuch fell ſeas of trouble.

ADVICE, AND REPROOF:

TWO SATIRES.

FIRST PUBLISHED IN THE YEAR 1746 AND 1747.

———Sed podice levi
Cæduntur tumidæ medico ridente Mariſcæ.——
O Proceres! cenſore opus eſt an haruſpice nobis?
JUVENAL.

———nam quis
Peccandi finem poſuit ſibi? quando recepit
Ejectum ſemel attrità de fronte ruborem?
Ibid.

ADVICE: A SATIRE.

POET, FRIEND.

Poet. ENOUGH, enough; all this we knew before;
'Tis infamous, I grant it, to be poor:
And who ſo much to ſenſe and glory loſt,
Will hug the curſe that not one joy can boaſt!
From the pale hag, O! could I once break looſe;
Divorc'd, all hell ſhould not re-tie the nooſe!
Not with more care ſhall H—— avoid his wife,
Not Cope fly ſwifter, laſhing for his life;
Than I to leave the meagre fiend behind.
Friend. Exert your talents; nature, ever kind,
Enough for happineſs, beſtows on all;
'Tis ſloth or pride that finds her gifts too ſmall—
Why ſleeps the muſe!——Is there no room for praiſe,
When ſuch bright conſtellations blaze?

Ver. 8. A general famous for an expeditious retreat, though not quite ſo deliberate as that of the ten thouſand Greeks from Perſia; having unfortunately forgot to bring his army along with him.

When ſage Newcaſtle, abſtinently great,
Neglects his food to cater for the ſtate;
And Grafton, tow'ring Atlas of the throne,
So well rewards a genius like his own:
Granville and Bath illuſtrious, need I name
For ſober dignity and ſpotleſs fame;
Or Pitt th' unſhaken Abdiel yet unſung:
Thy candour, Chomdly! and thy truth O Younge!
Poet. Th' advice is good; the queſtion only, whether
Theſe names and virtues ever dwelt together?
But what of that? the more the bard ſhall claim,
Who can create as well as cheriſh fame.
But one thing more,—how loud muſt I repeat,
To rouſe th' engag'd attention of the great;
Amus'd, perhaps, with C——'s prolific bum,
Or rapt amidſt the tranſports of a drum;
While the grim porter watches ev'ry door,
Stern foe to tradeſmen, poets, and the poor.
Th' Heſperian dragon not more fierce and fell;
Nor the gaunt growling janitor of hell.
Ev'n Atticus (ſo wills the voice of fate),
Enſhrines in clouded majeſty, his ſtate;

Ver. 15. Alluding to the philoſophical contempt which this great perſonage manifeſted for the ſenſual delights of the ſtomach.

Ver. 17. This noble peer, remarkable for ſublimity of parts, by virtue of his office, Lord Chamberlain, conferred the laureat on Colley Cibber, Eſq. a delectable bard, whoſe character has already employed, together with his own, the greateſt pens of the age.

Ver. 19. Two noblemen famous in their day, for nothing more than their fortitude in bearing the ſcorn and reproach of their country.

Ver. 21. Abdiel, according to Milton, was the only ſeraph that preſerved his integrity in the midſt of corruption:—

Among the innumerable falſe, unmov'd,
Unſhaken, unſeduced, unterrify'd—

Ver. 29. This alludes to a phenomenon, not more ſtrange than true. The perſon here meant, having actually laid upwards of forty eggs, as ſeveral phyſicians and fellows of the Royal Society can atteſt; one of whom, we hear, has undertaken the incubation, and will, no doubt, favour the world with an account of his ſucceſs. Some virtuoſi affirm, that ſuch productions muſt be the effect of a certain intercourſe of organs not fit to be named.

Ver. 30. This is a riotous aſſembly of faſhionable people, of both ſexes, at a private houſe, conſiſting of ſome hundreds; not unaptly ſtyled a drum, from the noiſe and emptineſs of the entertainment. There are alſo drum-major, rout, tempeſt and hurricane, differing only in degrees of multitude and uproar, as the ſignificant name of each declares.

Nor to th' adoring crowd vouchſafes regard,
Though prieſts adore, and ev'ry prieſt a bard.
Shall I then follow with the venal tribe,
And on the threſhold the baſe mongrel bribe?
Bribe him, to feaſt my mute imploring eye,
With ſome proud lord, who ſmiles a gracious lie!
A lie to captivate my heedleſs youth,
Degrade my talents, and debauch my truth;
While fool'd with hope, revolves my joyleſs day,
And friends, and fame, and fortune fleet away;
'Till ſcandal, indigence, and ſcorn, my lot,
The dreary jail entombs me, where I rot!
Is there, ye varniſh'd ruffians of the ſtate!
Not one, among the millions whom ye cheat,
Who, while he totters on the brink of woe,
Dares, ere he falls, attempt th' avenging blow!
A ſteady blow! his languid ſoul to feaſt;
And rid his country of one curſe at leaſt!
Friend. What! turn aſſaſſin?
Poet. Let th' aſſaſſin bleed;
My fearleſs verſe ſhall juſtify the deed.
'Tis he, who lures th' unpractis'd mind aſtray,
Then leaves the wretch to miſery, a prey;
Perverts the race of virtue juſt begun,
And ſtabs the public in her ruin'd ſon.
Friend. Heav'ns how you rail! the man's conſum'd by ſpite!
If Lockman's fate attends you, when you write;
Let prudence more propitious arts inſpire:
The lower ſtill you crawl, you'll climb the higher.
Go then, with ev'ry ſupple virtue ſtor'd,
And thrive, the favour'd valet of my lord.
Is that denied? a boon more humble crave;
And miniſter to him who ſerves a ſlave:
Be ſure you faſten on promotion's ſcale;
Ev'n if you ſeize ſome footman by the tail:
Th' aſcent is eaſy, and the proſpect clear,
From the ſmirch'd ſcullion to th' embroider'd peer.
Th' ambitious drudge preferr'd, poſtillion rides,
Advanc'd again, the chair benighted guides;

Ver. 62. To be little read, and leſs approved.

Here doom'd, if nature ſtrung his ſinewy frame,
The ſlave (perhaps) of ſome inſatiate dame;
But if exempted from th' Herculean toil,
A fairer field awaits him, rich with ſpoil;
There ſhall he ſhine, with ming'ling honours bright,
His maſter's pathic, pimp, and paraſite;
Then ſtrut a captain, if his wiſh be war,
And graſp in hope, a truncheon and a ſtar:
Or if the ſweets of peace his ſoul allure,
Baſk at his eaſe in ſome warm ſinecure;
His fate in conſul, clerk, or agent, vary,
Or croſs the ſeas, an envoy's ſecretary:
Compos'd of falſehood, ignorance, and pride,
A proſtrate ſycophant ſhall riſe a L——d:
And won from kennels to th' impure embrace,
Accompliſh'd Warran triumph o'er diſgrace.

Poet. Eternal infamy his name ſurround,
Who planted firſt that vice on Britiſh ground!
A vice that ſpite of ſenſe and nature reigns,
And poiſons genial love, and manhood ſtains!
Pollio! the pride of ſcience and its ſhame,
The muſe weeps o'er thee, while ſhe brands thy name!
Abhorrent views that proſtituted groom,
Th' indecent grotto and polluted doom!
There only may the ſpurious paſſion glow,
Where not one laurel decks the caitiff's brow,
Obſcene with crimes avow'd, of every dye,
Corruption, luſt, oppreſſion, perjury:
Let Chardin with a chaplet round his head,
The taſte of Maro and Anacreon plead,
" Sir, Flaccus knew to live as well as write,
" And kept, like me, two boys array'd in white."
Worthy to feel that appetence of fame
Which rivals Horace only in his ſhame!

Ver. 88. This child of dirt (to uſe a great author's expreſſion), without any other quality than grovelling adulation, has arrived at the power of inſulting his betters every day.

Ver. 90. Another ſon of fortune, who owes his preſent affluence to the moſt infamous qualifications; commonly called Bruſh Warren, from having been a ſhoe-black. It is ſaid he was kept by both ſexes at one time.

Ver. 103. This genial knight wore at his own banquet a garland of flowers, in imitation of the ancients; and kept two roſy boys robed in white for the entertainment of his gueſts.

Let Iſis wail in murmurs, as ſhe runs,
Her tempting fathers and her yielding ſons;
While dulneſs ſcreens the failings of the church,
Nor leaves one ſliding rabbi in the lurch:
Far other raptures let the breaſt contain,
Where heav'n-born taſte and emulation reign.
Friend. Shall not a thouſand virtues, then, atone
In thy ſtrict cenſure for the breach of one?
If Bubo keeps a catamite or whore,
His bounty feeds the beggar at his door:
And though no mortal credits Curio's word,
A ſcore of lacquies fatten at his board:
To Chriſtian meekneſs ſacrifice thy ſpleen,
And ſtrive thy neighbour's weakneſſes to ſcreen.
Poet. Scorn'd be the bard, and wither'd all his fame,
Who wounds a brother weeping o'er his ſhame!
But if an impious wretch, with frantic pride,
Throws honour, truth, and decency aſide,
If nor by reaſon aw'd, nor check'd by fears,
He counts his glories from the ſtains he bears;
Th' indignant muſe to virtue's aid ſhall riſe,
And fix the brand of infamy on vice.
What if arous'd at his imperious call,
An hundred footſteps echo through his hall;
And on high columns rear'd his lofty dome
Proclaims th' united art of Greece and Rome:
What though whole hecatombs his crew regale,
And each dependent ſlumbers o'er his ale;
While he remains through mouths unnumber'd paſt,
Indulge the beggar and the dogs at laſt:
Say, friend, is it benevolence of ſoul,
Or pompous vanity, that prompts the whole?
Theſe ſons of ſloth, who by profuſion thrive,
His pride inveigled from the public hive:

Ver. 109. In alluſion to the unnatural orgies ſaid to be ſolemnized on the banks of this river; particularly at one place, where a much greater ſanctity of morals and taſte might be expected.

Ver. 111. This is a decent and parental office, in which dulneſs is employed; namely, to conceal the failings of her children; and exactly conformable to that inſtance of filial piety which we meet with in the ſon of Noah, who went backward to cover the nakedneſs of his father, when he lay expoſed, from the ſcoffs and inſults of a malicious world.

And numbers pine in ſolitary woe,
Who furniſh'd out this phantaſy of ſhow.
When ſilent miſery aſſail'd his eyes,
Did ere his throbbing boſom ſympathize?
Or his extenſive charity pervade
To thoſe who languiſh in the barren ſhade,
Where oft by want and modeſty ſuppreſs'd,
The bootleſs talent warms the lonely breaſt?
No! petrify'd by dulneſs and diſdain,
Beyond the feeling of another's pain,
The tear of pity ne'er bedew'd his eye,
Nor his lewd boſom felt the ſocial ſigh!
Friend. Alike to thee his virtue or his vice,
If his hand lib'ral owns thy merit's price.
Poet. Sooner in hopeleſs anguiſh would I mourn,
Than owe my fortune to the man I ſcorn!—
What new reſource?
Friend. A thouſand yet remain,
That bloom with honours, or that teem with gain:
Theſe arts,—are they beneath—beyond thy care?
Devote thy ſtudies to th' auſpicious fair:
Of truth diveſted, let thy tongue ſupply
The hinted ſlander, and the whiſper'd lie;
All merit mock, all qualities depreſs,
Save thoſe that grace th' excelling patroneſs;
Trophies to her, on others' follies raiſe,
And heard with joy, by defamation praiſe:
To this collect each faculty of face,
And ev'ry feat perform of ſly grimace;
Let the grave ſneer ſarcaſtic ſpeak thee ſhrewd,
The ſmutty joke ridiculouſly lewd;
And the loud laugh through all its changes rung,
Applaud th' abortive ſallies of her tongue:
Enroll'd a member in the ſacred liſt,
Soon ſhalt thou ſharp in company, at whiſt;
Her midnight rites and revels regulate,
Prieſt of her love, and demon of her hate.

Ver. 177. Theſe are myſteries performed, like thoſe of the Dea Bona, by females only; conſequently it cannot be expected that we ſhould here explain them: We have, notwithſtanding, found means to learn ſome anecdotes concerning them, which we ſhall reſerve for another opportunity.

Poet. But ſay, what recompence for all this waſte
Of honour, truth, attention, time, and taſte?
To ſhine confeſs'd, her zany and her tool,
And fall by what I roſe, low ridicule?
Again ſhall Handel raiſe her laurel'd brow,
Again ſhall harmony with rapture glow!
The ſpells diſſolve, the combination breaks,
And Punch no longer Fraſi's rival ſqueaks.
Lo, Ruſſell falls a ſacrifice to whim,
And ſtarts amaz'd in Newgate from his dream:
With trembling hands implores their promis'd aid;
And ſees their favour like a viſion fade!
Is this, ye faithleſs Syrens!—this the joy,
To which your ſmiles th' unwary wretch decoy?
Naked and ſhackled, on the pavement prone,
His mangled fleſh devouring from the bone;
Rage in his heart, diſtraction in his eye!
Behold, inhuman hags! your minion lie!
Behold his gay career to ruin run,
By you ſeduc'd, abandon'd and undone!
Rather in garret pent, ſecure from harm,
My muſe with murders ſhall the town alarm;
Or plunge in politics with patriot zeal,
And ſnarl like Guthrie for the public weal,
Than crawl an inſect in a beldame's power,
And dread the cruſh of caprice ev'ry hour!

Friend. 'Tis well;—enjoy that petulance of ſtyle,
And, like the envious adder, lick the file:

Ver. 187. A famous mimic and ſinger. The perſon here meant, by the qualifications above deſcribed, had inſinuated himſelf into the confidence of certain ladies of quality, who engaged him to ſet up a puppet ſhow, in oppoſition to the oratorios of Handel, againſt whom they were unreaſonably prejudiced. But the town not ſeconding the capricious undertaking, they deſerted their manager, whom they had promiſed to ſupport, and let him ſink under the expence they had entailed upon him: He was accordingly thrown into priſon, where his diſappointment got the better of his reaſon, and he remained in all the ecſtaſy of deſpair; till at laſt his generous patroneſſes, after much ſolicitation, were prevailed upon to collect five pounds, on the payment of which he was admitted into Bedlam, where he continued bereft of his underſtanding, and died in the utmoſt miſery.

Ver. 199. Theſe are the dreams and fictions of Grub-ſtreet, with which the good people of this metropolis are daily alarmed and entertained.

Ver. 206. This alludes to the fable of the viper and file, applicable to all the unſucceſsful efforts of malice and envy.

What though ſucceſs will not attend on all!
Who bravely dares, muſt ſometimes riſk a fall,
Behold the bounteous board of fortune ſpread;
Each weakneſs, vice and folly yields thee bread;
Would'ſt thou with prudent condeſcenſion ſtrive
On the long-ſettled terms of life to thrive.
Poet. What! join the crew that pilfer one another,
Betray my freind, and perſecute my brother:
Turn uſurer o'er *cent. per cent.* to brood,
Or quack, to feed like fleas on human blood?
Friend. Or if thy ſoul can brook the gilded curſe,
Some changeling heireſs ſteal—
Poet. Why not a purſe?
Two things I dread, my conſcience and the law.
Friend. How? dread a mumbling bear without a claw?
Nor this, nor that, is ſtandard right or wrong,
Till minted by the mercenary tongue;
And what is conſcience but a fiend of ſtrife,
That chills the joys, and damps the ſcenes of life?
The wayward child of vanity and fear,
The peeviſh dam of poverty and care;
Unnumber'd woes engender in the breaſt
That entertains the rude, ungrateful gueſt.
Poet. Hail, ſacred pow'r! my glory and my guide!
Fair ſource of mental peace, whate'er betide;
Safe in thy ſhelter, let diſaſter roll
Eternal hurricanes around my ſoul:
My ſoul ſerene amidſt the ſtorms ſhall reign,
And ſmile to ſee their fury burſt in vain!
Friend. Too coy to flatter, and too proud to ſerve,
Thine be the joyleſs dignity to ſtarve.
Poet. No;—thanks to diſcord war ſhall be my friend;
And moral rage, heroic courage lend
To pierce the gleaming ſquadron of the foe,
And win renown by ſome diſtinguiſh'd blow.
Friend. Renown! ay, do—unkennel the whole pack
Of military cowards on thy back.
What difference, ſay, 'twixt him who bravely ſtood,
And him who ſought the boſom of the wood?

Ver. 240. This, ſurely, occaſioned Churchill's

"Too proud to flatter, too ſincere to lie."

Envenom'd calumny the firſt ſhall brand,
The laſt enjoy a ribbon and command.
Poet. If ſuch be life, its wretches I deplore,
And long to quit th' unhoſpitable ſhore.

REPROOF: A SATIRE.

POET, FRIEND.

Poet. HOWE'ER I turn, or whereſoe'er I tread,
This giddy world ſtill rattles round my head!
I pant for ſilence ev'n in this retreat—
Good Heav'n! what demon thunders at the gate?
Friend. In vain you ſtrive in this ſequeſter'd nook,
To ſhroud you from an injur'd friend's rebuke.
Poet. An injur'd friend! who challenges the name?
If you, what title juſtifies the claim?
Did e'er your heart o'er my affliction grieve,
Your int'reſt prop me, or your praiſe relieve?
Or could my wants my ſoul ſo far ſubdue,
That in diſtreſs ſhe crawl'd for aid to you?
But let us grant th' indulgence e'er ſo ſtrong;
Diſplay without reſerve th' imagin'd wrong;
Among your kindred have I kindled ſtrife,
Deflow'r'd your daughter, or debauch'd your wife;
Traduc'd your credit, bubbled you at game;
Or ſoil'd with infamous reproach your name?
Friend. No: but your cynic vanity (you'll own)
Expos'd by private council to the town.
Poet. Such fair advice 'twere pity ſure to loſe
I grant I printed it for public uſe.
Friend. Yes, ſeaſon'd with your own remarks between,
Inflam'd with ſo much virulence of ſpleen,
That the mild town (to give the dev'l his due)
Aſcrib'd the whole performance to a Jew.

Ver. 248, 249. This laſt line relates to the behaviour of a general on a certain occaſion, who diſcovered an extreme paſſion for the cool ſhade during the heat of the day: The Hanoverian general in the battle of Dittingen.

Poet. Jews, Turks, or Pagans, hallowed be the mouth
That teems with moral zeal and dauntleſs truth!
Prove that my partial ſtrain adopts one lie,
No penitent more mortify'd than I;
Not ev'n the wretch in ſhackles doom'd to groan
Beneath th' inhuman ſcoffs of Williamſon.
Friend. Hold—let us ſee this boaſted ſelf-denial—
The vanquiſh'd knight has triumph'd in his trial.
Poet. What then!
Friend. Your own ſarcaſtic verſe unſay,
That brands him as a trembling runaway.
Poet. With all my ſoul!—th' imputed charge rehearſe:
I'll own my error and expunge my verſe.
Come, come,—howe'er the day was loſt or won,
The world allows the race was fairly run.
But leſt the truth too naked ſhould appear,
A robe of ſable ſhall the goddeſs wear;
When ſheep were ſubject to the lion's reign,
Ere man acquir'd dominion o'er the plain,
Voracious wolves fierce ruſhing from the rocks,
Devour'd without controul th' unguarded flocks:
The ſuff'rers crowding round the royal cave,
Their monarch's pity and protection crave:
Not that they wanted valour, force, or arms,
To ſhield their lambs from danger and alarms;
A thouſand rams the champions of the fold,
In ſtrength of horn and patriot virtue bold,
Engag'd in firm aſſociation ſtood
Their lives devoted to the public good:
A warlike chieftan was their ſole requeſt,
To marſhal, guide, inſtruct, and rule the reſt:
Their pray'r was heard, and by conſent of all,
A courtier ape appointed general.——
He went, he led, arrang'd the battle ſtood,
The ſavage foe came pouring like a flood,
Then Pug aghaſt, fled ſwifter than the wind,
Nor deign'd in threeſcore miles to look behind;
While ev'ry band for orders bleat in vain,
And fall in ſlaughter'd heaps upon the plain;

Ver. 32. Governor of the Tower.
Ver. 34. Sir John Cope.

The ſcar'd baboon (to cut the matter ſhort)
With all his ſpeed could not outrun report;
And, to appeaſe the clamours of the nation,
'Twas fit his caſe ſhould ſtand examination.
The board was nam'd---each worthy took his place;
All ſenior members of the horned race,—
The wedder, goat, ram, elk, and ox, were there,
And a grave hoary ſtag poſſeſs'd the chair.—
Th' inquiry paſt, each in his turn began
The culprit's conduct variouſly to ſcan.
At length the ſage uprear'd his awful creſt,
And pauſing thus his fellow chiefs addreſs'd—
If age, that from this head its honours ſtole,
Hath not impair'd the functions of my ſoul,
But ſacred wiſdom with experience bought,
While this weak frame decays, matures my thought;
Th' important iſſue of this grand debate,
May furniſh precedent for your own fate;
Should ever fortune call you to repel
The ſhaggy foe ſo deſperate and fell—
'Tis plain, you ſay, his excellence Sir Ape
From the dire field accompliſh'd an eſcape;
Alas! our fellow ſubjects ne'er had bled,
If ev'ry ram that fell like him had fled;
Certes, thoſe ſheep were rather mad than brave,
Which ſcorn'd th' example their wiſe leader gave.
Let us then ev'ry vulgar hint diſdain,
And from our brother's laurel waſh the ſtain.—
Th' admiring court applauds the preſident,
And Pug was clear'd by general conſent.
Friend. There needs no magic to divine your ſcope,
Mark'd as you are a flagrant miſanthrope:

Ver. 70. It is not to be wondered at that this board conſiſted of horned cattle only, ſince, before the uſe of arms, every creature was obliged in war to fight with ſuch weapons as nature afforded it, conſequently thoſe ſupplied with horns bid faireſt for ſignalizing themſelves in the field, and carrying off the firſt poſts in the army.—But I obſerve, that, among the members of this court, there is no mention made of ſuch of the horned family as were chiefly celebrated for valour; namely, the bull, unicorn, rhinoceros, &c. which gives reaſon to ſuſpect, that theſe laſt were either out of favour with the miniſtry, laid aſide on account of their great age, or that the ape had intereſt enough at court to exclude them from the number of his judges.

Sworn foe to good and bad, to great and ſmall,
Thy rankling pen produces nought but gall:
Let virtue ſtruggle, or let glory ſhine,
Thy verſe affords not one approving line.—
Poet. Hail, ſacred themes! the muſe's chief delight!
O bring the darling objects to my ſight!
My breaſt with elevated thought ſhall glow,
My fancy brighten, and my numbers flow!
Th' Aonian grove with rapture would I tread,
To crop unfading wreaths for William's head;
But that my ſtrain, unheard amidſt the throng,
Muſt yield to Lockman's ode, and Hanbury's ſong.
Nor woul'd th' enamour'd muſe neglect to pay
To Stanhope's worth the tributary lay;
The ſoul unſtain'd, the ſenſe ſublime to paint,
A people's patron, pride, and ornament!
Did not his virtues eterniz'd remain
The boaſted theme of Pope's immortal ſtrain.
Not ev'n the pleaſing taſk is left, to raiſe
A grateful monument to Barnard's praiſe;
Elſe ſhould the venerable patriot ſtand
Th' unſhaken pillar of a ſinking land.
The gladd'ning proſpect let me ſtill purſue,
And bring fair virtue's triumph to the view!
Alike to me, by fortune bleſt or not,
From ſoaring Cobham to the melting Scot,
But, lo! a ſwarm of harpies intervene,
To ravage, mangle, and pollute the ſcene!
Gorg'd with our plunder, yet ſtill gaunt for ſpoil,
Rapacious Gideon faſtens on our iſle:
Inſatiate Laſcelles, and the fiend Vaneck,
Riſe on our ruins, and enjoy the wreck;

Ver. 108. Two productions reſembling one another very much in that cloying mediocrity, which Horace compares to—*Craſſum unguentum, et ſardo cum melle papaver.*

Ver. 110. The Earl of Cheſterfield.

Ver. 122. Daniel Mackercher, Eſq. a man of ſuch primitive ſimplicity, that he may be ſaid to have exceeded the ſcripture injunction, by not only parting with his cloak and coat, but with his ſhirt alſo, to relieve a brother in diſtreſs: Mr. Anneſley, who claimed the Angleſea title and eſtate.

Ver. 126. A triumvirate of contractors, who, ſcorning the narrow views of private uſury, found means to lay a whole ſtate under contribu-

While griping Jaſper glories in his prize,
Wrung from the widow's tears and orphan's cries.
Friend. Relaps'd again! ſtrange tendency to rail!
I fear'd this meekneſs would not long prevail.
Poet. You deem it rancour then?—Look round and ſee
What vices flouriſh ſtill, unprun'd by me:
Corruption, roll'd in a triumphant car,
Diſplays his burniſh'd front and glitt'ring ſtar;
Nor heeds the public ſcorn, or tranſient curſe,
Unknown alike to honour and remorſe.
Behold the leering belle, careſs'd by all,
Adorn each private feaſt and public ball;
Where peers attentive liſten and adore,
And not one matron ſhuns the titled whore.
At Peter's obſequies I ſung no dirge;
Nor has my ſatire yet ſupply'd a ſcourge
For the vile tribe of uſurers and bites,
Who ſneak at Jonathan's, and ſwear at White's.
Each low purſuit, and ſlighter folly bred
Within the ſelfiſh heart and hollow head,
Thrives uncontroul'd, and bloſſoms o'er the land,
Nor feels the rigour of my chaſt'ning hand:
While Codrus ſhivers o'er his bags of gold,
By famine wither'd, and benumb'd by cold;
I mark his haggard eyes with frenzy roll,
And feaſt upon the terrors of his ſoul;
The wrecks of war, the perils of the deep,
That curſe with hideous dreams the caitiff's ſleep;
Inſolvent debtors, thieves, and civil ſtrife,
Which daily perſecute his wretched life;
With all the horrors of prophetic dread,
That rack his boſom while the mail is read.
Safe from the road, untainted by the ſchool,
A judge by birth, by deſtiny a fool,

tion, and pillage a kingdom of immenſe ſums, under the protection of law.

Ver. 129. A Chriſtian of bowels, who lends money to his friends in want at the moderate intereſt of 5ol. per cent. A man famous for buying poor ſeamen's tickets.

Ver. 139. A wit of the firſt water, celebrated for her talent of repartee and double entendre.

Ver. 143. Peter Waters, Eſq. whoſe character is too well known to need deſcription.

While the young lordling ſtruts with native pride,
His party-colour'd tutor by his ſide,
Pleas'd, let me own the pious mother's care,
Who to the brawny ſire commits her heir.
Fraught with the ſpirit of a Gothic monk,
Let Rich, with dulneſs and devotion drunk,
Enjoy the peal ſo barbarous and loud,
While his brain ſpues new monſters to the crowd;
I ſee with joy the vaticide deplore
An hell-denouncing prieſt and ſov'reign whore.
Let ev'ry poliſh'd dame, and genial lord,
Employ the ſocial chair and venal board;
Debauch'd from ſenſe, let doubtful meanings run,
The vague conundrum, and the prurient pun;
While the vain fop, with apiſh grin, regards
The giggling minx half-chok'd behind her cards:
Theſe, and a thouſand idle pranks I deem
The motley ſpawn of ignorance and whim.
Let pride conceive and folly propagate,
The faſhion ſtill adopts the ſpurious brat:
Nothing ſo ſtrange that faſhion cannot tame;
By this diſhonour ceaſes to be ſhame:

Ver. 164. Whether it be for the reaſon aſſigned in the ſubſequent lines, or the frugality of the parents, who are unwilling to throw away money in making their children wiſer than themſelves, I know not; but certain it is, that many people of faſhion commit the education of their heirs to ſome truſty footman, with a particular command to keep maſter out of the ſtable.

Ver. 170. Monſters of abſurdity.

" He look'd, and ſaw a ſable ſorc'rer riſe,
" Swift to whoſe hand a winged volume flies;
" All ſudden, gorgons hiſs, and dragons glare,
" And ten horned fiends and giants ruſh to war.
" Hell riſes, heaven deſcends, and dance on earth,
" Gods, imps, and monſters, muſic, rage, and mirth,
" A fire, a jig, a battle, and a ball,
" Till one wide conflagration ſwallows all." DUNCIAD.

Ver. 174. This is no other than an empty chair, carried about with great formality to perform viſits; by the help of which a decent correſpondence is often maintained among people of faſhion, many years together, without one perſonal interview, to the great honour of hoſpitality and good neighbourhood.

Ibid. *Venal board.*] Equally applicable to the dining and card-table, where every gueſt muſt pay an extravagant price for what he has.

This weans from bluſhes lewd Tyrawley's face,
Gives Hawley praiſe, and Ingoldſby diſgrace,
From Mead to Thompſon ſhifts the palm at once,
A meddling, prating, blund'ring, buſy dunce!
And may (ſhould taſte a little more decline)
Transform the nation to an herd of ſwine.
Friend. The fatal period haſtens on apace!
Nor will thy verſe th' obſcene event diſgrace;
Thy flow'rs of poetry that ſmell ſo ſtrong,
The keeneſt appetite have loth'd the ſong;
Condemn'd by Clark, Banks, Barrowby, and Chitty,
And all the crop-ear'd critics of the city:
While ſagely neutral ſits thy ſilent friend,
Alike averſe to cenſure or commend.
Poet. Peace to the gentle ſoul that could deny
His invocated voice to fill the cry!
And let me ſtill the ſentiment diſdain
Of him who never ſpeaks but to arraign;
The ſneering ſon of calumny and ſcorn,
Whom neither arts, nor ſenſe, nor ſoul adorn:
Or his, who, to maintain a critic's rank,
Though conſcious of his own internal blank,
His want of taſte unwilling to betray,
'Twixt ſenſe and nonſenſe heſitates all day;
With brow contracted hears each paſſage read,
And often hums and ſhakes his empty head;
Until ſome oracle ador'd pronounce
The paſſive bard a poet or a dunce;
Then in loud clamour echoes back the word,
'Tis bold! inſipid—ſoaring or abſurd.
Theſe, and th' unnumber'd ſhoals of ſmaller fry,
That nibble round, I pity and defy,

Ver. 186. *Hawley.*] A general ſo renowned for conduct and diſcipline, that, during an action in which he had a conſiderable command, he is ſaid to have been rallying three fugitive dragoons, five miles from the field of battle.

Ver. 195. A fraternity of wits, whoſe virtue, modeſty, and taſte, are much of the ſame dimenſion.

THE TEARS OF SCOTLAND.

WRITTEN IN THE YEAR 1746.

MOURN, hapleſs Caledonia, mourn
Thy baniſh'd peace, thy laurels torn!
Thy ſons, for valour long renown'd,
Lie ſlaughter'd on their native ground;
Thy hoſpitable roofs no more
Invite the ſtranger to the door;
In ſmoky ruins ſunk they lie,
The monuments of cruelty.

The wretched owner ſees afar
His all become the prey of war;
Bethinks him of his babes and wife,
Then ſmites his breaſt and curſes life.
Thy ſwains are famiſh'd on the rocks,
Where once they fed their wanton flocks:
Thy raviſh'd virgins ſhriek in vain;
Thy infants periſh on the plain.

What boots it then, in every clime,
Through the wide ſpreading waſte of time,
Thy martial glory, crown'd with praiſe,
Still ſhone with undiminiſh'd blaze?
Thy tow'ring ſpirit now is broke,
Thy neck is bended to the yoke.
What foreign arms could never quell,
By civil rage and rancour fell.

The rural pipe and merry lay
No more ſhall cheer the happy day:
No ſocial ſcenes of gay delight
Beguile the dreary winter night:
No ſtrains but thoſe of ſorrow flow,
And nought be heard but ſounds of woe,
While the pale phantoms of the ſlain
Glide nightly o'er the ſilent plain.

O baneful cauſe, oh! fatal morn,
Accurs'd to ages yet unborn!
The ſons againſt their father ſtood,
The parent ſhed his children's blood.

Yet, when the rage of battle ceas'd
The victor's ſoul was not appeas'd:
The naked and forlorn muſt feel
Devouring flames, and murd'ring ſteel!

The pious mother, doom'd to death,
Forſaken, wanders o'er the heath;
The bleak wind whiſtles round her head,
Her helpleſs orphans cry for bread;
Bereft of ſhelter, food, and friend,
She views the ſhades of night deſcend;
And ſtretch'd beneath th' inclement ſkies,
Weeps o'er her tender babes, and dies.

While the warm blood bedews my veins,
And unimpair'd remembrance reigns,
Reſentment of my country's fate,
Within my filial breaſt ſhall beat;
And, ſpite of her inſulting foe,
My ſympathizing verſe ſhall flow:
"Mourn, hapleſs Caledonia, mourn,
"Thy baniſh'd peace, thy laurels torn."

SONG.

To fix her—'twere a taſk as vain
To combat April drops of rain,
To ſow in Afric's barren ſoil,
Or tempeſts hold within a toil.

I know it, friend, ſhe's light as air,
Falſe as the fowler's artful ſnare;
Inconſtant as the paſſing wind,
As winter's dreary froſt unkind.

She's ſuch a miſer too in love,
Its joys ſhe'll neither ſhare nor prove;
Though hundreds of gallants await
From her victorious eyes their fate.

Bluſhing at ſuch inglorious reign,
I ſometimes ſtrive to break her chain;
My reaſon ſummon to my aid,
Reſolv'd no more to be betray'd.

Ah! friend, 'tis but a ſhort-liv'd trance,
Diſpell'd by one enchanting glance;
She need but look, and I confeſs,
Thoſe looks completely curſe or bleſs.

So ſoft, ſo elegant, ſo fair,
Sure ſomething more than human's there;
I muſt ſubmit, for ſtrife is vain,
'Twas deſtiny that forg'd the chain.

BURLESQUE ODE *.

WHERE waſt thou, wittol ward, when hapleſs fate
From theſe weak arms mine aged grannam tore:
  Theſe pious arms eſſay'd too late,
To drive the diſmal phantom from the door.
  Could not thy healing drop, illuſtrious quack,
Could not thy ſalutary pill prolong her days;
  For whom, ſo oft, to Marybone, alack!
Thy ſorrels dragg'd thee through the worſt of ways!

  Oil-dropping Twick'nham did not then detain,
Thy ſteps, though tended by the Cambrian maids,
  Nor the ſweet environs of Drury-lane;
Nor duſty Pimlico's embow'ring ſhades;
  Nor Whitehall, by the river's bank,
  Beſet with rowers dank;
Nor where th' Exchange pours forth its tawny ſons:
  Nor where to mix with offal, ſoil and blood,
  Steep Snow-hill rolls the ſable flood;
Nor where the Mint's contaminated kennels runs:
Ill doth it now beſeem,
That thou ſhouldſt doze and dream,
When death in mortal armour came,
And ſtruck with ruthleſs dart the gentle dame.
Her lib'ral hand and ſympathizing breaſt
The brute creation kindly bleſs'd:
Where'er ſhe trod grimalkin purr'd around,
The ſqueaking pigs her bounty own'd:

* Smollett, imagining himſelf ill-treated by Lord Lyttleton, wrote the above burleſque on that nobleman's monody on the death of his lady.

Nor to the waddling duck or gabbling gooſe,
Did ſhe glad ſuſtenance refuſe;
The ſtrutting cock ſhe daily fed,
And Turkey with his ſnout ſo red;
Of chickens careful as the pious hen,
Nor did ſhe overlook the tomtit or the wren;
While redbreaſt hopp'd before her in the hall,
As if ſhe common mother were of all.

For my diſtracted mind,
What comfort can I find;
O beſt of grannams! thou art dead and gone,
And I am left behind to weep and moan,
To ſing thy dirge in ſad and funeral ray,
Oh! woe is me! alack! and well-a-day!

ODE TO MIRTH.

PARENT of joy! heart-eaſing mirth!
Whether of Venus or Aurora born;
Yet goddeſs ſure of heavenly birth,
Viſit benign a ſon of grief forlorn;
Thy glittering colours gay,
Around him mirth diſplay:
And o'er his raptur'd ſenſe
Diffuſe thy living influence:
So ſhall each hill in purer green array'd,
And flower adorn'd in new-born beauty glow.
The grove ſhall ſmooth the horrors of the ſhade,
And ſtreams in murmurs ſhall forget to flow.
Shine, goddeſs, ſhine with unremitted ray,
And gild (a ſecond ſun) with brighter beam our day.

Labour with thee forgets his pain,
And aged poverty can ſmile with thee;
If thou be nigh, grief's hate is vain,
And weak th' uplifted arm of tyranny.
The morning opes on high
His univerſal eye;
And on the world doth pour
His glories in a golden ſhower:
Lo! darkneſs trembling 'fore the hoſtile ray,
Shrinks to the cavern deep and wood forlorn;

The brood obſcene, that own her gloomy ſway,
Troop in her rear, and fly th' approach of morn.
Pale ſhivering ghoſts, that dread th' all-cheering light
Quick, as the lightning's flaſh, glide to ſepulchral nig

But whence the gladdening beam
That pours his purple ſtream
O'er the long proſpect wide?
'Tis Mirth. I ſee her ſit
In majeſty of light,
With laughter at her ſide.
Bright ey'd fancy hovering near,
Wide waves her glancing wing in air;
And young wit flings his pointed dart,
That guiltleſs ſtrikes the willing heart.
Fear not now affliction's power,
Fear not now wild paſſion's rage,
Nor fear ye aught in evil hour,
Save the tardy hand of age.
Now Mirth hath heard the ſuppliant poet's prayer,
No cloud that rides the blaſt ſhall vex the troubled air

ODE TO SLEEP.

Soft ſleep, profoundly pleaſing power,
Sweet patron of the peaceful hour,
O liſten from thy calm abode,
And hither wave thy magic rod;
Extend thy ſilent ſoothing ſway,
And charm the canker care away.
Whether thou lov'ſt to glide along,
Attended by an airy throng
Of gentle dreams and ſmiles of joy,
Such as adorn the wanton boy;
Or to the monarch's fancy bring
Delights that better ſuit a king,
The glittering hoſt, the groaning plain,
The clang of arms, and victor's train;
Nor ſhould a milder viſion pleaſe,
Preſent the happy ſcenes of peace;
Plump Autumn, bluſhing all around,
Rich induſtry with toil embrown'd;
Content, with brow ſerenely gay,
And genial art's refulgent ray.

ODE TO BLUE-EY'D ANN.

I.

WHEN the rough north forgets to howl,
And ocean's billows ceaſe to roll;
When Lybian ſands are bound in froſt,
And cold to Nova Zembla's loſt;
When heav'nly bodies ceaſe to move,
My blue-ey'd Ann I'll ceaſe to love.

II.

No more ſhall flowers the meads adorn,
Nor ſweetneſs deck the roſy thorn,
Nor ſwelling buds proclaim the ſpring,
Nor parching heats the dog-ſtar bring,
Nor laughing lilies paint the grove,
When blue-ey'd Ann I ceaſe to love.

III.

No more ſhall joy in hope be found,
Nor pleaſures dance their frolic round,
Nor love's light god inhabit earth,
Nor beauty give the paſſion birth,
Nor heat to ſummer ſun-ſhine cleave,
When blue-ey'd Nanny I deceive.

IV.

When rolling ſeaſons ceaſe to change,
Inconſtancy forgets to range;
When laviſh May no more ſhall bloom,
Nor gardens yield a rich perfume;
When nature from her ſphere ſhall ſtart,
I'll tear my Nanny from my heart.

ODE TO INDEPENDENCE.

STROPHE.

THY ſpirit, Independence, let me ſhare?
Lord of the lion-heart and eagle-eye,
Thy ſteps I follow with my boſom bare,
Nor heed the ſtorm that howls along the ſky.
Deep in the frozen regions of the north,
A goddeſs violated brought thee forth,

Immortal liberty, whoſe look ſublime
Hath bleach'd the tyrant's cheek in every varying clime.
What time the iron-hearted Gaul.
With frantic ſuperſtition for his guide,
Arm'd with the dagger and the pall,
The ſons of Woden to the field defy'd;
The ruthleſs hag, by Weſer's flood,
In Heaven's name, urg'd the infernal blow;
And red the ſtream began to flow—
The vanquiſh'd were baptiz'd with blood!

ANTISTROPHE.

The Saxon prince in horror fled
From altars ſtain'd with human gore;
And liberty his routed legions led
In ſafety to the bleak Norwegian ſhore.
There in a cave aſleep ſhe lay,
Lull'd by the hoarſe-reſounding main;
When a bold ſavage paſs'd that way,
Impell'd by deſtiny, his name Diſdain.
Of ample front the portly chief appear'd;
The hunted bear ſupply'd a ſhaggy veſt,
The drifted ſnow hung on his yellow beard,
And his broad ſhoulders brav'd the furious blaſt.
He ſtopt; he gaz'd; his boſom glow'd,
And deeply felt th' impreſſion of her charms;
He ſeiz'd th' advantage fate allow'd,
And ſtraight compreſs'd her in his vig'rous arms.

STROPHE.

The curlieu ſcream'd, the tritons blew
Their ſhells to celebrate the raviſh'd rite;
Old time exulted as he flew,
And independence ſaw the light.
The light he ſaw in Albion's happy plains,
Where, under cover of a flowering thorn,
While Philomel renew'd her warbled ſtrains,
Th' auſpicious fruit of ſtol'n embrace was born.—
The mountain Dryads ſeiz'd with joy

Ver. 26. Charlemagne obliged four thouſand Saxon priſoners to embrace the Chriſtian religion, and immediately after they were baptized, ordered their throats to be cut.—Their prince, Vitikind, fled for ſhelter to Gotrick, king of Denmark.

The ſmiling infant, to their charge conſign'd;
The Doric muſe careſs'd the fav'rite boy;
The hermit Wiſdom ſtor'd his opening mind.
As rolling years matur'd his age,
He flouriſh'd bold and ſinewy as his ſire;
While the mild paſſions in his breaſt aſſuage
The fiercer flames of his maternal ſire.

ANTISTROPHE.

Accompliſh'd thus, he wing'd his way,
And zealous rov'd from pole to pole,
The rolls of right eternal to diſplay,
And warm with patriot thoughts th' aſpiring ſoul.
On deſert iſles 'twas he that rais'd
Thoſe ſpires that gild the Adriatic wave,
Where tyranny beheld amaz'd
Fair freedom's temple, where he mark'd her grave.
He ſteel'd the blunt Batavian's arms,
To burſt th' Iberian's double chain;
And cities rear'd, and planted farms,
Won from the ſkirts of Neptune's wide domain.
He with the generous ruſtics ſat,
On Uri's rocks, in cloſe divan:
And wing'd that arrow, ſure as fate,
Which aſcertain'd the ſacred rights of man.

STROPHE.

Arabia's ſcorching ſands he croſs'd,
Where blaſted nature pants ſupine,
Conductor of her tribes aduſt,
To freedom's adamantine ſhrine;
And many a Tartar hord forlorn, aghaſt!
He ſnatch'd from under fell oppreſſion's wing;

Ver. 53. Although Venice was built a conſiderable time before the æra here aſſign'd for the birth of Independence, the republic had not yet attained to any great degree of power and ſplendour.

Ver. 58. The Low Countries were not only oppreſſed by grievous taxations, but likewiſe threatened with the eſtabliſhment of the Inquiſition, when the Seven Provinces revolted, and ſhook off the yoke of Spain.

Ver. 62. Alluding to the known ſtory of William Tell and his aſſociates, the fathers and founders of the confederacy of the Swiſs Cantons.

Ver. 65. The Arabs, rather than reſign their independency, have often abandoned their habitations, and encountered all the horrors of the deſert.

Ver. 69. From the tyranny of Jenghis Khan, Timur Bec, and other

And taught amidſt the dreary waſte
Th' all-cheering hymns of liberty to ſing
He virtue finds, like precious ore,
Diffus'd through every baſer mould,
Ev'n now he ſtands on Calvi's rocky ſhore,
And turns the droſs of Corſica to gold.
He, guardian genius, taught my youth
Pomp's tinſel livery to deſpiſe:
My lips by him chaſtis'd to truth,
Ne'er paid that homage which my heart denies.

ANTISTROPHE.

Thoſe ſculptur'd halls my feet ſhall never tread,
Where varniſh'd vice and vanity combin'd,
To dazzle and ſeduce, their banners ſpread,
And forge vile ſhackles for the free-born mind.
While inſolence his wrinkled front uprears,
And all the flowers of ſpurious fancy blow;
And title his ill-woven chaplet wears,
Full often wreath'd around the miſcreant's brow;
Where ever-dimpling falſehood, pert and vain,
Preſents her cup of ſtale profeſſion's froth;
And pale diſeaſe, with all his bloated train,
Torments the ſons of gluttony and ſloth.

STROPHE.

In fortune's car behold that minion ride,
With either India's glittering ſpoils oppreſs'd:
So moves the ſumpter-mule, in harneſs'd pride,
That bears the treaſure which he cannot taſte.
For him let venal bards diſgrace the bay,
And hireling minſtrels wake the tinkling ſtring;
Her ſenſual ſnares let faithleſs pleaſure lay;
And jingling bells fantaſtic folly ring;
Diſquiet, doubt, and dread ſhall intervene;
And nature, ſtill to all her feelings juſt,
In vengeange hang a damp on every ſcene,
Shook from the baleful pinions of diſguſt.

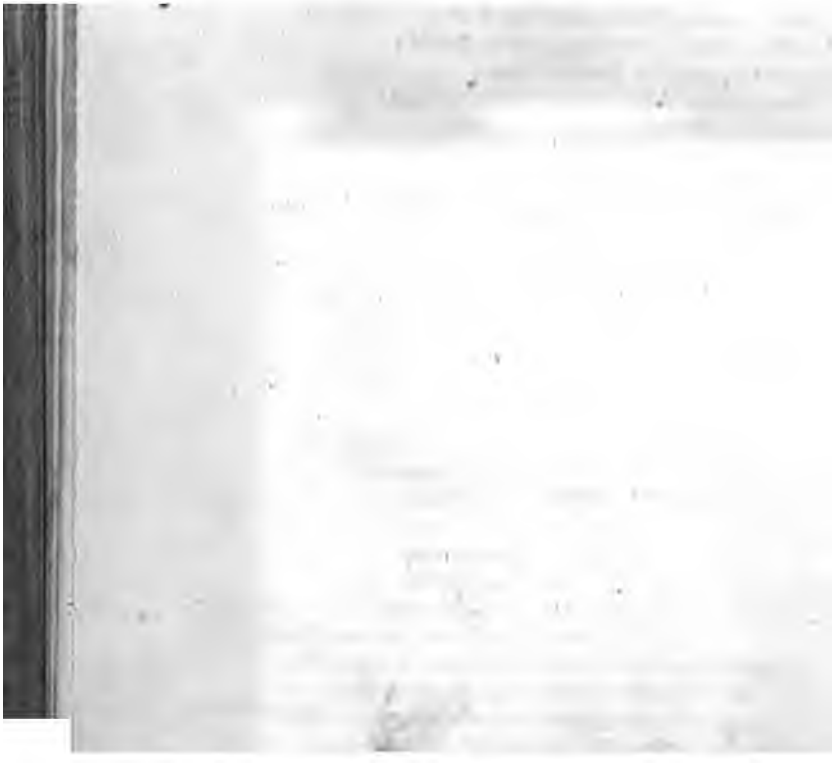
eaſtern conquerors, whole tribes of Tartars were uſed to fly into the remoter waſtes of Cathay, where no army could follow them.

Ver. 76. The noble ſtand made by Paſchal Paoli and his aſſociates againſt the uſurpations of the French king, muſt endear them to all the ſons of Liberty and Independence.

ANTISTROPHE.

Nature I'll court in her ſequeſter'd haunts
By mountain, meadow, ſtreamlet, grove, or cell,
Where the pois'd lark his evening ditty chaunts,
And health, and peace, and contemplation dwell.
There ſtudy ſhall with ſolitude recline;
And friendſhip pledge me to his fellow-ſwains;
And toil and temperance ſedately twine
The ſlender cord that fluttering life ſuſtains;
And fearleſs poverty ſhall guard the door;
And taſte unſpoil'd the frugal table ſpread;
And induſtry ſupply the humble ſtore;
And ſleep unbrib'd his dews refreſhing ſhed:
White-mantled innocence, ethereal ſprite,
Shall chaſe far off the goblins of the night;
And independence o'er the day preſide,
Propitious power! my patron and my pride.

END OF VOLUME THIRD.



is unde
taken from th